

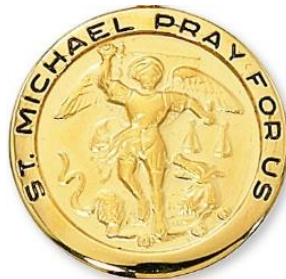
The Alpha and Omega of Creation

Teachings from Heaven



Volume 2:

The Soul and Life of Adam and Cain



Preserved and presented by
Samuel Ronci

The Alpha and Omega of Creation

Teachings from Heaven

Volume 1: Secrets of Creation

Volume 2: The Soul and Life of Adam and Cain

Volume 3: The Childhood of Jesus

Volume 4: The Public Life and Passion of Jesus Christ

Volume 5: Holy Spirit & End Time Vineyard Workers

Volume 6: The Church of Christ

Volume 7: God Corrects Misguided Teachings and Errors

Volume 8: End Time Prophecies

Volume 9: The Apocalypse

Volume 10: The Spiritual Journey of the Soul

Volume 11: The Last Seven Years of Earth

Volume 12: Advanced Teachings of the Spirit World

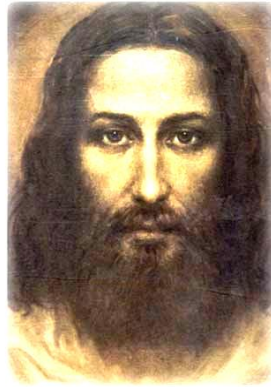
Visit:

www.alphaandomegaofcreation.org

for free PDF copies of each book

Last update 8/21/2024

The Alpha and Omega of Creation Series



THE ALPHA
AND THE OMEGA
THE BEGINNING
AND THE END

THE FIRSTBORN OVER
ALL OF CREATION

The Alpha and Omega of Creation Series: God the Father reveals, in great detail, His Divine plan of salvation that leads the soul back to God.

1. **Vol_1_Secrets of Creation:** Reveals the Mysteries of the Primordial God, God's Only Begotten Son, The Secret of Creation, The World of Thought, Life of Spirits and Cosmic Life, Can Man See God? Mystery of the Holy Trinity, What is the difference between Beings of Light and Angels? How does one obtain Childship to God? Was the Sin of the fallen spirits unforgivable? The Real Original Sin, The Cause and Origin of Creation, My Father's House has many Mansions! God Creates Man
2. **Vol_2_The Soul and Life of Adam and Cain:** Immortality of the Soul, Relationship between Body, Soul and Spirit, What is Man? The Purpose and Reason of Earthly Life, Pre-Adamites, The Creation of Other Human Beings, The Descendants of Adam, Death Enters the World, Where do Prehistoric Animals Come From? How did the Black Race Begin? Adam and Cains Experiments with Genetic Manipulation, Cain's Curse, The Real Consequences of Original Sin, Man Begins Again and much more. . .
3. **Vol_3_The Childhood of Jesus:** The Messianic Cycle Begins, The Immaculate Conception of Mary, Mary is betrothed to Joseph, God enters the world in the visible image of Jesus, The Star of Bethlehem, The Three Wise Men, Herod's Plot to Kill Jesus, The Family Flees to Egypt, The Childhood of Jesus, The Miracle Work of the Child Jesus, Jesus journey to the Temple, Jesus is Examined in the Temple, Jesus three days in the temple, The Arrival of Joseph and Mary in the Temple, The Death of St Joseph. . .
4. **Vol_4_The Public Life and Passion of Jesus Christ:** 53 Gospel verses explained through the Sermons of Jesus Christ, The Transfiguration of Christ, The Spiritual Significance of the Glorification of Christ, Who is to be the Christ? The Earth as an Altar, Farewell to the Mother, The Passover Supper, The Washing of the Feet, The Parable of the Last Supper and the Bread of Life, Jesus' Victory over Death, The Descent of the Holy Spirit. And, The Passion of Christ, Jesus Descended into the Abyss, The Resurrection and Eternal Life, The Ascension of Jesus, The Coming of the Holy Spirit...

5. **Vol_5_The Holy Spirit and End Time Vineyard Workers:** Section 1: Conditions and Prerequisites for the Outpouring of the Holy Spirit, The Workings of the Spirit, When the Holy Spirit is Present, Gifts of the Spirit, Workings of the Spirit, Wrong Interpretation of the Scriptures, Prerequisites for Hearing God's Voice, Dialogue with the Father, Section 2: Vineyard Workers, God's Appointed Servants, Laborers for God's Kingdom, Task to Spread the Truth, The Church of Christ. . .
6. **Vol_6_The Church of Christ:** The Vision of St Stephan, Martyrdom of the Apostles, History of the Ancient Church, Christians of the First Century, The Church of Christ in its Beginning, The Church Becomes an Institution, The Baptism of Jesus, A Great Truth about Salvation, Satan Attacks the Church, The Second Vatican Council and the Fate of the Roman Catholic Church.
7. **Vol_7_God Corrects Misguided Teachings and Errors:** Doubting God's Existence, Wrong Images of God, Questioning God's Perfection, False Doctrine about the Trinity, Wrong Interpretations of the Bible, Elimination of a Near End, Distorted Divine Word, Doubting God's Revelations, Wrong Concept of Church, Infallibility of the Head of the Church, Sacraments – Wrong Interpretation of Jesus' Words, Mans Lack of Spiritual Knowledge. .
8. **Vol_8_End Time Prophecies:** Our Lady Speaks about 5 Signs, Secularism, Rationalism, Sin Causes War, Battle Between Heaven and Hell, They Will Desecrate the Church, The Stars Will Fall from the Sky, A Generation Without God, Mary's Tears of Blood, St Malachy the 112 Pope, Earths Time, Signs of the Great Tribulation, Climate Change, The World will Crash Down in the End.
9. **Vol_9_ The Apocalypse:** Satan's Century, Progress of Man, Science / Knowledge, Satan Splits and Divides, UFO's, The Nature and Purpose of the Moon, NASA's Project Blue Beam, Space Travel, Inhabitants of Other Worlds, The Huge Red Dragon, The Woman Clothed With The Sun, The Keys that Open the Abyss, WW III, The Earth is Changing, The Fall of Babylon, The Holy Remnant, the New Banishment and the New Earth. . .
10. **Vol_10_The Spiritual Journey of the Soul:** Every Soul is an Original Spirit, The Souls Process of Pre-Development, Composition of the Soul, Spiritual Rebirth, The Path of Return to God, Overcoming Matter, Immortality of the Soul, The Death Phenomenon, The Souls Fate in the Beyond, Sequence of Events when the Soul Leaves the Body, Beyond the Threshold, Entering the Kingdom of Light. . .
11. **Vol_11_The Last Seven Years of Eart:** The Journey of the Primordial God to the Man God, The Last Seven Years of Earth, The Three Days of Darkness, The Rapture Explained, The Cult World of Freemasonry. The Keys of Peter. .
12. **Vol_12_Advanced Teachings of the Spirit World:** I Stand at the Door and Knock - and you did not receive Me, Secrets of Life, The Spiritual Sun, The Evil of Human Desires, The Kingdom of Darkness and Unbelief, The Roman Catholic Heaven, A Visit to the Carmelites, The Judgement Seat of Christ, Prerequisite unto Salvation, The Seven Words of Christ on the Cross. . .

In Honor of the Holy Spirit



May the Holy Spirit descend upon you and fill you with love and wisdom, as you journey through space and time, to discover the wonders of creation as the Father reveals His Divine Plan for mankind. May the Magnificat of the Blessed Mother's "yes" be your "yes" as you open your heart and mind to receive knowledge, truth, and understanding that only the Holy Spirit can give.

"When the Paraclete comes, the Spirit of truth who comes from the Father – and whom I Myself will send from the Father – He will bear witness on My behalf. He will guide you to all truth." (John 15, 26-27; 16:13)

The Spirit of Truth Prayer

Holy Spirit baptize me with the fire of your love. I have surrendered to you the best of my ability, and now I want to activate Your Spirit of Love within me. I need Your power in my life. Please fill me now. I believe that as I yield and ask, You will release Your strength, wisdom, healing, and love to meet the needs of the hour. Work in me in a powerful way. I want every purpose God has for my life to be fulfilled, and I need you, mighty Spirit of God, to bring that purpose to fulfillment. Release Your Spirit within me, Amen.

Acknowledgement

Very special thanks for the works of all those that were quoted in this book, and for the dedication and support of those that helped make these books possible.

In Matthew's Gospel, Matthew starts out by defining the Genealogy of Jesus. It took 42 generations of people to prepare the way for the coming of the Lord. Some had a big part to play and others had a smaller part, all of which were necessary. It's when you put all these works together that the tapestry of God's plan for mankind can be seen more clearly. Are we in fact preparing the way for the return of Jesus in Glory?



Come, Holy Spirit, fill the hearts of Thy faithful and enkindle in them the fire of Thy love. Send forth Thy Spirit and they shall be created, and Thou shall renew the face of the earth. O God, who didst instruct the hearts of the faithful by the light of the Holy Spirit, grant us in the same Spirit to be truly wise, and ever to rejoice in His consolation through Christ our Lord. Amen.

The Holy Spirit is alive in everyone, and He guides and directs us along our earthly journey. Pray to the Holy Spirit on a daily basis.

The Teachings of Jesus

Become an Apostle of Truth

Truth only comes from God and before the world can come to an end, as we know it, the truth must be revealed. How will this be done? The Lord will accomplish this by using his prophets; the same way He used the prophets in the Old Testament which also contains the Book of the Prophets.

This work presents the teachings that were given, by the Lord, to the prophets of our time that are located throughout the world. When these teachings are brought together, they present a clear picture of the events that will lead us to the return of Jesus in Glory and the end of a period of salvation.

Jesus is speaking: "All the strands of this Mission are being drawn together to form a pattern. Then, when the various parts are linked and fitted together, like the pieces of a jigsaw, when all the pieces begin to merge, the final picture will become clear."

Ref: MDM message Jan 24, 2014

The 'final picture' has been assembled and presented in the twelve volumes of the Alpha and Omega of Creation Series



Become an Apostle of truth by passing on the Lord's teachings to family and friends. The Lord has revealed the past, the present and the future. You can't even begin to comprehend His love for you unless you understand the very beginning, only then will you understand who you really are and how great is His love for you.

Table of Contents



Table of Contents

THE ALPHA AND OMEGA OF CREATION SERIES	3
IN HONOR OF THE HOLY SPIRIT	5
ACKNOWLEDGEMENT	6
BECOME AN APOSTLE OF TRUTH.....	7
TABLE OF CONTENTS.....	9
ELUCIDATION OF THE GOSPELS THROUGH NEW REVELATIONS	15
CHAPTER 1: INCARNATION OF THE SOUL	19
THE SOUL - BATTLE OF LIGHT WITH DARKNESS	21
THE SOUL'S PROCESS OF PRE-DEVELOPMENT	22
INCARNATION OF THE SOUL.....	24
THE SOUL – PART A.....	25
THE SOUL – PART B	26
THE SOUL'S INDIVIDUALITY	27
DEVELOPMENT OF THE SOUL - ORIGINAL SPIRIT.....	29
EVERY SOUL IS AN ORIGINAL SPIRIT – PART A.....	30
EVERY SOUL IS AN ORIGINAL SPIRIT - PART B.....	32
WHERE DOES THE SOUL RESIDE IN A HUMAN BODY?	33
SELF-AWARENESS OF THE ORIGINAL SPIRIT.....	34
PASSING THROUGH EACH FORM OF CREATION - HUMAN NATURE.....	35
COMPOSITION OF THE SOUL - MINIATURE CREATION.....	36
IMMORTALITY OF THE SOUL.....	37
EXAMPLE OF THE MERGING OF NATURES SOULS	38
CHAPTER 2: PRE-ADAMITES AND HUMAN BEINGS.....	41
THE PRE-ADAMITES: DID HUMANS INHABIT EARTH BEFORE ADAM AND EVE?	43
<i>Did Pre-Adamites Exist? If so, who and what are they?.....</i>	<i>43</i>
<i>The Christian Debate.....</i>	<i>43</i>
<i>The Scientific Debate.....</i>	<i>44</i>
PRE-ADAMITES AND PREHISTORIC MAN	45
PRE-ADAMITES – PREHISTORIC PEOPLE	49
PREHISTORIC HUMAN BEINGS - RESPONSIBILITY	50
PREHISTORIC PEOPLE -1	51
PREHISTORIC PEOPLE -2	53
DEVELOPMENT OF EARTH AND HUMAN BEING	53
CHILDREN OF THE WORLD VS. CHILDREN OF THE LIGHT	55
THE SOUL'S PROCESS OF DEVELOPMENT BEFORE EMBODIMENT	56
THE DECISION OF FREE WILL	60
THE HUMAN BEING'S TASK ON EARTH - CHILDSHIP TO GOD.....	61
BECOMING GOD'S 'CHILDREN' - CHILDSHIP TO GOD	62

BEING A CHILD OF GOD	63
DO 'NON-FALLEN' SPIRITS ATTAIN CHILDSHIP TO GOD?	65
BODY, SOUL AND SPIRIT	68
FOOD – BODY AND SOUL	69
DEVELOPMENT AND RELATIONSHIP BETWEEN BODY, SOUL AND SPIRIT	71
CHAPTER 3: GOD’S PLAN FOR MAN	79
GOD CREATES MAN: GENESIS1:26	81
PROCESS OF MANS DEVELOPMENT ON EARTH.....	81
WHAT IS MAN?	83
MAN THE ADOPTIVE SON OF GOD - SUMMARY.....	86
GOD’S PLAN FOR MAN	88
DIFFERENT KINDS OF CREATIONS CORRESPOND TO THE BEINGS' FALL.....	90
THE EARTHLY PATH OF ANGEL-BEINGS	92
EXPEDIENCY OF CREATIONS – GOD’S WILL	93
FURTHER EXPLANATION REGARDING THE SOUL.....	94
HYPOSTATIC UNION WITH CHRIST – THE IMPRINT OF GOD	97
THE SOUL - THE DIVINE SPARK IN THE HUMAN BEING.....	97
THE SOUL'S UNION WITH ITS SPIRIT	99
LOVE AND SUFFERING PURIFY THE SOUL.....	100
THE FLESH AND THE SPIRIT	101
SOUL AND SPIRIT AND THE DIVINE SPARK	101
LIFE - AWAKENING THE DIVINE SPARK IN THE PERSON	103
THE DIVINE SPARK - CALLING UPON THE 'HOLY SPIRIT'	104
THE AUDIBLE WORD – SPIRITUAL SPARK	105
INNER REFLECTION	106
CHAPTER 4: ADAM, EVE, AND CAIN	109
DID THE HUMAN BEING EVOLVE OR WAS HE A NEW CREATION?	111
WHAT IS LANGUAGE? HOW DID IT COME INTO BEING?	113
A FURTHER WORD ABOUT LANGUAGE AND ITS ORIGIN.....	116
FIRST PRIMORDIAL LANGUAGE - SANSKRIT.....	121
WAS ADAM THE ONLY HUMAN BEING CREATED BY GOD?	121
HUMAN POPULATION GROWTH	123
WILL FOR DESCENDANTS - WAITING SOULS.	124
WHO WAS EMBODIED IN ADAM?	125
GOD BREATHED A LIVING SOUL INTO ADAM.....	126
CREATION OF EVE - GENESIS 3:21-24.....	128
CREATION OF EVE.....	128
THE CREATION OF EVE – ADAMS RIB!.....	129
DELIVERANCE FROM SELFLOVE TO REBIRTH	131
THE FALL	132
THE “TREE OF LIFE” AND “THE TREE OF KNOWLEDGE”	134
THE LORD’S JUDGEMENT.....	134
THE RECONCILIATION OF THE LORD.....	138
THE MEASURE OF GOD IS ALWAYS JUST	140
THE MEANS	140
THE TREE OF KNOWLEDGE - GOOD AND EVIL	141
GOOD AND EVIL - LAW OF ETERNITY	142
GOD THE FATHER SPEAKS ABOUT ADAM AND LUCIFER'S TEST	143
THE CASTING OUT FROM PARADISE	147
PUNISHMENT	151

GOD THE FATHER SPEAKS ABOUT THE FIRST ORIGINAL SIN	153
THE FALL INTO THE DEPTH OF DARKNESS	154
WHY DO WE HAVE TO DO PENANCE FOR ADAM'S SIN?	155
QUESTION: WHAT WOULD HAVE HAPPENED HAD ADAM NOT FAILED?	156
THE WORLD'S REJECTION OF GOD'S GRACE	158
THE PURPOSE AND REASON OF EARTHLY LIFE - A	160
THE PURPOSE AND REASON OF EARTHLY LIFE - B	161
EARTHLY TASK: VOLITION - WRONG ENDEAVOUR	163
THE GUARDIAN ANGEL AZARIAH SPEAKS ABOUT HUMANITY.	163
MATTHEW 7:15-22: FALSE PROPHET	165
BY THEIR FRUITS YOU WILL KNOW THEM.	166
CHAPTER 5: DEATH ENTERS THE WORLD.....	169
THE EARTH WAS CURSED BECAUSE OF ADAM'S SIN	171
DEVILS PLAN TO DESTROY HUMANITY	172
WHO WAS THE "ANCESTOR-PRE-HUMAN-FEMALE" THAT CONCEIVED CAIN?	173
KNOWLEDGE OF ADAM	174
ADAM AND CAIN, EXPERIMENTS WITH GENETIC MANIPULATION	176
DESTRUCTION OF THE MOON - ASTEROIDS	178
IS OUR MOON AN ARTIFICIAL SATELLITE?	180
SATAN SPLITS AND DIVIDES - THE CONTINENT.....	182
CONSEQUENCES OF ADAM'S SIN.....	184
THE OFFERING BY CAIN AND ABEL	185
CAIN AND ABEL – THE RESENTFULNESS OF CAIN	186
CAIN SLAYS ABEL	187
CAIN, WHERE IS YOUR BROTHER?	190
CAIN'S CURSE AND FLED TO THE LAND OF NOD.	190
CHAPTER 6: THE LORD'S COVENANT WITH CAIN.....	195
THE LORD'S COVENANT WITH CAIN	197
DESCENDANTS OF CAIN AND SETH	198
ENOCH, CAIN'S SON, AS LAWGIVER.....	199
THE LAWS OF ENOCH, THE TYRANT	201
CAIN'S JOURNEY TO THE SEA.....	203
THE DEVELOPMENT OF CAIN'S LINE	205
ENOCH'S GODLESS RULE.....	205
THE POLICIES OF ENOCH'S COUNSELORS	207
THE COUNSEL OF THE TEN RULERS.....	214
THE DEPARTURE OF THE MEDUHEDITES	217
THE MEDUHEDITES LAND IN JAPAN	224
THE ANIMAL'S SERMON OF REPENTANCE.....	230
REMEMBERING ADAM'S DISOBEDIENCE AND GOD'S MERCY	235
ORIGINAL HISTORY OF THE CHINESE PEOPLE	241
LAMECH'S FAMILY – CITY OF ENOCH	244
BEGIN AND CAUSE OF THE DECLINE OF THE CHILDREN OF THE HEIGHTS	248
ADAM EXPLAINS HIS WEAKNESS	251
ADAM BLESSES HIS CHILDREN.....	253
ABOUT THE COMING OF THE LORD.....	256
ABOUT THE GREATNESS AND DEPTH OF THE WORD OF GOD.....	259
ADAM'S DESCENDANTS	261
CHAPTER 7: THE MYSTERIES OF THE GREAT EGYPTIAN DYNASTY	263

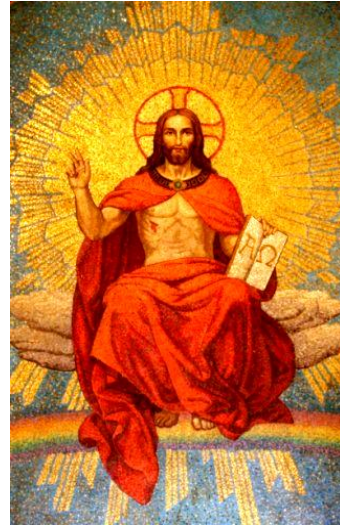
THE MYSTERIES OF THE GREAT EGYPTIAN DYNESTY	264
THE PEOPLE OF ABYSSINIA AND NUBIA	265
THE LORD SENDS A MESSENGER TO MEET THE NUBIAN CARAVAN.....	268
THE LORD SPEAKS WITH THE LEADER OF THE NUBIANS.	270
THE LEADER DESCRIBES HIS JOURNEY TO MEMPHIS.....	272
THE CURSE OF THE OVER-DEVELOPED CULTURE OF THE EGYPTIANS	274
THE BLESSING WHICH COMES FROM THE PRIMITIVE CULTURE OF SIMPLE MEN	276
THE NUBIAN CAMP IN EGYPT	277
THE NUBIAN REQUESTS CONFIRMATION OF THE PRESENCE OF THE LORD	280
THE NUBIANS RECOGNIZE THE LORD.	282
OUBRATOUVISHAR DESCRIBES HIS NUBIAN HOMELAND.	283
OUBRATOUVISHAR TREASURE	285
THE BLACK PEOPLE WHO FOLLOWED ON.....	286
THE NATURE OF ISIS AND OSIRIS.....	288
THE GREAT ROCK TEMPLE OF ABU SIMBEL	289
THE SECRET OF THE THIRD PEARL - THE SEVEN GIANTS AND THE SARCOPHAGUS.....	294
RAPHAEL EXPLAINS THE CONSTELLATIONS ON THE FOURTH PEARL.	296
THE DIVISIONS OF TIME ON THE FIFTH PEARL	299
THE SIXTH PEARL - DEPICTIONS OF THE PYRAMIDS, THE OBELISKS, AND THE SPHINX.....	300
THE CONSTELLATIONS ON THE SEVENTH PEARL - THE COLLAPSE OF EGYPTIAN CULTURE. THE STORY OF THE SEVENTH PEARL.	302
THE PURPOSE OF THE LORD’S INCARNATION – MOORS AS EXAMPLES OF TRUE PRIMORDIAL HUMANITY	305
THE POWER OF THE MOORS TO CONTROL THE ELEMENT WATER.	306
THE DOMINANCE OF THE MOORS OVER ANIMALS	308
THE CONTROL EXERCISED BY THE MOORS OVER PLANT LIFE AND THE ELEMENTS.	310
THE MIRACULOUS POWER OF RESURRECTION- REBIRTH OF THE SOUL.....	312
THE COMPOSITION OF THE HUMAN BRAIN AND PYRAMIDS	313
ABOUT THE GROWTH OF THE OUTER LIFE SPHERE OF MAN	315
THE SHINING OUTER LIFE SPHERE OF MOSES AND THE PATRIARCHS	316
THE PURPOSE OF THE LORD’S PROFOUND PRECEPTS	317
CHAPTER 8: THE FLOOD-LAST DAYS.....	319
WARNING OF THE FLOOD - WORLDLY PROGRESS AND KNOWLEDGE	321
NEPHILIM MAN – WARNING OF THE FLOOD	321
THE WORLD BECAME HIGHLY CIVILIZED BEFORE THE FLOOD	323
CELESTIAL AND MATHEMATICAL PRECISION IN ANCIENT ARCHITECTURE	326
THE PREHISTORIC ALIGNMENT OF WORLD WONDERS	328
THE PRE-NOAH EARTH - BEFORE THE FLOOD	329
THE FLOOD - LAST DAYS -	334
THE GREAT FLOOD	336
THE GREAT FLOOD - COMMENTS.....	337
NEEDS AND THEIR EVIL.....	338
REVELATION ON THE FLOOD	340
ON THE REASON FOR THE FLOOD.....	340
SUGGESTIONS FOR THE MISSION.....	341
NOAH AND THE ARK.....	342
BUILDING THE ARK	344
THE ARK OF NOAH	344
MAN BEGINS AGAIN.....	345
OF THE ASCENSION OF JESUS.	345
CREATION WAS SUBJECTED TO FUTILITY	346

THE REAL CONSEQUENCES OF ORIGINAL SIN	348
THE TABLE OF NATIONS - GENESIS 10	350
SATAN SPLITS AND DIVIDES – THE LANGUAGE OF MAN	351
THE MYSTERY OF THE TOWER OF BABEL - SOLVED	352
ABRAHAM’S CALL AND MIGRATION - GENESIS 12.....	353
ABRAHAM’S COVENANT WITH GOD - GENESIS 16, 17, & 19.....	353
<i>Only One Family was Freed</i>	356
THE TEST OF ABRAHAM: GENESIS 22:1-19	356
THE DESCENDANTS OF ADAM’S CHILDREN PREFIGURES ABRAHAM’S CHILDREN	357
THE WORLD’S HATRED	358
DO NOT THROW THIS FREEDOM AWAY.....	359
THE GENEALOGY OF JESUS - MATTHEW 1:1-17	360
CHAPTER 9: PERFECT SOUL AND SPIRITUAL REBIRTH	361
THE KINGDOM OF GOD AND REBIRTH.....	363
SPIRITUAL REBIRTH.....	365
THE POWER OF A PERFECTED SOUL – REBIRTH OF THE SPIRIT	366
ZORELS SELF-REALIZATION.	367
THE SOUL OF THE SOMNAMBULIST PURIFIES ITSELF.	369
THE PURIFIED SOUL GETS CLAD.....	370
THE ETHEREAL BODY OF THE SOUL WITH ITS SENSES.....	371
ZORELS SOUL ON THE PATH TO RENUNCIATION.	373
ZOREL IN PARADISE.	375
THE RELATIONSHIP BETWEEN BODY, SOUL, AND MIND.	376
ZORELS INSIGHT INTO CREATION.	378
THE NATURE OF MAN AND HIS CREATIVE DESTINY	379
ZORELS INSIGHT INTO THE EVOLUTIONARY PROCESSES OF NATURE	382
JUDGE NOT!	383
CHAPTER 10: THE JESUS ANSWERS QUESTIONS ABOUT THE SUFFERING OF THE SOUL	387
<i>Apparent Inequality in the soul here and in the hereafter</i>	388
<i>God’s Being - The necessary burden of proof on earthly life.</i>	389
<i>Man’s Ego as the True Master of His Fate</i>	390
<i>The Human Soul Chosen to be a Child of God.</i>	391
<i>God’s Reasons for Independent Perfection of a Free Human Soul</i>	392
<i>How God leads Man to Eternal Bliss – Resurrection of the Body</i>	394
<i>About Obsession - The slow spreading of the gospel</i>	394
LIFE OF SPIRITS AND COSMIC LIFE.....	396
THE HEAVENLY FATHER’S WARNING TO HIS CHILDREN	403
PROPHETS OF OUR TIMES.....	405
REFERENCE MATERIAL	418
“I AM WITH YOU ALWAYS.....	423

Elucidation of the Gospels through New Revelations

Ref: Kurt Eggenstein in the works of Jakob Lorber

"New Revelations does not limit itself to an announcement of disasters that are soon to befall mankind. It is first and foremost a message of salvation. During His lifetime, Jesus was able to say relatively little to the general populace about the secrets of creation, etc. His apostles on the other hand were given deep insights, though they often found these difficult to understand. This is also why much was told to them in cryptic form. What is more, they were under the Discipline of the Secret, which means that certain things could only be passed on in secrecy. During the first centuries, this was still known among the leaders of the church, as is clearly obvious from the Literature of the time. The great biblical scholar Origen (A.D. 250) wrote that there were secret teachings, the higher 'disciplina arcani'. The deepest secrets would be entrusted only to priests and teachers. (Hom.V I in Num. p. 39 F 22-39)



It is evident from the New Revelations that Jesus repeatedly instructed his disciples to keep certain teachings secret. 'The out of the ordinary you need not proclaim to all men, but only to those who will follow you in office.' (Gr VIII 77, 17)

'I say to you all that for the moment you are not to teach the people all I have told you' (Gr V 117, 7). 'John and Matthew have asked Me if they were to write down all these things. I have said to them: 'You can do this for your own purposes, but you need not write it down for the people, for they are too young as yet by two thousand years to understand this.' (Gr II 218, 14) 'In the distant future I shall call up servants and dictate to them, through the spirit in their hearts, to write down everything that has occurred now, from the time when I took up the office of teacher and made you My first disciples, and also what is to come, and many other things, too.' (Gr VIII 79, 3-4)

'When the right time has come, then much shall also be written. (Gr VIII 79, 8) In those days to come, My teaching will not be presented to men veiled in mystery, but wholly unveiled in its heavenly and spiritual significance, and that shall be the New Jerusalem that is to come down from the heavens upon earth. Its light, men will then see how greatly those who went before them were deceived and misled by the false prophets, just as the Jews are by the Pharisees' (Gr IX 90, 2).

When the disciples asked why the message could not then be given (quite) openly, Jesus replied: 'There is much that I could still tell you and reveal to you, but you are all of you not yet able to bear it' (Gr IX 90, 6).

It was also made clear to them that at that time lessons had to be given 'as to children, as it were', and that they 'could not yet have the least idea as to the extensive knowledge and (technological) art that men would attain in times to come.' (Gr IX 90, 8)

The partly occult nature of the Gospels, providing an opportunity for frequent misinterpretation, had the sanction of Our Lord. Asked about this by St.

John the Evangelist (who was His apostle), Jesus said the following: 'It is better that the matter (the Gospel) is given to the world in a very occult veiled form, for the world can then have a tussle merely with the outer veils, leaving the living heart within untouched... When the need arises, in time to come, I shall once again arouse men to whom I shall disclose everything that took place here and what the world will have to expect because of its incorrigible wickedness.' (Gr I 216, 13-14)

Before His Ascension, Jesus had promised mankind that a Comforter would come. In the New Revelations, the Lord explains this Comforter as follows for modern man: 'The Comforter I promised my disciples, saying that I would send him, this has already been given in the words written by John, the most loved of My disciples. The disciples did not understand these words but you, who are now schooled and prepared to quite some extent to grasp and understand My teaching the way I should wish it to be understood and also put into effect, you can find, in these words passed down to you, the Comforter, who can enlighten and exalt you, making you strong to face all that is to come, just as My Spirit gave the disciples strength to bear their future destinies with the strength of soul their mission required.' (Pr 157)

A prediction Jesus made to Nicodemus was that in the period following His life on earth, up to the time when the Comforter would come in form of the 'true, great doctrine of light and life, there will be little light among men on earth.' (Gr VII 54, 5-6)

'They (men) will have to learn to think, then to seek and to find for themselves. The people of the world take satisfaction in the world, and any concept of God must therefore also be wholly worldly in appearance if it is to find favor with men. And so, it will be a long time before we are able to present the truth immediately to the people on the earth (in Jesus's time).' (Gr VI 204, 2-4)

Jesus predicted, among the apostles, that in the course of time His teachings would become obscured due to alterations made in the Gospels and due to misinterpretation. 'That in times to come My teachings will not continue among all nations in the pure form in which you have received it from My lips, that is something that may be taken for granted even today.' (Gr V 120, 6) 'But the innermost spirit will still be there.' (Gr V 120,6)

The readers of the communities in particular, it says elsewhere, when Jesus is addressing our present generation in New Revelations, 'began to twist the meaning of My teachings, for being the purest truth coming from the heavens, it failed to bring them adequate profit, and they confounded it with the nonsensical notions of old.' (Gr X 25, 4)

'They have dug a pit for My original light from the heavens, to hide it from the eyes of all men, and to keep them in darkness, for their worldly benefit.' 'It is easily seen that such a thing (the expurgation and clarification of the Gospels) cannot happen in a moment, just as night cannot yield to full daylight all of a sudden, for everything must take its time in this world.' (Gr X 25, 8 and 10)

Because of this, 'at a very late moment, immediately before a great judgement, seers will be called up and admitted who will have to make the short, great effort of cleansing a doctrine that has become very impure.' (Gr VI 176, 10)

'The workers in My vineyard will not perform great miracles but work wholly with the pure Word and through Scripture, the revelation they receive

being nothing very striking, but merely the living Word within them, in their feelings and in the thoughts in their hearts.' (Gr VI 176, 10)

'When a thousand and again not quite a thousand years will have passed from this moment (the time when Jesus was teaching) and My teachings will be totally buried in the foulest of matter, then I shall once again call up men who will write down accurately, word for word, what has been negotiated and has occurred here (with the disciples), and pass it on to the world, so that their eyes shall be opened again in many respects.' (Gr IV 112, 4)

'Yet this My teaching of the real world that will never die (i.e., always remain the same) will meet much Opposition - this I know an eternity in advance.' (Gr II 172, 8)

The Lord then refers to the gospel of the Sower, saying: 'For those who will be thirsty and longing for the water of life, for them they (the disclosures) have been made.' 'In order then to open up the gospels, that are closed with more than seven seals, and prepare a way for them through these books to Me and My heavens, I am sending you these revelations." (Pr 229)

'These teachings I gave only for My true children on their earth. ' (Hi I p. 390). 'As to the true children of the world, however, let them be and do not call them." (Gr VI 151, 3 and 11)

'For the senses of men are so perverted that the greatest of miracles, the living Word given to them through the agency of an awakened seer and servant of the Word, is as unimportant to them as any other thing in the world.' (Hi 11 p. 106)

'Most life pilgrims prefer to stay in the valleys of their animal nature rather than take the trouble to climb a mountain, there to get at least the prospect of becoming a true human being." (Hi 11 p. 361)



"When the Paraclete comes, the Spirit of truth who comes from the Father – and whom I Myself will send from the Father – He will bear witness on My behalf. He will guide you to all truth." (John 15, 26-27; 16:13)

Chapter 1: Incarnation of the Soul



The Soul – Battle of Light and Darkness, The Souls Process of Pre-Development, The Souls Individuality, Every Soul is an Original Spirit, Where does a Soul Reside in a Human Body? Immortality of the Soul, Composition of the Soul, Process of Mans Development on Earth, Pre-Adamites, Prehistoric People, Relationship between Body, Soul, and Spirit, Childship to God, God Breathed a Living Soul into Adam, Spiritual Rebirth . . .

The Soul - Battle of Light with Darkness

Ref: BD 0198 24.11.1937, BD 0199 24.11.1937, BD 0200 25.11.1937

God the Father is speaking: "Listen, my child, it is God's will to instruct you of teachings which correspond to your thoughts and therefore I want to let you know today how very fond our Lord Jesus is of you and how much your dedication pleases Him. If you ever feel a sense of abandonment, never be frightened, for One is always close to you, your Savior, who will help you carry your every worry. Confidently travel your path of life until the end in this knowledge and don't be afraid! Not everyone is granted the same fate of being allowed to work physically and spiritually as the Lord and Savior has intended for you, yet if you always lift your eyes upwards you will be able to live up to both and constantly feel the Father's caring hand.

Listen to us, who stay close to you, and try to understand: In the beginning of the world all spirits were united, it was a being surrounded by the light of the eternal Sun. Elements whizzed through the universe which shied away from the radiance and tried to destroy the divine light. During the battle of darkness against light countless atoms lost contact with the light and the elements of darkness declared war on those tiny bodies of light which went astray in the universe in order to extinguish their abundance of light, which each of these small and smallest beings sheltered, and to draw these beings into the sphere of influence of darkness, thus, the battle between good and evil erupted, which will last for an unforeseeable time to come. And God gave every being of light the freedom to turn according to its own will. Nevertheless, these beings will continue to fundamentally belong to the divine light, even if the battle lasts for millennia, each one of the smallest components of the eternal Light will flow back to the origin of its purpose. This is the cycle according to God's will, that every being should voluntarily turn to Him, with full use of its strength and supported by the love of the divine Father who generates all light, and thus find the path back to perfection and be permitted to stay close again to the heavenly Father, the eternal Light.

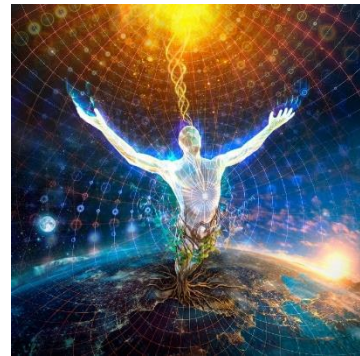
When your will applies to spiritual spheres you shall also receive the strength to pursue your goal. The assurance for your striving rests in your heart, you will feel in your heart that your contact with the Savior will result in the flow of divine grace and, happily and with inner peace, you will be able to look forward to the future. Where the Savior seeks to help His Own every day will bring you blessings, yet also thank the Lord for every day which instructs you of His Word. And thus begins: Where beings of light argue with darkness no grain will go astray, everything will arise anew, always aspiring to reach the light. The smallest beings will stay in the universe and, depending on the duration of their life, will reshape themselves time and again, until they finally reach a state in which they can freely use their own discretion to do as they like, yet always subject to the Creator's will. At the onset of their own freedom of will they are also responsible for their further course of life and development, for the maturity of their soul. It is their purpose to return to the eternal light from whence they originated, yet the time they take to accomplish this purpose has been left up to them. Consequently, the light beings struggle incessantly against the power of darkness. Those who emerge victoriously from this battle in turn contribute towards helping those who are weak, and the most effective weapon in the battle against the opponent is love.

Oh, it is so pleasing for us to watch your endeavor! Anyone who strives towards the light like that cannot descend into darkness, therefore continue to receive our teachings so devotedly, after all, it benefits the salvation of your soul and that of many others. And thus, today we want to give you the final conclusion to yesterday's work: Throughout short intervals of time and space numerous beings of light go through their period of development embodied in animal and plant life, and they, too, unconsciously strive time and again towards the light. After a long time, during which they continue to develop higher in various stages, they enter the last stage before their spiritual rebirth, the embodiment as a human being. At this stage the battle begins with the darkness, which would like to deprive this earthly being of its purpose and completely pull the soul down into obscurity. And since the human being has free will at this stage to make a personal choice for good or evil, for light or darkness, this battle carries tremendous responsibility, for his apostasy from the heavenly Father, the eternal Light, would signify a struggle which would last for thousands of years again until this soul is finally also redeemed thanks to the never-ending help of the enlightened spiritual beings' love. Countless beings would strive more persistently were they aware of this responsibility, yet the human being should find the path to God of his own accord, only then will he once again be able to become a part of that which he was at the beginning of the world. Where God's omnipotence and love takes effect none of the tiny beings of light goes astray, this is why your attention is repeatedly drawn to the fact that, in infinity, every being takes its designated path, conducive to its development, in the care of the Father. The profundity of this law does not seem comprehensible to you, yet neither will you be able to grasp your heavenly Father's infinite magnitude before you have become what your purpose is, to be as one with the divine Father."

The Soul's Process of Pre-Development

BD No. 7259 of 01/18/1959 taken from book 77

God the Father is speaking: "It is difficult to convince people of the fact that they had already travelled an infinitely long path before they reached their existence as human beings. It is difficult, given that precisely this knowledge is not included in the Gospel, which is the foundation of every church organization. But God knows why He did not incorporate this knowledge, why He did not give his disciples the instruction to spread this knowledge, of which Jesus' disciples were most certainly informed.



He only gave them the task of proclaiming the divine teaching of love, He made the commandments of love for God and one's neighbor the subject of what they were to proclaim as Gospel to their fellow human beings, which were also proclaimed by Jesus as a human being on this earth. *For every person who lives up to this teaching of love will gain increasingly more knowledge and subsequently also find out about the human soul's infinitely long process of pre-development, which only has to pass its last test of will on earth.*

The commandment of love is, in fact, the first and most important commandment, a person will not benefit from any knowledge, and regardless of how profound it is, if he fails to live a life of love. *For even this knowledge would just be misconstrued intellectual information since only love is the key to realization and without love everything will remain incomprehensible, which is evident in the present time, since the said information will not be believed because it cannot be realized as long a person's thinking is not illuminated by love.* Everyone willing to love will dwell on it and not entirely reject it but he might perhaps question why such knowledge was not given to people earlier, why it isn't mentioned in the Book of Books. And the same answer applies that knowledge is only of value for a person if it has come alive through love. This is why every kind-hearted person will also be guided into deeper knowledge when the time is right. But since humanity is near the end they shall live even more responsibly. *The knowledge about the soul's process of preliminary development can increase this sense of responsibility in people which, in view of the near end, is not to be underestimated.* Even people who are as yet unable to believe can be prompted by thoughts to change their way of life. On the other hand, however, this knowledge is not necessary if a person lives a life of love according to God's will. Then he will receive the knowledge instantly when he enters the kingdom of the beyond; he will brightly and clearly recognize what appeared unbelievable or was entirely unknown to him on earth.

But during the last days everything possible will be done on the part of God for the human being to reach the goal with ease. His attention will be drawn to his earthly task and the great significance of fulfilling this task, and in view of the end he will also be informed of the previous development, although without proof. However, everyone could obtain this proof for himself if he lived a life of love which could enlighten him and also grant him the ability of spiritual vision. In that case a person would also be able to observe the bustling spiritual activity within the various works of creation, he would come to see the lives of animals and plants in a different light, and he would no longer doubt that he, too, would have passed through all these stages of pre-development. But this presupposes a high degree of love, hence the divine teaching of love must always take priority, i.e., the human being's attained degree of knowledge or realization on earth depends on his fulfillment of the commandments of love. Love is absolutely necessary for the human being, but he does not need to be knowledgeable, because he can suddenly become brightly enlightened if he has lived a life of love on earth. And this is why you humans should not be surprised that the Gospel does not openly state something which nevertheless can be found concealed within, for the Word of God has various meanings, which only a person living in love will come to understand. Then he will also find many references regarding the human being's pre-existence in the creations of earth, and he will only ever attempt to pass his findings on to his fellow human being although they will only be believed if this person, too, is permeated by love."

NOTE: Jesus is speaking: "When the right time has come, then much shall also be written. (Gr VIII 79, 8) In those days to come, *My teaching will not be presented to men veiled in mystery, but wholly unveiled in its heavenly and spiritual significance, and that shall be the New Jerusalem that is to come down*

from the heavens upon earth. Its light, men will then see how greatly those who went before them were deceived and misled by the false prophets, just as the Jews are by the Pharisees" (Gr IX 90, 2).

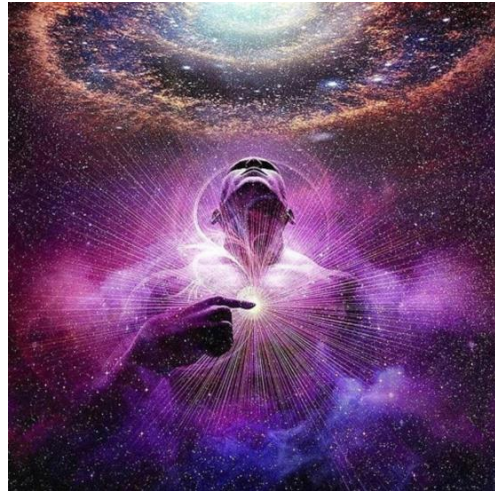
Incarnation of the Soul

BD No. 2775 of 06/15/1943 taken from book 34/35

God the Father is speaking: "The incarnation of a soul can take place when all substances, which have taken the earthly path within the many diverse creations and are thus developed, have joined together. ***The soul substance of every work of creation must be present in order to incarnate i.e. the human body becomes the cover for a soul which contains all works of creation in miniature within itself.***

The previous infinitely long earthly progress has resulted in the unification of all these substances who then await their last embodiment. They will be assimilated as soul into the human outer shell to experience the last stage of development. This incarnation is of varied duration due to the different substances state of maturity, which have had a certain amount of freedom during their preliminary stages already albeit they had acted under compulsion in accordance with God's will. However, in the last stages before embodiment as human being this compulsory condition was gradually eased so that certain instincts could be lessened or even increased. This subsequently resulted in a higher or lower degree of maturity which, in turn, determines the duration of the last embodiment as a human being. As soon as all soul substances have united as a human soul they strive for the last embodiment on earth, because they know that the human shell is their last physical cover and that they can be free from all earthly restrictions afterwards. For that reason, the soul will only spend time where it is offered an opportunity to incarnate. Understandably it will incarnate where people's nature adapts to its own degree of maturity, i.e. where people have the same instincts and attributes that match its own nature.

However, this does not exclude that a differently inclined soul would not try to incarnate with unfamiliar natured people in order to hasten its embodiment. But then it often has to struggle with added difficulties during its earthly life as its nature is not taken into account, and it is unable to fulfill the expected requirements. ***Nevertheless, since the soul knows the path of its earthly life in advance it is not stopped if it makes this choice itself,*** since it has the resources at its disposal to achieve its final maturity in every embodiment. Due to its earlier many diverse shapes it has every aptitude within itself at various degrees and can increase or reduce them at will. Thus, it is not incapable and the strength to do so is likewise given in accordance with its will. However, if it strives half-heartedly it will remain in the same state of maturity prior to its incarnation as a human being; in that case the incarnation has not resulted in higher development. Although at the time of death it will shed its physical cover but its desires and instincts, which



it was meant to overcome during its earthly life, still connect it to the material world. Therefore, it has not taken full advantage of its earthly incarnation, and when it realizes that it has wasted the right to become a child of God and can no longer achieve it either, it experiences an indescribable state of remorse; even though it still has infinitely many opportunities in the beyond to arrive at the contemplation of God. ***Yet one day an incarnated soul has to give account before God how it has used earth's opportunities and what spiritual progress it has achieved at the time of death, because the embodiment as human being is a mercy that cannot be valued highly enough; it is a gift which the human being should cherish appropriately by doing whatever advances his development because he cannot return to earth again once he has left it.***

The Soul – part A

Ref: MV Vol. 1:634

Man falls into error when considering life and death and applying these two nouns. He calls "life" the period of time in which, born of his mother, he begins to breath, to nourish himself, to move, to think, to act; and he calls "death" the moment when he ceases breathing, eating, moving, thinking, acting and he becomes cold insensitive remains, ready to go back into a bosom: a sepulcher. But it is not so. I want to make you understand "life" and point out to you the actions suitable to life.

Life is not existence. Existence is not life. Also, this vine which is intertwined around these columns exists. But it does not possess the life of which I am speaking. Also, that bleating sheep, tied to that far off tree, exists. But it does not have the life of which I am speaking. The life of which I am speaking does not begin with the existence of the body and does not cease with the ending of the flesh. The life to which I refer does not start in a mother's womb. It begins when a soul is created by the Thought of God to dwell in a body, it ends when sin kills it.

Man, at first, is but a seed that grows a seed of flesh, instead of gluten or of marrow, like the seeds of cereals and of fruit. At first, he is but an animal taking shape, the embryo of an animal like the one now swelling in the womb of that sheep. But the moment that this incorporeal part, which is also the most powerful in its subliming incorporeity, is infused into the human conception, then the animal embryo does not only exist as a beating heart, but it lives according to the Creating Thought, and becomes man, **created in the image and likeness of God, the son of God**, the future citizen of Heaven.

But that happens if life lasts. Man can exist having only the image of man, but no longer being man. That is, he is a sepulcher in which life putrefies. That is why I say: "Life does not begin with existence and does not cease with the ending of the flesh." Life begins before birth. Life, then, never ends, because the soul does not die, that is, it does not fall into nothingness. *It dies to its destiny*, which is the celestial destiny, but it survives its punishment. It dies to that blissful destiny, by dying to Grace. This life hit by a canker, which is the death of its destiny, last throughout centuries in damnation and torture. This life, if preserved as such, reaches the perfection of living, by becoming eternal, perfect, and blissful like its Creator.

Have we any obligations to life? Yes, we have. It is a gift of God. Every gift of God is to be used and preserved carefully, because it is as holy as the Donor. Would you ill-use the gift of a king? No. It is handed down to the heirs, and to the heirs of the heirs, as a glory to the family. Why then ill-treat a gift of God? How is this divine gift to be used and preserved? How is this heavenly flower of the soul to be kept alive to preserve it for Heaven? How can you achieve "to live" above and beyond existence?

Israel has clear laws on the matter and has only to comply with them. Israel has prophets and just people who set examples and explain how to observe the law. Israel has now also its saints. Israel cannot, should not err. I see stained hearts and dead souls swarming everywhere. So, I say to you: do penance; open your souls to the Word; practice the immutable Law; give fresh blood to the worn out "life" which is languishing within you; if it is already dead, come to the true Life: to God. Bewail your sins. Shout: "Mercy!" But rise from the dead. Do not be dead people alive, so that in future you may not suffer eternally. I will speak to you only of the way to reach and preserve life. Another man said to you: Do penance. Cleanse yourselves of the impure fire of lust, of the mud of sin." I say to you: My poor friends, let us study the Law together. Let us hear it, once again, the fatherly voice of the true God. And then let us pray together the Eternal Father saying "May Your mercy descend into our hearts."

The Soul – Part B

BD No. 6647 of 09/17/1956 taken from book 71

God the Father is speaking: "There is still a complete lack of clarity about problems which cannot be solved by human intelligence alone and where God's spirit has to work even though its working is rarely acknowledged. But only He is able to give a clear answer to questions that concern unsolved problems. However, even the results of such working of the spirit are doubted although they alone correspond to the truth. Irrespective of what question is asked, only the answer given to people by God Himself through His spirit will always be correct. However, 'spirit' should not be confused with 'intellect' because intellect can just as well reason in the wrong direction. There is no guarantee that intellectual results correspond to truth or so many different opinions and points of view would not exist, all claiming to be truth, but all merely gained by means of intellect.

The 'spirit', however, is the radiance emanated by the Eternal Truth Itself which gives light, i.e. knowledge, which is simply accepted by the intellect, for which there is no evidence. But the 'spirit of God' provides absolute innermost conviction; it provides comprehensive clarification even without making special use of the intellect. The concept of 'soul' cannot be tangibly explained to someone unless he has already acquired a certain amount of 'spiritual knowledge' because the soul is something spiritual, it has no earthly-physical quality and can therefore only be explained spiritually. The soul is the fluid essence which gives life to the body, to the physical form. The soul is the actual life, the human being's true ego, which is sheltered in an external physical shell, which cannot be seen but is always present as long as energy expresses itself in it. Without the soul the human being would not be a self-aware being. The soul is God's once emanated strength which He externalized as a spiritual being to whom He gave an independent life. And this

being was endowed with free will and the ability to think. The fact that and why this spiritual being, the soul, shelters within the human body during its earthly life is a separate issue; first it should be explained that it is the soul which thus enables the human being to think, feel and want.

It should be emphasized that the soul is the animator of all organs, that every physical activity, every prompting of will and feeling is the expression of the soul within the body, which is indeed something spiritual that cannot be seen by the human eye and which, if it could be seen, would fully resemble its external human shell. It is the soul which continues to live after the death of the body, and which then can also be seen by other souls whose degree of maturity enables their spiritual vision. The soul can therefore never be explained as some kind of physical substance; it is and remains spiritual substance, thus God's spiritual emanation, which is intended to fulfill a purpose on earth. It is indestructible and immortal but can differentiate itself from other souls by its emission of light, and **the purpose of its earthly life consists of increasing the degree of light which it had once darkened of its own free will.**

It is not possible for anyone to explain the essence of soul purely scientifically because the soul is nothing tangible nor explicable with human senses but strength from God's strength, whose essence is and remains equally inexplicable but Who cannot be denied by thinking people. Just as the soul is the true Self of the human being which cannot be defined either, which exists yet cannot be proven, which certainly controls the functions of the physical organs but can also exist without the body, whereas the body without the soul is completely lifeless matter even if all organs are still unchanged. But the life is missing as soon as the soul leaves the body, something is missing that activates the body, which triggers the organs' functions, which decisively influences the brain voluntarily and which arouses the stirring of every resolve in a person. And this thinking, wanting, and feeling something, the soul, now exists in other spheres but always as the same being which previously inhabited the body. And therefore, it can also be recognized in the realm of the beyond which, however, requires a certain degree of maturity."

The Soul's Individuality

BD 8117 05.03.1962

God the Father is speaking: "For the sake of complete clarity I want to give you a further explanation: The spiritual being I brought into life, that is, which I externalized from Me as something spiritually tangible, cannot be denied individuality. This being was created in My image; it was externalized by Me into infinity as entirely separate; it was self-aware and therefore also recognized itself as a thinking being with free will. It was a miniature of Me Myself, but so minute compared to My fundamental fullness that one can indeed speak of a 'tiny spark' from the fiery sea of My strength of love. And yet it was an individual with self-determination, except that through the influx of strength of love it was constantly in contact with Me, but it did not hinder the being in any way. It was free and full of light and strength. It was a divine creature which had



come forth from Me in supreme perfection and from My side experienced no limitation of any kind. Any limitation or restriction of its light and strength was caused by itself because it was able to make its own choices. And the same also applies to all spiritual beings which the first-created spirit brought into life through its will with the use of My strength. They, too, were supremely perfect, every being was conscious of itself and thus an individual which was able to be separately and fully independently active in the spiritual kingdom in free will. Hence no being was bound to Me and My characteristics by force, every being moved freely and separately within the spiritual creations and was inconceivably happy. If therefore a 'fall of the spirits' is spoken of, a descent of the original spirits into the abyss, it should be understood such that the beings refused to receive My illumination of love, that they rejected the flow of My strength of love, which ceaselessly poured out of Me and permeated everything with light and strength. They no longer accepted My spirit, My love, they separated themselves from Me deliberately but would never be able to fade away again because they were and will forever remain My emanated strength of love. Each fallen original spirit was a being in its own right, an 'individual,' and will remain so for all eternity. It strove away from the Eternal Light, from the Primary Source, and therefore deprived itself of all light and strength.

But the original spirit remained the being which once came forth from Me in supreme perfection. Even if the infinitely long process of guiding the spiritual being back to Me, where this being is dissolved and its tiny particles have to go through all creations, **all these particles come together again and, after endlessly long periods of time, form the self-aware being again, the fallen original spirit, so that shortly before its perfection as the human being's soul it can make a free decision again as to whether it wants to return to the realm of the blessed spirits or whether it will infinitely prolong its return again as a result of its own opposition.** However, the self-aware being, the human being, shelters as soul the spirit I once externalized, which will always and forever remain the same individual that once originated from Me. It was perfect and chose the abyss of its own free will, but it did not cease to exist, it did not become fragmented, it is and forever remains the self-aware being, with the exception of the path of return through the creations when its self-awareness is taken away, when it is dissolved and in the state of compulsion takes the path of higher development. And even if the being must travel the path through the creations more than once, it will always remain the same self-aware being which once turned away from Me, which rejected the strength of My love and thus deliberately separated itself from Me despite the fact that this can never happen because everything that emerges from Me will always be inseparably connected to Me. Thus the 'apostasy of the spirits' is also to be understood literally. The self-aware being I once emanated fell because I did not stop it and because it was able to determine its own fate in free will. And this spiritual being must return to Me again in supreme perfection if it wants to unite with Me in order to be incomparably happy forever. For as soon as I can permeate it with My love again it will also regain its original state. However, it always remains aware of itself, it is lovingly united with Me and yet a free being which nevertheless has entirely entered into My will and therefore can create and work with Me in inconceivable happiness."

Development of the Soul - Original Spirit

BD No. 7571 of 04/07/1960 taken from book 80

God the Father is speaking: *"Spiritual substance matures during every developmental period, and one period can in fact suffice for the spiritual substance to progress through the creations to the point that it is able to embody itself as a human being and successfully pass its last test of will.* But several such periods may be needed for this spiritualization of hardened soul-substances if resistance is so strong that its higher development is too slow and the existence as a human being carries an added risk of the soul descending into the abyss again. **For free will, which is tested during the stage as a human being, is decisive.**

But prior to this, free will is constrained. Although the hardened spiritual substance is no longer subject to God's adversary's will, due to this process of development through the creations of earth, the individual substances are nevertheless unable to use free will, instead they are controlled by God's will, that is, **their process of development takes place in a state of compulsion, they are subject to God's will,** Who assigns a task to all spiritual substances within the works of creation. By accomplishing this task within the law of compulsion they gradually progress, i.e. their resistance lessens; they carry out a helpful function and are able to slowly reach the state when their free will can be returned to them. And this process of development requires constant changes of the external shape, it is a slow ascent, it is an integration with the laws of nature and therefore a submission to God's will, if only due to a certain amount of coercion which, however, only helps to relieve the being and one day is meant to provide it with the freedom to think, want and act using its own will again.

And this process through the works of creation cannot be avoided if the spiritual being is to return to God again, from Whom it had distanced itself to such an infinite extent as a result of its apostasy that it would never be able to overcome this distance of its own strength, and would never be released by God's adversary to return either if God did not remove the spiritual substance from him for the very purpose of banishing it into matter, into the creations on this earth. **God's adversary is entitled to the fallen spirits because they had voluntarily followed him into the abyss. But God has the same right because the beings emerged from His strength. Hence God is justified in removing them from the adversary's control, but in return the latter was given the right to influence the soul again when it lives on earth in the stage as a human being. And to this end the spiritual substance must have attained a degree of maturity again when it is able to use its will in order to freely decide which lord to choose.**

But God cannot place the spiritual substance into this state instantly, it has to cover the process of ascent in the same progressive stages as it had descended, it has to relinquish its resistance slowly, as it cannot forcibly be broken. And this requires innumerable changes of form, through the world of rocks, plants and animals to the human being. Every change of external shape also lessens its resistance, for the being has been of service in a state of compulsion by which it gains increasingly lighter forms. But the sin of apostasy from God is so vast that the distance from Him is therefore vast as well, which means that untold changes of shapes are needed to reduce this distance in order to come closer to God again,

when only the last free decision of will is required for the last form to fall off, for the being to return to the Father again from Whom it had originated.

And this whole process of development within the creations of earth is a continuous battle. The spiritual substance tries to burst the external shape because it experiences it as a constraint, but each time it also experiences the rupture of the form as a relief irrespective of its level of maturity. And this is why the struggle, which you humans are able to observe in the animal kingdom, only seems cruel in your eyes, whereas time and again every animal experiences the change of its external shape as a relief. For this reason, God permits or even wants the weaker to succumb to the stronger, the stronger to terminate the life of the weaker and, in a manner of speaking, is thereby even able to serve the spiritual substance to continue its development. **Therefore, as long as the being is subject to the law of compulsion everything is determined by God, its end as well as its new formation. However, as soon as the being has reached the stage of a human being and has received its free will again, God withdraws His will. And then the human being is given laws which he has to observe if his earthly life is to be successful. On the one hand he is tied to the laws of nature, and on the other hand he is informed of God's will, to which he has to submit if his development is to progress and reach a conclusion, for the goal is to become free of every external shape and to enter the kingdom of light as a free spirit, to return to the Father's house, to God, from whence the being once originated."**

Every Soul is an Original Spirit – Part A

BD No. 8008a of 10/01/1961 taken from book 84

God the Father is speaking: "You should pay attention to My voice when it speaks to you, for My spirit will guide you into truth. If you want to be instructed of the truth then you can only receive it from Me Myself, the Eternal Truth Itself: When I once externalized the beings of My love, every being was a self-aware spirit which had a most intimate relationship with Me and was constantly permeated by My love. The permeation of love placed the being



into a state of brightest realization, it was illuminated, it recognized Me Myself and everything that surrounded it. Every being was an immeasurably happy God-like spirit. And yet, for reasons which have been explained to you many times already, countless beings fell away from Me while many others remained with Me. The former lost their light, whereas the latter kept their immense abundance of light and did not follow My adversary, the first fallen original spirit, into the **abyss**. And with these remaining original spirits I create and work in infinity. But you humans are also aware of the fact that I set Myself the goal for the deification of all created spiritual beings and that this deification has to be accomplished by the being's own free will. You know why the beings had once fallen, and you also received the information of My eternal plan of Salvation which pursues the return of all fallen spirits (who want to return to God) and which will certainly be achieved one day.

You are aware of the fact that childship to God is the highest goal and that, according to My plan of eternity, all beings, which live on earth as humans, are able to achieve childship to God, if their free will seriously strives for it. Then every once fallen being will have attained the highest degree of bliss, it will have become My image, it will be able to create and work entirely of its own free will and, yet it will be completely the same as My will, it will no longer be determined by Me yet My child will have completely acquired My will and will therefore be inconceivably happy. And this exceedingly high degree of bliss is also desired by My remaining spiritual beings, for although they are in direct contact with Me, although they are constantly permeated by My strength of love, they are still created beings according to My will which cannot but think and act according to My will, which are more or less only ever implementers of My will. Making this difference clear to you humans requires a high degree of maturity which you do not possess as yet, so in view of your limited thinking I can only explain to you such things which your intellect is able to grasp, precisely because you lost this profound realization about all correlations in the spiritual kingdom as a result of your fall into the abyss and have not yet attained the final realization on earth. *Nevertheless, it suffices you to know that the beings which remained with Me will also take the path across Earth one day in order to attain childship to God, which will immeasurably augment their beatitude.*

This path across earth therefore requires a life in the flesh, the existence as a human being, just like the once fallen spiritual beings must do in order to pass their test of will. Consequently, a spirit of light wishing to embody itself on earth will also choose an earthly body for its abode whose spiritual substances have already attained a certain degree of maturity so that a spirit of light can occupy it, that it will animate the dead external form, the human body, and start its path across Earth in it. This spirit of light is therefore the spiritual strength which has to flow into a human body, which is born into the world as a human being and which can only 'live' when this spiritual strength, the soul, the divine breath, is breathed into this external form by My all-embracing Fatherly love, which has set itself the goal of deifying all its created beings into children. So this angel-spirit animates the human being as a soul, and since the body's substances, although more clarified than those of most people, are still immature, since they, in My adversary's world, are also exposed to his influences, and since the angel-spirit has to fulfill a spiritual task on earth as well and is also usually unaware of its origin, the soul, its real Self, must resist all temptations which confront it from outside. It must fight against all instincts which still adhere to the body, because the latter had passed through all works of creation, and as a human must often travel an extremely difficult path of life during which his free will must not fail, where he will always have to take refuge in Me as his Father so as not to lose the strength he needs on earth. For as an angel-spirit he had voluntarily given up his abundance of light and strength when he started the process across earth. Nevertheless, the bond with Me is very strong because such a person is permeated by unusually ardent love which is the most reliable guarantee that he will reach his goal on earth, that he will return to Me as 'My child' because this was his greatest desire while he was in My kingdom. Hence every spirit of light will always go through the same process, it will always, as a 'soul', enter an

earthly material form which will exert a more or less strong influence due to its multifarious composition and which will present many tasks to the soul, for this external form will always have passed through earthly matter, unless, due to previous unusual influences having clarified its substances already, it can very quickly follow the requirements of My divine spiritual spark which, in the embodied beings of light glows especially brightly and can achieve a complete spiritualization of all substances faster.

*And so, **the soul of Jesus** was also a most elevated spirit of light. He, too, entered an earthly material external form and gave life to this form when He, as a soul, took possession of the external cover, when He was born on earth. The vessel which gave birth to Him was pure and immaculate, His conception was not a low act of the senses, even so, his body was the same as every other human body because He was meant to accomplish the work of spiritualization as an example which should and can be emulated by all people. His soul, even though it came from above, was also harassed by immature spirits which He was not allowed to shake off but which, by virtue of His love, He had to spiritualize as well, which required tremendous work on Himself and such work must likewise be carried out by every angel-spirit in earthly life, because the process through the 'abyss' also means the conquering of everything that belongs to the abyss and afflicts these people. Their great love, however, accomplishes this work with perseverance and patience. And usually, they succeed in spiritualizing body and soul, that is, to also redeem the still unspiritual substances which join the soul, to establish complete order in themselves while at the same time fulfilling an exalted mission they voluntarily offered to do."*

Every Soul is an Original Spirit - Part B

BD 8008b 02.10.1961

God the Father is speaking: "Every substance, every spiritual being which once emerged from My love, is emanated strength. In their fundamental element they are the same as Me Myself, they are made of the strength of My love. The fallen spirits were dissolved into countless tiny particles for the purpose of being led back to Me; the once emanated strength was reshaped into all kinds of creations, for the strength had to become active again somehow because this is the law of eternity. But these dissolved tiny particles gathered again, and every once fallen original spirit receives its self-awareness back as soon as it lives on earth as a human being, as soon as it starts the final stage of the infinitely long process of development before it enters the spiritual realm once more. Hence this gathered spiritual substance animates a human being's external form.

The soul itself is therefore the once-fallen original spirit, it is the self-aware being which once originated from Me in an abundance of light and voluntarily fell away from Me and which My adversary, the first-fallen spirit of light, pulled into the abyss. The host of originally created spirits was innumerable and the number of beings which remained with Me was also inconceivably great. Yet they, too, were basically the same: emanated strength of love from Me. If therefore a spirit of light, angel-being, takes the path across the earth for the purpose of attaining childship to God, it enters the same situation as every fallen spirit. It enters a cover of flesh which consists of more or less tiny matured spiritual particles, for the flesh

belongs to this earth. The body can certainly be more clarified and shelter fewer substances opposed to Me but it is always earthly material substance which is, after all, the reason why all earthly progress becomes a difficult trial or test of will for the soul inhabiting a body of flesh.

For challenges need to be present, even a soul of light must experience battles of the flesh which My adversary will initiate, time and again, by using an external cover in order to attack the soul in every way. And thus, even a soul of light will be subject to severe temptations, since the earthly body is in My adversary's realm and he will especially provoke a soul of light in order to make it fall, since he had not succeeded in the past. Yet such a soul's exceptionally strong willingness to love also assures it a constant flow of strength from above, for it will not renounce its bond with Me, it is powerfully drawn to Me and this yearning of love is a formidable weapon in the battle with the adversary, from which it will certainly emerge victoriously. *However, you must not think that a spirit of light, a non-fallen spirit, will join a fallen spirit in order to take the path across earth together. Every soul is an original spirit, whether fallen or not.* The fallen original spirit goes through the process of development dissolved in countless substances until it is permitted to embody itself as a human being, until it therefore enters a human external shape as a 'soul.' Then non-fallen spirits do not need to be dissolved; instead, it enters a human cover as a soul from above, just like those beings of light which attained a high degree of light in the kingdom of the beyond and, for the sake of a mission, want to repeat the path on earth with the goal of attaining childship to God. Such souls directly embody themselves in the flesh. My once emanated strength flows as a 'breath of life' into the external human form and gives life to this form. You humans should always remember that everything which was once 'created' by Me is My emanated strength of love which, as a result of My will, became self-aware beings which can never perish. But I can also reshape this strength, I can dissolve these beings and let other creations arise if I thereby pursue a purpose which is based on My love and wisdom. However, I can also clothe such a self-aware being with the cover of a human being if My love and wisdom thereby hopes to achieve a purpose. And every soul, which ought to be regarded as a human being's real life, is an original spirit, to whom My infinite love offers the opportunity of attaining childship to God on earth, which every created being must strive for and accomplish itself."

Where Does the Soul Reside in a Human Body?

Ref: Earth and Moon by Jacob Lorber: 4

Jesus is speaking: "The center of gravity in a human being is the heart, which, from the physical point of view, is an extremely artistic cellular tissue in which the living soul resides; and within this soul the spirit of the human being, like a weaver, is active. The loom is equipped for the development of earthly life and its timely maintenance, so that, through its wonderful construction, everything which is necessary for physical life can be produced by the soul."

Self-awareness of the Original Spirit

BD No. 7569 of 04/05/1960 taken from book 80

God the Father is speaking: "Every original spirit regains its self-awareness when it lives as a human being on earth and recognizes itself as a human being. Then all the small particles of soul, which were once dissolved for the purpose of return through creation, are gathered in the spirit again, and then the being will be able to acquire the degree of maturity which it originally possessed as a created spirit, which it had renounced and now has to regain in order to enter the spiritual kingdom as a spirit of light. **And thus,**

every human being is an embodied original spirit, a once fallen being, My eternal love's product of creation, which had merely left Me of its own free will and therefore also has to return to Me again of its own choice.



But the human being does not know what he was, what he is and what he should become again. He first needs a certain level of maturity before he can receive and understand this knowledge. He certainly recognizes himself as a human being soon enough but not as a spiritual being, that is to fulfill its purpose, and since he only recognizes himself as a human being living on earth, his thoughts are more directed towards the world. And this usually prevents spiritual awareness which he will only experience when he turns away from the world towards the spiritual kingdom. Then it is possible to inform him of his real purpose, and then he will be able to accept and adjust to it voluntarily, which will certainly result in his full spiritual maturity. However, once he has accepted it he will also be happy at the thought and the certainty of belonging to the original spirits which I externalized as living creations and which return to Me as children, and as human beings are therefore approaching their perfection.

And only the human will needs to be good, because then it will focus on Me of its own accord. The human being asks for his God and Creator and this resolve is already the right decision, it will have passed the test of will which confronts the original spirit as human being on earth. Life on this earth does not last long but it can fully suffice for a person to spiritualize himself so completely that he acquires the degree which results in the childship to God, i.e. which returns the original spirit into a state of perfection again. On account of his resolve, he will have achieved the highest degree himself and can then stay in closest proximity to Me where the direct emanation of My love is assured to him, even though every original spirit will be able to ascend ever higher once he is allowed to enter the kingdom of light, provided the right decision of will was made on earth. And every original spirit is ecstatically happy when he becomes aware of the infinitely long path, he has travelled in order to achieve the greatest abundance of light, in order to be immensely blissful. And he will sing My praises and give thanks and glorify Me eternally, he will be and remain My child which will never leave Me again, which will create and shape in accordance with My will for its own happiness."

Passing Through each form of Creation - Human nature

BD No. 0716 of 12/19/1938 taken from book 15

God the Father is speaking: "Your friends from the other side lovingly turn towards you to fulfill your desire, and thus receive:

The world as such has only one purpose, namely, to lead the many living beings, who are carriers of spiritual substances, towards higher development, which can only take place in an environment where all manner of conflicts occurs, of which the world offers an adequate amount. Be it on earth or on the many other celestial bodies, living beings everywhere have to face unforeseeable difficulties and need all their strength to overcome them. However, such strength is present in every living being, since every living being receives strength to exist in the first place. Further development therefore always depends on how this strength within the living being is utilized. That means, the sooner any activity incumbent upon the living being is carried out, the faster the spiritual intelligence is released from its surrounding form and the next stage of development can begin.

Now it is possible to ask, which form guarantees the fastest development for living beings? And the answer to this question can only be that it is vital to pass through every form, and that a limit can only be set where the unification of innumerable small particles of soul result in one whole, when all substances of soul are present to give life to the final embodiment, the form of the human being. The most subtle movement in the human being, the gentlest emotion is only due to the finely tuned soul, which in turn is composed of even more subtle particles of soul. These are a most important requirement in the construction of the whole as they, in turn; guarantee the completed soul the most delicate emotions and perceptions for the smallest miracles of creation by divine love. If these tiniest of components did not exist the human being would not understand current and future miracles of creation, he simply would not be able to see something that is not already alive within himself, he must have everything that exists in creation as the smallest components within himself, that is, every substance must be a part of his soul, only then can he also observe what is outside of himself.

This instruction in turn raises the question as to what kind of components the small living beings consist of, and this is easy to explain: they all carry substances of yet smaller living beings within themselves but accordingly can only instinctively feel what has already progressed further in evolution, yet at the same time they control what already exists in these living beings as substance. **Knowledge of this important information in the doctrine of creation is of**

greatest advantage for the human being because from this he will learn to understand the complex composition of human nature. *On the basis of this fact he can judge that the human being is indeed the crest of divine creation, so to speak, that he, i.e. his soul, is so delicately constructed within himself, that it is impossible for such a work of art to have been produced by a wise Creator merely for the duration of earthly life, because everything he sees in nature, be it in the*



region of mineral, plant or animal life, exists in atoms within himself. The human being incorporates the whole work of creation in miniature within himself.

Therefore, he also must overcome within himself the opposition that approaches him from outside, from the world, which means that countless external dangers motivate the human being into strongest resistance, while likewise the spiritual atmosphere is stimulated by the continuous resistance and permanent struggle of the different substances of soul and only can become stronger and the soul open to higher truths of light in this way. Just as every living being, even the smallest, has to perform a specific task, so has the human being, as the carrier of all these substances. *And this task consists of first and foremost of spiritualizing all substances of soul that are still in harmful opposition to their real task, who would still prefer to perform the earthly task which is their nature due to their past earthly duty in an earlier form. For this reason, the human being has to fight against many faults, mistakes and bad habits since the character of the substances bound in the soul repeatedly comes through and would like to seduce the flesh, the earthly cover, into compliance, which should be strongly resisted during earthly life.* And only in this way can it be understood that the human being has an extraordinary responsibility during earthly life; that there must be a continuous struggle to triumph at the end of the day truly spiritualized as victor against all dangers and to have resisted all temptation. After all, *how often indeed is the spirit willing but the flesh is weak."*

Composition of the Soul - miniature creation

BD No. 4845 of 02/24/1950 taken from book 55



God the Father is speaking: "The human being's soul is a formation consisting of inconceivably numerous miniature creations. It is effectively a composition of creations which were its past embodiments, so that it can be called the whole work of God's creation Who demonstrated His infinite love, wisdom and omnipotence in the human soul. The human being has no idea that he shelters the entire creation in his soul, but when, after the death of his body, he is able to

behold himself in the spiritual kingdom he will look with utmost reverence and love for God upon the works of wonder he finds within himself again. The soul substance of every embodiment during this process of development is gathered, and thus the individual substances of the human soul have moved through the whole of creation and now exhibit an incredible versatility. Only then will it become obvious how magnificent God's works of creation are, and His greatness, His love, wisdom and omnipotence will emerge so distinctly that all living creations remain poised in reverence and love for God Who provides such immeasurable happiness to His living creations through becoming aware of His strength and the realization of Himself. However, the soul requires a certain degree of maturity to be able to behold itself; this is why it is one of the beatitudes belonging to those in the kingdom of light. Beholding the soul is part of Jesus' promise 'eye has not seen, nor ear heard, the things which I have prepared for those who love Me.' Hence the soul can examine all areas, it can behold what it has never seen before, but which is undeniably present in creation, and it knows these wonders will never end, that constantly new formations emerge and yet it will never tire of beholding these creations, instead it will want to see increasingly more and thus also become increasingly happier. The soul is something imperceptible for human senses and therefore cannot be understood either. For the person on earth, it is something spiritual, in the spiritual kingdom, however, it is the essence, it is that which animates the spiritual creations, it is the true living being in the spiritual kingdom because it is permeated by the strength of God. And thus, it finds within itself every thought of God again which He shaped into a form through His strength of will. Every work of creation is a manifested thought of God. And so, the human soul is an enormous work of creation in miniature, yet for people on earth it is a doubtful concept, it is something of whose existence they are not entirely convinced and which they can never prove scientifically either. Earthly people consider the soul a nothing or a questionable object, in truth, however, it is the most magnificent creation which gives evidence of God's love, wisdom and omnipotence, which glorifies Him in the spiritual kingdom, which is everlasting and gives rise to constantly praising God by all those who dwell in the kingdom of light and are blessed."

Immortality of the Soul

BD No. 1874b of 04/04/1941 taken from book 28

Jesus is speaking: "The construction of a human being always requires the same components: body, soul and spirit. The body, the external form, performs the functions which are determined by the soul. Consequently, the body is just the agent through which the soul's will is accomplished. At the moment of death, the soul no longer needs an agent for service as it did on earth. i.e. in the visible work of creation, because it changes its environment and moves into regions where nothing externally visible needs to be done. The body, which was just the instrument for the earthly path during which the soul should have formed itself into the carrier of the divine spirit, becomes unnecessary.

The spirit, the third component of the living being, lies in fact dormant in every human being and only becomes active when the will of the soul pays more attention to the spirit than to the body, that is, when the soul considers the earthly

demands less important than the demands of the spirit, which always amounts to earthly needs becoming secondary. Although body, soul and spirit belong together they nevertheless can have separate goals. The soul can direct its will more towards the demands of the body, but it can also disregard those and make its will available to the spirit within itself. And it is precisely this direction of will that decides its life in the beyond, i.e. the state the soul finds itself in after the earthly life, which can be blissful or distressing. The earthly life, the function of the body, is therefore just a temporary condition for the soul. The soul impels the body to all actions on earth, but it has by no means ceased to exist when the body cannot perform its function any longer. The soul has indeed left the body because it moves into regions where it no longer requires an exterior form.

But to consider the soul dead as well would be a completely wrong concept of its essence, because the soul is something that cannot pass away. Indeed, when the human body is dead the soul can no longer determine its functions; it can, due to a lack of maturity because it had not given enough consideration to the spirit within itself, also fall into a state of inactivity; but it can never 'cease to exist'. Because the soul is something spiritual that is everlasting, while the body consists of earthly substance, of matter, and is therefore subject to constant change and finally disintegrates into its components as soon as the soul has left the body."

Example of the Merging of Natures Souls

Ref: [GGJ.10.180.15] Jakob Lorber

Jesus is speaking: "On this occasion we saw a fleeing gazelle that was chased by a jackal. In a short time, the jackal overtook the gazelle and provided itself with a morning meal, and at about 500 paces away from us, it did not take long before it completely finished the captured morning meal. Then it went very slowly further to the south to possibly capture also a midday meal.

But quickly, quite high in the sky, an Arabian giant eagle saw the crawling jackal. As fast as an arrow it immediately let itself fall down upon it from its height, and despite its resistance it carried it high into the sky. Then it let it drop on a place that was very stony everywhere. This clearly meant the death of the jackal. The eagle came down quickly, convinced itself that the jackal was dead, grabbed it with its claws again and flew with it southwards to a favorable spot where the jackal and the gazelle that was eaten by it served the giant eagle for breakfast.

You saw how the giant eagle captured the jackal that had eaten the gazelle, how he flew high in the sky and then let it fall on a stony ground, on which occasion that predator met a certain death. But then it was grabbed by the eagle again and carried far to the south where the eagle had its nest and dwelling place between the rocks. When he arrived there with his prey, he let it fall down again from a great height because it became already too heavy for him.

But the prey hit a rock face and fell down in a rather deep canyon of the valley. Arab shepherds grazed their meagre flocks in that canyon, and they soon saw how the giant eagle - a known enemy of the shepherds' flocks - flew lower and lower to pick up his prey that fell too deep in the valley.

When the shepherds noticed this, they immediately stretched their bows and aimed at the lower flying eagle, and when, according to their calculations, he was low enough, they shot sharp arrows with their bows. And see, the eagle was

well hit by 3 shepherds, fell down dead in the canyon and was taken by the shepherds as a true trophy of victory. But the poor jackal with his gazelle still lies between the low rocks where he fell down and will only be eaten after some time by other predatory birds.

And now look there, before the door stands already a human form as of a child and waits for a next procreation so that he can be taken up in the body of a mother. And behind this soul's appearance you can see a shining form. This is already the soul's spirit from the beyond that will take care that this soul who still belongs to the kingdom of nature will at the next opportunity be cared for in the body of a mother.

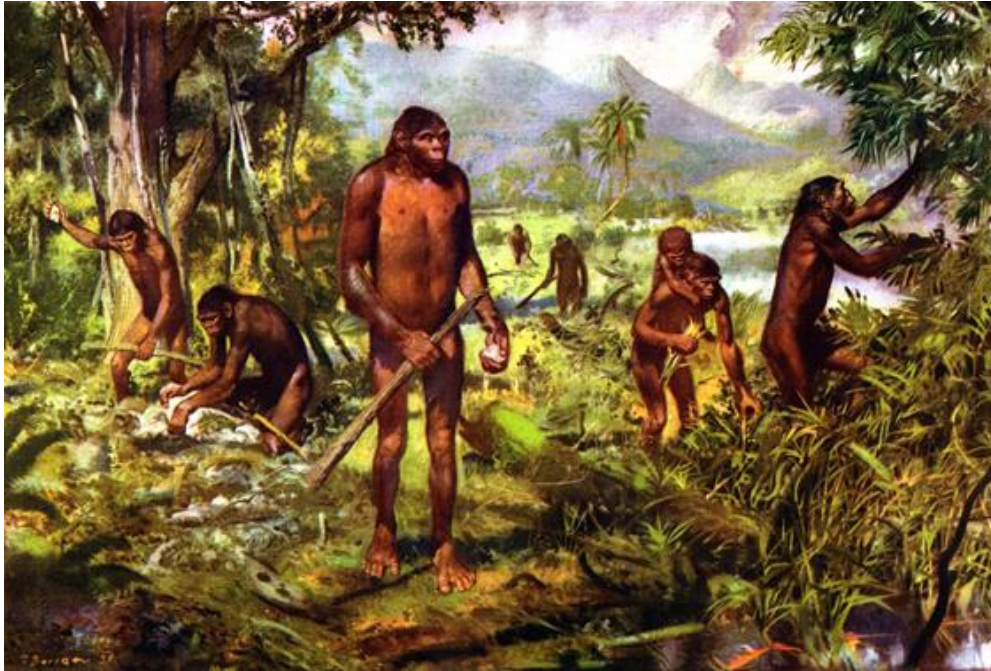
And now you also saw how from the 3 last already completed animal levels - of course after many thousands of previous processes - a human soul appears.

Out of this, a male child will be born into the world, who, if he will be well educated, can become a great man. The gentleness of the gazelle will rule his heart, the cleverness of the jackal his mind and the strength of the giant eagle his reason, his courage and his will. His character will be mostly warlike, which he can however temper by his heart and his cleverness by which he can be a very useful person for no matter what kind of office. However, if he is a soldier, he will be fortunate by his courage, but he also will be prey for the weapons of war of others.

But to let you see the child directly from his birth, already next year your earthly neighbor will be his father.

Now you know everything. I have told and shown you something which I did not tell or show any other person in that manner till now. But let us now take some bread and wine again and strengthen us after this rather long explanation."

Chapter 2: Pre-Adamites and Human Beings



Did Humans Inhabit Earth before Man? Prehistoric Man – Pre-Adamites, Prehistoric Human Beings, Prehistoric People, Body - Soul, and Spirit, Development and Relationship between Body – Soul – Spirit, How God leads Man to Eternal Bliss, Food – body and soul, What is Language? Language and its Origin, God Creates Man, Man vs. Evolution, Did Human Beings Evolve or was He a New Creation, What is Language and its Origin, First Primordial Language . . .

The Pre-Adamites: Did Humans Inhabit Earth Before Adam and Eve?

Ref: By Gaia Staff |September 23, 2020



The timeline of human existence has captured the attention of philosophers, scientists, and ordinary, curious people throughout the ages. Of course, there is the famous tale of Adam and Eve, but were they truly the first humans to walk the Earth? There is a growing body of research that suggests modern humans were not the first intelligent beings to live on our planet.

Did Pre-Adamites Exist? If so, who and what are they?

There are groups from all belief systems — Christians, conspiracy theorists, alien researchers, evolutionists, and more — who believe pre-Adamites (humans or intelligent beings that walked the Earth before Adam) actually existed.

The idea of the possibility of a pre-Adamite civilization and discussion about the origin of the human race is not a new one. Debates on the topic have been taking place since 170 AD. Over the years, many theories swirled about, enticing logical and romantic thinkers alike to explore further, look deeper, and question what they had been taught.

The Christian Debate

A growing number of Christians and people of other faiths believe modern-day humans were not the first — and possibly are not the last.

The Bible has clear passages about events that have taken place and that will take place at some point, stating human existence operates on a 7,000-year cycle. Based on scripture now, the Earth is only a little over 6,000 years old. However, a great deal of scientific evidence indicates it is much, much older.

The Bible does not specifically state Adam was the first man ever to walk the Earth. There are too many gaps in the information contained in that chapter to get a clear picture.

Consider the account of Noah and the Great Flood. All humans were wiped out, except for Noah and his family. It's quite possible a new Adam and Eve were born out of this catastrophe, starting the cycle anew. Therefore, it's not entirely irrational to have doubts over whether or not Adam and Eve were truly the first humans on Earth.

In the book of Genesis, we read the Earth was without form and void — as if it had experienced a great catastrophe. We know from scripture that water already

covered the Earth, and scientists are now finding, under the great bodies of water of the world, evidence of entire civilizations. These findings raise more questions than answers. How do we mesh science with scripture? Is it possible? (This scriptural verse is widely misunderstood, and its correct meaning is revealed in Chapter 1, Volume 1 - Secrets of Creation)

Many events documented in the biblical texts seem to be supported by science. Can these two seemingly oppositional systems coexist and come together to give us a more complete picture of where we came from?

Consider that the original biblical texts have been translated repeatedly. The version we use today has only been around since the 1600s, and the Catholic church uses a heavy hand in changing the scripture and the structure of the book itself. If you stop and think about it, perhaps we've lost something in all the edits and translations. Maybe we don't have the whole story.

Keep in mind, there is nothing new under the sun (Ecclesiastes 1:9).

The Scientific Debate

Traditionally, science and religion are diametrically opposed, with religion calling for faith and science calling for fact. However, scientific findings in recent years seem to be closing that gap.

Scientists present evidence that dinosaurs once roamed the Earth. Christians open their Bibles to the book of Job to read about what appears to be dinosaurs coexisting with humans. More recently found civilizations and objects defy all scientific and biblical teaching.

Throughout the world, ancient cities are being discovered; not on mountaintops or in forests, but under the ocean. These include:

Port Royal, Jamaica

Lion City of Quiandao Lake, China

Nero's sunken city

Cleopatra's Palace in Alexandria, Egypt, and Thonis-Heracleion in Egypt

Sunken city of Cuba

Dwarka, India

Ypnaguni Monument, Japan

What are these ancient underwater cities? Are they evidence of a pre-Adamite civilization? Many of them have elaborate structures and display a level of technology scientists say was not possible at the time they would have been in use. Could carbon dating and other methods scientists use to date materials really be that far off? That's not just a decade or two but a multi-billion-year error. Scientists believe they have definitive evidence, or are at least very close, to support their timelines.

Some scientists believe they have found evidence of the inhabitants of some of these civilizations. A flash frozen civilization in Antarctica is of particular interest. The skeletons looked vaguely human except for the elongated skulls. Who were they? What were they? Scientists speculate an ancient race that has long since died out.

Conspiracy theorists, on the other hand, believe they are an alien race that came here to escape their dying planet. They set up their civilizations and "seeded" the Earth. That is what we humans are.

Everyone has a story, a theory about what took place. The truth is, there are very strange things on this planet that cannot be explained by our current understanding of history, science, technology, and culture. What do we do? We press on. We continue to explore. We keep our minds open and keep searching for the truth.

Regardless of our belief systems, nothing can be learned by blindly walking through life ignoring what does not fit in the history books. Skeptics must acknowledge these ancient civilizations are real, and they were left here for a reason. Why weren't they destroyed? Is this part of an elaborate puzzle, a higher test to separate the wheat from the chaff?

As for the scientists, are they doing all they can? Is science truly utilizing all available resources to explore these civilizations and search for clues that would change the way we view society and the world? The fact that these structures and entire cities were left behind and buried, only for us to find them so many years later, suggests intent.

When you are deciding what to believe, the greatest tool that can be sharpened and utilized is your critical thinking.!

Pre-Adamic Races - Were Adam and Eve the First Humans?

[Aug 23 Andy Control Ad + Testimonial Reel + Disclaimers \(youtube.com\)](#)



Our Lord will now reveal the mystery regarding the pre-Adamites, Prehistoric Man and Project Humanity in detail. Let's begin:

Pre-Adamites and Prehistoric Man

Ref: Kurt Eggenstein – New Revelation and Prehistoric Man by Jakob Lorber 1854

"Lorber not only forecast with surprising accuracy what present-day astronomers and atomic physicists were to discover, but also to some extent the research findings of other disciplines that did not even exist in the middle of the last century. These are the field of paleontology, the study of animal and plant fossils, and anthropology, the science of man, his origins, etc.

In 1856, a strangely formed skull was found in the Neander Valley (= Tal) near Duesseldorf. It was larger than the present human skull, with a receding forehead and large bony prominences above the eyes, like those seen in the great apes of today. In 1872, Professor Virchow, Germany's reading anthropologist, rejected the thesis that this was the skull of a prehistoric man, considering it a

ridiculous idea. In his opinion, the strange form of the skull was due to rheumatoid arthritis and rickets. For years, no one dared give another interpretation, but slowly the situation changed.

In 1886, similar skulls were found in Belgium, in 1887 in France and Spain, and with them stone tools that could be dated. There was no doubt now that there had been a prehistoric man who had lived in Europe forty to sixty thousand years earlier. More human fossils were found near Heidelberg in 1907, and later in Asia and Africa, and these dated several hundred thousand years back. Today, the finds go back over more than a million years, yet although there have been so many of them, no clear picture has emerged. Various theories were put forward, and there have even been occasional attempts to support such theories with very clever forgeries. The search has gone on for a hundred years, but still the missing link has not been found.

It is not our aim in this book to consider the different theories, but rather to show that in this field, too, New Revelation has anticipated major aspects of research that have only been tackled at a much later stage. No one would ever have thought, in the middle of the last century, that prehistoric men could have lived on this earth millions of years ago, people walking upright but never getting beyond a certain level of primitive development, until suddenly, about six thousand years ago, a completely new human being appeared who had intellectual powers and with surprising rapidity-initiated civilizations, founded states, invented writing, and produced the concept of justice and laws.

Before that, there had been no appreciable change for millions of years, but now amazing advances were made within a very short period. Suddenly, a new power, quite unknown until then, came to life in man.

"Adamites man had to come", it says in New Revelation, "Before a spiritual sentience arose awareness of a power that moves the soul to know and seek its Creator." "And that is the divine spark, that is placed in the soul as spirit." (Gr XI 10, 6) "Without God, no deed can be done." (Ha I 116, 8) "Man, however, is unable to perceive the force that is at work." (Gr X 173, 9)

In New Revelation, prehistoric men are referred to as "pre-Adamites". The details given as to their appearance and their faculties are illuminating.

First, however, it is said that the six days of creation Moses wrote about in *Genesis* should not be taken literally, though not so long ago the churches still demanded that they should be. In Gr VIII 72, the six stages in the creation of earth are referred to, giving the duration of each stage as "very many millions of years". The existence of saurian during the third stage is referred to circumstantially: "The vegetation became much more varied and abundant and reached giant size, animals as much as the vegetation." Towards the end of the fourth stage, "Earth upheavals came again, burying most of what you would have called creatures at that time. You will find many things from that period beneath the soil on earth, but this is already very different from the products of the first three periods."

After the beginning of the "fifth period, it was probably more than a thousand times a thousand years until all soil that was well situated was wholly suitable again for a new creation of a great many different plants - grasses, herbs, shrubs and trees - and all kinds of animals and pre-Adamites man."

This reference to a "new creation of animals and plants" is of particular interest. The sudden disappearance and then after a long period the just as sudden reappearance of new animal and plant species has been confirmed by modern science." This fact, that there was a total break, means there has been no continuous process of evolution, i.e., it is unthinkable that animals and plants arose through mutation, without a new act of creation. Materialistic scientists have put forward the thesis that all new forms have arisen out of themselves. The long break, the deep trench in the middle, takes away the ground under the feet of that thesis of autonomism or autogenesis. The new cannot be explained on the basis of the structures that went before. Evolution does have a sequence of stages - as New Revelation says very clearly - but there is no unbroken line. "A blind force", we read in New Revelation, "has never yet produced even a small moss plant." (Gr VI 87, 7) "All life is such by nature that it is constantly able to change and grow, because of My constant inflow."

The following is also said about the fifth stage: "As this period began, the earth was brought into a regular orbit around the sun. Night and day were now alternating regularly. Yet there still were all kinds of changes taking place, as the poles of the earth were still shifting considerably."

It is in the discussion of the fifth stage that mention is made for the first time of prehistoric man. In Gr VIII 72, the following is said, for example: "There was as yet nothing resembling agriculture for these prehistoric men, though they did already make use of certain animal herds, leading a rough, nomadic life, wearing no garments and not building houses or huts. But they set up nests on thick branches of the trees where they could live and rest and built-up food stores that would gradually be consumed. When it grew very cold, they would move to warmer areas." "They did not have language of the kind now current among men; but they did have better articulated sounds, signs and gestures than even the most highly developed animals and were able to communicate everything they felt need to communicate." "Although this fifth preliminary evolution stage lasted very many thousand years (= millions of years), no cultural advance of any kind was to be noted among these people, they continued to live their unvarying nomadic life."

"Their skin was still fairly hairy, dark to light grey in color, hairless races were to be found only in the south. They continued generation upon generation in the lowlands until Adam." "In Adam's day, when the sixth earth period took its beginning, the earth in part again had to go through great upheavals, with fire and water, and almost the entire pre-Adamite race we have spoken of perished, with its domestic animals."

Lorber said that the prehistoric, original human race existed for "very many million years". Until some years ago, scientists held the view that original man was present only from the Quaternary period, which would mean they existed for about one million years. But in 1966, Dr. Louis Leakey, a well-known anthropologist, showed this assumption to be untrue and stated that prehistoric man had also existed during the Tertiary period. The fossils found by Dr. Leakey are many million years old. Some early human bones found are up to twenty million years old (*Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung* 3.10.1972). Lorber's statements on the subject have thus been fully borne out.

Apart from general discussion of prehistoric man, Lorber also goes into details, and these, too, have found scientific confirmation. One particular race for instance is referred to as follows: "As humans, they were enormously tall and strong, and their teeth were so strong that they were able to use them as cutting tools." (Gr VIII 72, 17)

Glowatzki has reported that in 1925, the German paleontologist von Koenigswald was shown teeth in China that "resembled human teeth in form". "The teeth which had been found were so large that if one were to draw conclusions from their size as to the size of the jaws and hence the whole Gigantopithecus, he would have been about 3.50 meters in height." ¹³⁴ Pinds made in East Java in 1939 and 1941 indicate that "prehistoric men lived there who were real giants." ¹³⁵ Dr. Leakey's most famous discovery is "Nutcracker Man", found in 1959, who had unusually powerful teeth in his jaw (*Rhein-Neckar-Zeitung*, 3.10.1972).



Another detail is given to vol. III of *Haushaltung Gottes* (God's Household Management), page 453, written down in 1864: "As to pre-Adamites man, the so-called 'animal man', fossilized remains may still be found here and there. They had the greatest instinctive intelligence of all animal species, setting up their dwellings, invariably the same, here and there. In place where streams and rivers were not too wide, they also placed stones in them, building a kind of bridge ... Not uncommonly they would continue with their building until ten or more such bridges formed something of a crude terrace ... These, then, were the people who had originated the walls of which traces are still to be found today, walls considered to be very old indeed."

Improbable as it may seem, such walls have been found. One of the best-known German anthropologists, Professor Gerhard Herberger, writes, in a volume containing a number of contributions on the origin of mankind from the Australopithecines, that the A type of these pygmy-sized people "were able to build small walls", using them, he assumes, for protection from the wind." ¹³⁶

It is not at all surprising that Lorber's friends did not manage to find a single publisher in the whole of Austria who was prepared to publish his writings. At the time, the disclosures of the true prophet must have seemed utterly phantasmagorical. If Lorber's work had reached a wider public in those days, it would surely have been met with annihilating criticism. From the present-day perspective, when flights to the moon no longer generate a particular excitement and the enormous dimensions of the universe have become a commonplace, the above disclosures made by Lorber seem nothing out of the ordinary, for secondary school pupils are now taught these things in their science lessons. More than a hundred years after Lorber's death, we, unlike his contemporaries and the generations that followed, are able to see the truth of what Lorber had to say."

God the Father will now explain in great detail the role of the pre-Adamites.

Pre-Adamites – prehistoric people

BD No. 9015 of 07/15/1965 taken from book 94

God the Father is speaking: "Long before the first human beings lived on earth, who was equipped by God with free will and intellect, human-like living creations whose task it was to make the earth habitable for the succeeding human race already existed. They did their work instinctively, i.e. driven by natural law, in order to sustain themselves, they gathered fruit, harvested field products and built dwellings for themselves, they did everything which instinctively was of benefit to them.

Yet they could not be held accountable for their actions, for they were not embodied by a soul which contained all the minute particles of a fallen original spirit. These beings were already very much like human beings, they had the same bodily form, yet they were neither self-aware nor able to communicate with each other, only their desire for self-preservation was strong and they often lived to a great age. In a manner of speaking, they were of service to creation by contributing towards changing the earth's surface which became ever better prepared as a suitable abode for the needs of human beings. However, these human beings were not yet given a task, they merely served the still imperfect original spirits as a final opportunity to mature, which they then were to continue as a human being with free will and intellect.

Hence these prehistoric people, the pre-Adamites, could not be considered real 'human beings', for their nature, their appearance and their every activity was more in line with an animal, which is still far behind in its development, only the form was similar to a human being. This is why later people named these living creations prehistoric man, but which could not be compared to the human being in possession of free will and awareness, which he was also meant to use intellectually in the right manner. Nor can it be said that the human being evolved from this pre-Adamites, since the human being was a new creation which God only externalized after many of the first original spirits awaited their embodiment. The prehistoric being was one of many creations which all had to serve their purpose of preparing an abode for the later appearing human being that would guarantee him a carefree earthly life. The Pre-Adamites were those human-like beings which could not be held responsible because they lived instinctively, like animals, who lived on earth long before human beings, who were not self-aware and could only live in groups, who thus could only be found where human beings would later settle, for whom they prepared the specific area with their consistent activity. This was the beings' innate characteristic and expressed itself by cultivating large areas of fields, by systematically sowing essential substances and by harvesting such stretches of land. They did this entirely unconsciously, resulting from a natural instinct of self-preservation. They fought each other and the stronger won. And thus, they also contributed to the fact that constantly new spiritual beings incarnated themselves, if only for a brief period of time, to prove their strength, when more or less strong impulses asserted themselves which gradually



weakened the longer they lived and then also slowly attained the maturity which enabled them to enter their final embodiment as a human-like being.

Thus human-like beings had already existed long before the first human beings, but they cannot in any way be related to the real human beings. They were comparable to them in their external shape but they existed like animals, in their instincts as well as in their manner of procreation, which evolved in line with their soul-substances, and were one of the many works of creations which disappeared again after they had completed their earthly task, thus the beings no longer required such creations, and they subsequently became extinct like so many creations which earth had sheltered for a while in order to make place for new creations.

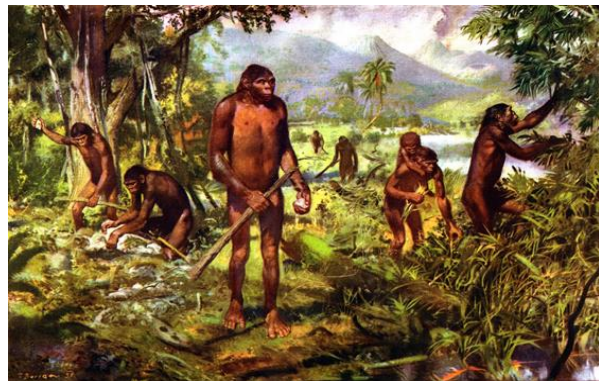
But it cannot be said that the modern human being evolved from these prehistoric creations, rather, he was and is a new creation, endowed with free will and intellect, which then had to prove itself, thus he also received his self-awareness again. To what degree the pre-Adamites could also use a certain amount of intelligence merely depended on the degree of maturity of their embodied soul-particles which, however, were unable to think and only expressed their intelligence through their active work, thus unconsciously. This activity nevertheless produced the greatest works of wonder, as can often be seen in nature that paths were created for these beings to reach one another, that they created gorges and underground passages and thus created the first prerequisites for the human race so that the latter could then live the right kind of life when the time had come for the first original spirits to embody themselves as human beings. *The more people spread the more the prehistoric beings began to disappear which, however, only ever happened in stages, until the human race began to populate the earth and their probationary period began, when every once fallen original spirit had to prove itself, and therefore the human being has to be equipped with self-awareness, intellect and free will in order to travel the path across earth which will lead him again to the Father from Whom he once originated."*

Prehistoric Human Beings - responsibility

BD No. 2513 of 10/16/1942 taken from book 33

God the Father is speaking:

"Throughout infinitely long periods of time earth has evolved such that it can be home to countless living beings and herefore complies with its true task as a place of education for the spirit. During this time of evolution, the living beings still had a different *nature*; they were more or less akin to the evolving earth as far as any living being was able to live.



There were numerous developmental periods and from a certain point onwards the earth was able to shelter living beings on its surface. However, as the earth evolved the more these increased in number, and thus the development of earth's

external form advanced as well as the living beings, which were assigned to earth for the purpose of higher development. It took an inconceivably long time, yet this process of evolution was necessary because the spirit within, on the surface and above earth first had to prove itself during the condition of constraint, which the spirit in every work of creation is subjected to. During this time of development, the spirit passed its test and could slowly evolve into a living being. The living conditions were considerably more difficult, but it asserted itself and gradually evolved into some kind of human being which, however, was completely different from the present-day human being.

The being was still constrained, i.e. it acted instinctively, and to some extent it was still guided and did not have its own free will and intellect. Although outwardly the being resembled the human being, it was still on the level of the animal world in every other respect and lived in accordance with divine natural law and therefore instinctively, without consciousness of its actions. This being was not accountable yet; its life was subject to the law of compulsion, motivated by its inherent instincts, which in turn expressed themselves in the beings in accordance with divine will. These living beings were compatible with the primitive conditions of the earth's surface, but to a certain extent they contributed towards the earth's development by multiplying themselves and with their unconscious actions accelerated the changes on the earth's surface, which became increasingly more suitable to shelter more evolved living beings until the first human beings, equipped with free will and intellect, were assigned to live on this earth. They could make use of everything on earth and, instructed by God Himself, live or were supposed to live a conscious life, which was the actual meaning and purpose of their embodiment on earth. However, now the human being was also answerable to God for his actions and thoughts. He had achieved a certain degree of maturity which enabled him to live in keeping with God's will and in view of this ability he now was also responsible how he used his life, since it was up to him to utilize all his gifts. However, he was informed of the consequences of his life during this incarnation on earth and thus he is able to make use of his free will."

Prehistoric People -1

BD No. 9022 of 07/22/1965 taken from book 94

God the Father is speaking: "You only need to turn to Me with an appeal to grant you an explanation and I will not hesitate to answer. You don't realize that the act of creation has taken infinitely long periods of time, for you judge by your present concepts to time, whereas the act of creation necessitated eternities, which is rationally impossible for you to understand. Hence you are right in your assumption that the pre-Adamites lived long before the human being, who was recognized as the true human being due to his self-awareness, intellect, and free will. Yet this does not exclude the fact that these human beings had no knowledge of prehistoric people, they knew of their existence but described them as having lived long before themselves. But this only happened after the fall into sin, when I sent beings of light from above amongst people which enlightened them as to their past process through all creations. Prior to this they had no knowledge of it at all, and thus no idea about these human-like beings because, wherever people were created, these beings had become extinct. *However, since the growth of*

human population advanced only slowly, in keeping with the matured original spirits, the process of creation continued over a very long time, and thus the earth was not inhabited by people everywhere at once, whereas the pre-Adamites only became extinct when the creation work 'Man' began to appear.

Pre-historic people therefore have never lived with human beings together at the same time, but the human being was created at different times since the conditions on earth, too, varied quite considerably and needed this diversity, because even the original spirits developed differently, which is not quite understandable to you humans yet. *It is not as if people were instantly created on earth, instead, everything took place such that one can speak of periodic creation, and every period brought forth such beings until the human being with self-awareness, intellect and free will appeared as the last work of creation.* If I now use the term 'at the same time', then I mean the same period of creation which, however, was so long that it cannot be expressed with numbers, but that these pre-historic beings preceded the real human being because no concept of time exists for Me and to Me a thousand years are like a day. *And the whole act of creation took so long that people can no longer determine the length of time, only the fact that everything developed, from matter to the mineral and plant world, through the animal kingdom up to the human being, but that I also always created a new external shape for the tiny particles of soul as they developed further.*

Hence, the expression 'they developed into the next being' only relates to spiritual development, yet every external shape was a new creation which always vanished again once it had completely fulfilled its purpose, on account of which so many beings disappeared again once human beings came into existence who were able to create and shape according to their will. Thus, *people did not live alongside pre-historic beings*, but that does not rule out that they didn't inhabit the earth at the same time, they just lived so far apart that they had no knowledge of them, because the time had not yet come for the human being to find the right living conditions, he needed in order to survive there. Just one thing has to be clarified, that the earth was not populated at the same time with fully responsible people; they came much later, whereas the pre-historic people still existed wherever the earth was not yet sufficiently developed. It is difficult to give you humans an idea as to how the whole work of creation took place, for you are neither able to imagine the length of time in which this work was completed nor the immense space that had to be populated by the small particles of soul of the fallen original spirits.

This required great diversity, which was entirely achieved by My thoughts, so that I saw everything as a minute work of creation before Me and it simultaneously arose as finished work, so that the creation took on ever larger forms wherein the soul particles were to mature, and it was teeming with creations of the most varied kinds, so that I placed every work of creation where possibilities to mature were given. And thus, the pre-historic beings were a creation which I placed wherever the future human race was sooner or later expected to take possession of the earth in order to bring its developing process to an end. But that the earth should exhibit the same conditions everywhere was not intended by My versatile creative will, and even today there are vast stretches of land where no human being can exist because he lacks the conditions to survive, for which I have

My reasons. Yet it is certain that the human being's external shape was a work of My love, that I created Man after My image and that his soul, too, shall one day become My image again which, however, was not the case with pre-historic people, they were unable to develop into the human being as he is at present, irrespective of whether he attains spiritual maturity or not."

Prehistoric People -2

BD No. 9023 of 07/23/1965 taken from book 94

God the Father is speaking: "And if you think that I let you believe something that is wrong you must always consider that you harbor intellectual misconceptions, since the intellect can easily interfere if your contact with Me is not firmly established, but also consider that I always endeavor to clarify even seemingly apparent discrepancies, for you shall be instructed according to truth. The slow development towards ascent often led people to believe that it was to be understood as a purely physical development, hence relating to the external form, however, only the spiritual development was meant by it, the ascent of the substances of soul within every individual work of creation.

And thus, My work of creation included countless external forms, which in groups can certainly be referred to as the same creations but which, even then, still consisted of infinitely many groups where one differed again from the other but always continued as the same species, thus there can be no question of higher development as such. However, as the substances of soul continued to mature, new external forms also arose time and again which only were concluded when the work of creation 'Man' came into being, who then had to fulfill the last task on earth: to spiritualize himself, to change himself into the living creation he had been in the beginning, in order to then be able to end his earthly path and return to Me from where he had originated.

The fact that all these pre-historic creations had to contribute towards this change was an exceedingly happy process for Me which sooner or later had to lead to success. Yet to inform a human being of this, who only has a limited intellectual capacity, is only possible to some degree, albeit in the state of light he can instantly comprehend all correlations and the purpose of every external form. But for earthly life it is enough if he receives sufficient light in order to roughly grasp the process of return so that he can also give his fellow human beings a faint idea about the meaning and purpose of creation. And then it depends on every individual person as to what extent he will delve into My eternal plan of Salvation, which only ever aims to achieve My living creations' happiness."

Development of Earth and Human Being

BD No. 6295 of 06/26/1955 taken from book 68

God the Father is speaking: "You can come to Me with complete truth and ask Me any question that moves you, for I will always answer it such that it will help you. However, you can only grasp a limited amount of knowledge, yet what I impart to you is sufficient in order to grant you an insight into My eternal plan of Salvation, it is also sufficient for you in order to explain it to and teach other people, and in order to reveal to you My love, wisdom and omnipotence. And I will add to this knowledge the more you progress yourselves, the more receptive you

become to My light and strength, for it is My aim that you shall become as perfect as you were in the very beginning, and this also involves profound realization, the comprehensive knowledge about My reign and activity, about My Nature and your goal.

It took an infinitely long time for you humans to advance from the abyss to the point which permits human existence. This infinitely long time until the development up to the human being had occurred was necessary because everything can only develop in lawful order, no phases of development can be left out at will, hence these phases of development had to take place in accordance with My eternal plan of Salvation and thus appropriate creations were also required for this development, which as 'pre-historic' has become a concept to you. Although the human need for research certainly attempts to calculate the duration of this pre-historic time yet only with very limited success, for the slow advancement of the spiritual substances, as well as the emergence of creation, which you are now able to behold as human beings, has taken eternities; they were infinitely long periods of time for which the word 'eternities' is certainly the right word. ***The concept of time, however, only began when the living creation 'Man' was called into being by Me, for prior to that the living beings were not rational enough as to enable them to think and reason independently, as to enable them to live consciously and to grasp the concepts of 'past - present and future'.***

Only the being endowed with common sense and free will can be called 'a human being', which was sufficiently capable of thinking in order to acquire a certain amount of realization and live accordingly. *Hence from this time onwards one can speak of the conscious development towards ascent, where the once fallen spirits were given the opportunity to return to Me for good. The creation of the first human being was the beginning of a period of Salvation where free will became the crucial factor and not My will, as was the case in pre-historic times, where everything took place under the law of compulsion which irrevocably had to result in higher development.* And now you wonder how long the 'human being' has populated the earth already, whereby you only ever mean the rational human being who is capable of making his own free decisions and as whose descendants you regard yourselves.

The first human being capable of accepting responsibility for his actions and thoughts was Adam, even though human-like beings already existed before Adam in all parts of the world who instinctively carried out much of which is assumed was human thinking but who nevertheless were impelled by spiritual intelligences, who thus served ascending spiritual substances as a shell and in the law of compulsion carried out what was needed for the development of the creation of Earth, to become a dwelling place for future human beings. They were human species whose instincts and compulsive impulses broke through incredibly strongly but who nevertheless could not be held responsible because they, too, contributed towards the fact that spiritual substances were constantly released and able to embody themselves anew, because everything just served to prepare an area for the human being which was suitable to pass their last test of will. These human-like beings were therefore physically already very akin to the form I had prepared for the human being Adam when the time for the fallen original spirits

had come to have their free will returned in order to then be able to liberate themselves from the form altogether. Time and again pre-historic creations released spiritual substances, and the development of what to a certain extent had advanced the whole emergence of earth in its bound state continued to progress, and thus the time eventually came for this spiritual substance to make a free decision.

And this was the beginning of the epoch of Salvation which is of significance for you because it enabled the being to use its free will and intellect and thus live a conscious life. However, the beginning of this epoch is so infinitely far in the past that you humans are unable to make any relevant calculations, yet due to My will the most important periods and their events remain known to you, and although you also divide them into well-ordered timespans, it is entirely irrelevant for your own development. Yet the endless number of fallen spirits necessitates an infinitely long time of higher development, therefore you are no longer capable of estimating the duration of the pre-historic time, just as the embodiment as a human being will have to take place on such a large scale that it will take eternities. It will not be possible for you humans to determine the beginning of this epoch scientifically, yet you will always believe otherwise, because it is in the human being's nature while he is still imperfect that he mentally limits everything that is in the past, but never wants to acknowledge that there is a limit for the time ahead of him, consequently he does not reject a beginning, but an end seems impossible to him. *The former, however, is irrelevant whereas the latter is so extremely important that the human being should direct his whole attention only to what lies ahead of him, that one period of Salvation will come to an end, as did so many before, but that My eternal plan of Salvation will remain, that there will never be an end as far as the act of Salvation is concerned, that an endless number of fallen spirits also require an infinitely long time for their return and that time and again I will give these spirits the opportunity to ascend from the deepest abyss to the light, to Me, from Whom they once came."*

Children of the world Vs. Children of the light

Ref: The Spiritual Sun-2" by Jakob Lorber Ch:15

*Jesus is speaking: "It is an all-time custom for all peoples to say, and here and there firmly believe that this or that is "their star." Literally, however, there would be little reason for it, but would be spiritually more accurate; for whence any spirit is from, from there he has also his love. **Now, however, all the myriads of stars are either pre- or post-dwellings of the spirits. If this is the case, it is also clear that every spirit of the earth is from a star as a predecessor; and this star is the first one to reliably emerge in the inner contemplation.***

Now you may look at the starry sky and look at the star appealing most to you; the one shining upon you most comfortably; that is where you lived. See, this will be the one on which you were awakened.

This is then also the difference between the children of the world, who are from below, and are children of the earth, and the children of light, which are from above, and are children of the suns, or children of light, and are called to serving one another like they would the Lord, and shine upon the children of the world,

that they might be made children of the light and true heirs of eternal life, which the Lord prepared for all His created spirits from all eternity. He has established for this purpose, in the infinite spheres of creation, an infinite number of schools for the achievement of the freedom of life and has even established upon this earth a holy goal through His cross, for them all to become true children of His love and most blessed heirs of His mercy and grace!

I mean, the fourth quarter is hopefully known to us. But if we have looked around the world a bit, we will be able to understand many secrets which you and all the world have not dreamed of too much.

But the Lord, after His resurrection, has still spoken much to us, His chosen ones, which was not recorded; and had it also been recorded, the world could not have understood the books, due to the measure, the greatness and the depth of the content. Here, however, many things will be made known to you; therefore, you may well be spiritually attentive to take hold in your spirit of the great mystery of life and the inner great wisdom of the Spirit! "(John 20:30, 31, Jn.21,25)"

John 14:15-18: If you love me, you will keep my commandments. And I will ask the Father, and he will give you another Advocate to be with you always, the Spirit of truth, which the world cannot accept, because it neither sees nor knows it. But you know it, because it remains with you, and will be in you.

The Soul's Process of Development before Embodiment

BD No. 6930 of 09/29/1957 taken from book 74 , **The Spiritual Sun** by Jakob Lorber Ch:22

God the Father is speaking: "You humans have passed through many forms, i.e., your real Self, your soul, had to go through a long process of development before it was allowed to incarnate in a human body. And this process of development was the path through all the works of creation. Dissolved into countless minute particles the soul had to animate each one of these works of creation and thus slowly mature, as soon as various particles had joined each other they had to constantly enter new forms, and all forms, the innumerable works of creation, contributed towards the maturing of these substances of soul until, finally, all particles were allowed to come together again and as a human soul enter and give life to the last form, the human body. Hence you all had to travel this path of development since due to your past fall into sin the separation from God became so great that the soul in its lifeless state, which was the result of its apostasy, would never have been able to overcome this vast distance from Him. It first had to be brought back to life. But life could not be granted to the beings which had become sinful; they had to acquire it through being of service. However, the being would never serve voluntarily because it would have been prevented from doing so by God's adversary, whom it had followed into the abyss.

But it wasn't meant to remain eternally subject to death, it was meant to be given the opportunity to attain life, and this 'opportunity' was the creation. God seized the fallen spirits from His adversary and made them serve Himself, He gave every work of creation its purpose according to natural law and made it fulfill this purpose in a state of compulsion.

As a result, it had to be of service and, if only after an infinitely long time, thereby acquired a weak life which nevertheless enabled it to become constantly more active. For every being having once emerged from God's love was His

emanated strength which wants to be active. However, the beings which had joined God's adversary rejected God's illumination of love, which is needed for living, thus for a being's activity, and therefore it fell into the state of death. And where it left to the being itself it would never be able to come alive again because its fall into the abyss made it completely helpless. For this reason, God called a work into existence which at first ruled out the being's will for activity, which subordinated itself entirely to His will and which, through 'natural law', carried out the purpose He had assigned to this work, to the whole of creation.

His plan consisted of slowly bringing back to life what was lifeless, of giving it the possibility to be active again. And thus, it was joined to the individual works of creation in tiny particles and through natural law obliged to get active again. *It was bound in these creations and unable to resist, it had to be of service, but thereby was also able to reach the degree of development which gained it ever more freedom and finally also placed the spiritual being into the state of free will, from where it then has to decide whether it wants to continue its ascent or return into the abyss once more; For God certainly helps the being to ascend but He does not compel it if it wants to descend.*"

We need to stop and consider the state of the spirit at this stage of development. Because of the extremely long journey through creation where each fallen spirit has to be of service in an effort to gain more freedom and to reach a state of free will he has also weaned himself from Satan but has also lost his knowledge of God and His love. It is at this point and before he can enter into a human being that God will give him a chance to better himself and to prepare him for human life. He does this by sending His angels that will provide the spirit the option to go with them to a sphere where he will be educated about God and His love, or he can go on his own and choose his own path.

Although comprehending God's correct educational path and if he chooses in the end to not want to know anything of these ways, but instead chooses the much shorter one on account of temporary advantages, deviating from the path well-mapped-out by God, entering upon the path of their very own self-destruction.

If he chooses to go with the angels, he will be taught everything about God and His love. When his spirit is matured in God's love, he will be given an opportunity to advance himself. This opportunity leads to the childhood of God, but it requires the spirit to make a very serious decision that must be made in God's love.

Jesus will now take us to the sphere (different from the sphere of the children of light) where this soul was educated and is preparing to take the step to advance himself which will lead to the childhood of God.

Jesus is speaking: "For what the heart is full of, the mouth overflows. And the Lord has put into every human heart the impulse, according to which he is never satisfied with what he has, but continually strives for something higher. This instinct, like all things, has two sides, a light, and a shadow side. In the shadow side, man is blind, and the higher he aspires to, is lower than what he has. But in the light side of this impulse, man abhors all that is given and desires only the Most High, namely, nothing more and nothing less than the Lord Himself.

And so, we shall at once hear how these spirits are not at all satisfied with what is theirs. They, therefore, have a continually greater desire for something more sublime, grander, and far more important. But we want to listen to them a little, in order to infer from them what desires are in their spirits.

Behold, there is a venerable old man standing before us, who will just this moment make a speech to the inhabitants of this palace on the occasion of the sacrificial wood being ignited by itself on the altar; for such a phenomenon is to the inhabitants of this world as a secret symbol, from which they deduce that the Lord wishes to fulfill their wishes. - And so, listen! He speaks:

All of you who inhabit this my home are witnesses that a holy flame has come upon the altar to consume the fragrant sacrifice. Many who live in this world do not pay attention to it, and only hold it to deception and illusion of the senses. We inhabitants of our house, however, are faithful to the ancient revelation, in which it is said that God, our Lord, is a single God, who has made this world for us to dwell, and has given us the free will, to either keep on living blissfully on this world in spirit, or to be lifted from this world into some other, where He is eternally at home among His children.

Whoever, therefore, has the great desire and longing to enter onto this way to this end, may now turn to the Lord, since He has turned His ear to us, so that the Lord may transform him, and put him into the world where He is at home among His children.

You know that the Lord, our only God, has created two kinds of beings who can freely determine themselves. The first kind is we creatures, endowed with free will and an understanding mind, in order that we may be self-employed to our joy and our great prosperity. But to these His creatures, the Lord has granted only this world, both spiritually and physically, as a dwelling-place.

To reach this pleasant destiny is very easy, for whoever believes that the Lord is the only God of heaven and all worlds, like the one we walk on with our feet, and with this in mind gives the Lord glory and honor through sacrifice and worship according to the known custom of this whole world, as far as we know it, has, as you all know, made himself worthy of this pleasant destiny. The transformation will take place, as we all know, in the most agreeable and soothing manner upon which every one of the inhabitants of this world is most fully entitled.

But if we consider the second kind of creatures, which, indeed, of whom there may be much less, we find in them, according to revelation, that they are not only creatures like us but true children of the one God. These children are in all the power of God, and their bliss is like the bliss of God; for they have all that God has, they do all that God does, and God does what they do.

To them, God is no longer a God, as He is for us eternally inaccessible, and no eye of this world can ever see Him; but to them He is a true Father, who is always among them, guides them, and leads them, and speaks to them as I am with you, and He takes care of them, build for them, and cook for them; for them to never have any concerns; they are perfect masters, like their Almighty Father, and rule over all of infinity, and rejoice in their infinite perfection of power, which is from their Father.

Such a destiny, indeed, is quite different from ours; indeed, it is really in no way comparable with our circumstances!

Are we, however, forever excluded from the creatures of this world to attain this unspeakable destiny? What does the revelation state, which we have received in the primeval times of a mighty spirit for all the ages of this world?

Such was spoken in short: 'An altar is built in your dwelling, and on this altar should always lie fragrant wood, lain over each other crosswise. Should any man recognize the one God in his faith, he may ask his heart, if it would burn; the flame of the heart shall ignite the wood on the altar and consume it with bright flames. In these flames, the ignited of heart shall read the great, holy, but very heavy conditions through which he can become a child of God.'

Now I say unto you, whosoever of you, my household and children, wants to read the conditions in the flame, come and read! If anyone has found the very heavy conditions acceptable, lay the hand upon the altar, according to the revelation, and God Almighty will take his spirit, lead him into that world where He dwells and will shape the Spirit into a new man, who will only have to drag along a mortal, painful body for a short time, and will have to humble himself to death in this body. And when he then is humbled through and through, then he will have to be painfully killed, in order to rise from death to a true child of God!

Now see, a man comes out from the midst of the whole great multitude and reads from the flame the following condition: 'Dissatisfied with your blessed fate! What do you want? Where do you want to go? –

Have you forgotten that due to your apostasy from God, due to your infinitely great distance from Him, your substance became increasingly harder the further away it fell. This has to be understood such that the spiritual strength from God, which induces ever increasing activity, was no longer able to touch your spiritual being because you resisted it yourself, and thus, your activity came to an end, your mobility, your life solidified, and what remained was utterly hardened substance, which originally was indeed God's emanated strength, yet it had become totally ineffective. At that moment God's love seized your completely solidified spirit again, which was no longer able to recognize itself and was no more than a cluster of God-opposing spiritual substances. His strength of love drove these substances apart and used them to let the most diverse works of creation arise. The countless worlds of the stars, all their inherent creations, are the result of this past apostasy in the kingdom of the spirits. They will still continue to exist for eternities; time and again new creations will arise in order to enable the once fallen spirits the opportunity to return to God.

If you remain in this world after the eternal order of God, you can never fall, be spoiled, and perish again. What your heart desires and feels, you have and will always have it.

But if you are not contented with it and want to go there where the children of God are begotten, know that God your Lord will test you through all sorts of great sufferings, sorrows, and tribulations until the last drops of life has been powerfully tested, before you would be transformed into a child through death! But woe unto thee, if thou hast not passed the test; then you will have to pay for the vanity of your striving forever in the wrath of God, and it will never be better with you, but always worse and more agonizing in your eternal state!

But in this world, where the children of God are begotten, you will be struck with the most perfect blindness, and nothing will remain in your consciousness of all that you experienced here to give you further conscious guidance; because you will be obliged to begin a whole new, painful and difficult life. Nothing will be left to you, but your greatest danger, the desires of the life of this world.

You will be yearning for all the similar perfections and glories, you will be distinctly aware of great faculties and abilities of the spirit; but you will not be able to amount to anything in your heavy, wearisome body. But if you will nevertheless find a means to put some of this remaining impulse what your spirit yearns after, even if imperfect, into practice in the world, then you will already sin before God; and if thou shalt not desist from it, then an everlasting condemnation into the everlasting wrath-fire of God will be your destiny.

What you have received from God here, is yours; there in that world, you will not be allowed to own a blade of grass. Wealth and magnificence belong here to virtue, but there it will be reckoned to you as a deadly vice. Here you may wish, and the ground obeys your command, but there you will have to laboriously prepare your food in the sweat of your face. '

***These are the conditions that you will have to fulfill if you would want to rise to higher realms of the childhood of God.** It is not impossible that you will find grace and mercy with God, if you will love Him above all things, and will be the least and lowest, and will suffer all sorrows and afflictions with great patience and full devotion to the will of God; but it will be much easier for you to fall than to stand firm. Therefore, consider, and then lay thy hand upon the altar, that it shall be according to thy will."*

The Decision of Free Will

BD No. 6930 of 09/29/1957 taken from book 74

Jesus is speaking: "This decision of free will therefore takes place during the final stage of development on this earth, when the soul is embodied as a human being and can use its free will again at its own discretion. Then the human being must recognize the great mercy of the former process of development and make conscious use of his earthly life, he must prove himself worthy and have the will that his final stage shall take him to the goal, he must strive whole-heartedly for his perfection and thus prove that he belongs to God; he must do whatever it takes so as not to fall again into the hands of the one from whom God's love had helped him become free throughout infinitely long times. He must not live carelessly during this short time but again and again only remember the spiritual goal which will release him from all constraints, which signifies the reunion with God in light and strength and happiness. And thus, you humans were given earthly life for the sake of liberating your soul from a bondage which was placed upon you by God's adversary since time immemorial, but which was its own fault and thus it will also have to remove its own share in order to gain its freedom and everlasting life."

The Human Being's Task on Earth - Childship to God

BD No. 5490 of 09/18/1952 taken from book 60

God the Father is speaking: "You humans are given a task on earth, but you do not consider this and do not feel accountable as to whether you make correct use of your life on earth, that is, whether you live according to God's will. But you only have a short time and once you have finished your life on earth, you will have no opportunity anymore to accomplish your set task. With immense effort you can certainly still ascend in the kingdom of the beyond, yet you will never be able to attain what you could easily have attained on earth, the childship to God, which makes you the most blissfully happy being in the spiritual kingdom. You can receive an excessive abundance of light on earth and, after physical death, enter the spiritual kingdom as beings of light; for God offers you such an extent of grace that you can lose all weakness and work full of strength, providing it is your will. Attaining the degree of light is not impossible for anyone, and the fact that it need not be difficult is Jesus Christ's gift of grace, who acquired it for the human race on the cross. Thus, anyone can request strength from Him, and every person calling upon Jesus Christ will irrevocably reach the goal. But which one of you humans lends his ear to the messengers of God when you are informed of this; which one of you humans strives consciously towards attaining childship to God on this earth? It only requires you to shape yourselves into love, for which the strength will be conveyed to you humans if you seriously want it and appeal to Jesus Christ for His support. Very little is expected of you humans, but an incredible amount is offered to you and, yet, only a few strive for this degree which results in a life of supreme beatitude. You should become children of God, desire the Father with all your love, you should adapt yourselves to His fundamental nature, that is, become love as well. However, your nature is still governed by too much selfish love, and this only considers earthly life but not life after death. You don't ask yourselves why you live on earth, you don't try to ascertain the reason, instead, you look at life as an end in itself when, in fact, it is merely the means to an end. For this reason, you let your time on earth pass by unused, you use your vitality wrongly, i.e. you only use it to attain earthly possessions which are transient. But you do not think of your life after death, of the soul's intransience and one day will have to pay a bitter price when you realize that you have irretrievably lost something that you could easily have won. However, God respects your will, He neither determines nor forces you, but He always warns and admonishes you. Through His servants on earth, He constantly informs you of the purpose for your existence, He sends messengers to cross your path who shall proclaim His will, He confronts you Himself in the form of suffering and adversities and shows you the fleeting nature of earthly things. He leaves no stone unturned in order to lead you into realization, yet He allows you to keep your freedom of choice. And precisely because of this you will have to justify yourselves to Him, for you would be able to reach your goal were you to use your will correctly."

Becoming God's 'Children' - Childship to God

BD No. 7907 of 06/02/1961 taken from book 82

God the Father is speaking: "At no time ever will I withdraw My love from you, even if you voluntarily stay away from Me, one day you will return to Me again because My love will not abandon you. And I will always also give you the evidence of My love, I will take care of and provide for you when you live on earth as human beings, because I want to gain your love which will unite you with Me again as in the beginning. Thus, you should never doubt My love. But your love determines the degree of your proximity to Me, it solely depends on your love whether and when the unification with Me will take place. And you demonstrate your love to Me by the degree of your neighborly love, which you should constantly increase if you want to become perfect. And that, in turn, necessitates that you completely relinquish your selfish love, that you strive to become engrossed in love for your neighbor, that you unselfishly help your neighbor. Then you will come ever closer to Me, for with every deed of love you draw Me to yourselves, you ascend with every deed of love and establish the bond with the Eternal Love. Then I can be in you Myself, My love will be able to permeate you as in the beginning, you will have become and will remain My children for all eternity.

And your purpose of earthly life is that you, who once came forth from Me as 'living creations', shape yourselves into 'children'. Since you took the path through the abyss and became completely devoid of love as a result of your past apostasy from Me, it is a difficult task to shape yourselves of your own free will into love again.

It requires a strong will which has to be put into action. The strength to do so repeatedly has to be acquired through love or requested from Me through heartfelt prayer. Hence it is not enough just to make declarations of love to Me, but it also requires deeds of love in order to receive this strength, but then it also results in a steady move towards Me.

As soon as a person voluntarily opens his heart in order to allow himself to be illuminated by the strength of My love his heart will be ever more willing to love, and one day he will achieve his objective: he will attain the childship to God as soon as his life is an uninterrupted activity of love in utter unselfishness.

But only few will achieve this degree of love on earth, because a person's own Self still comes first, because it requires great effort for the human being to give up all wishes and longings for the sake of the next person; since the soul has to purify itself completely during its earthly life, and this requires a high degree of love and frequently a considerable measure of suffering too, so that the soul is entirely purged when it departs from this earth. Then they will have matured into true children of God and have already found unification with Me on earth, they will have shaped themselves of their own free will into 'children', which I could not create for Myself. But anyone who seriously strives for this, who time and again in profound humility pleads for My blessing, who already feels like My child, will not slowdown in his endeavor and reach his goal.

But he has to be filled by love for Me, not by the desire for utmost beatitude, and his love for Me will then also constantly heighten the degree of neighborly love. However, he only demonstrates his love for Me through his

neighborly love. *I want to teach you all to become My children, and all of you should also feel as if you were My children, otherwise you won't establish the right kind of relationship with your Father of eternity, from Whose love you emerged. You just should not forget that you are on earth in order to become My children, and that you therefore constantly have to make an effort. But once you are My children then I can and will take you from earth, because then you will have achieved the goal for which I created everything, utmost perfection in free will.*

I repeatedly have to bring this difference home to you in order to motivate you into utmost striving, for as long as you walk across this earth My adversary also has an influence on you, and as long as My adversary can still influence you he will also know how to stop you from becoming completely engrossed in neighborly love, because as long as unspiritual substances are still in you, your body still has earthly longings, your selfish love has not yet been entirely conquered, and the human being still has to fight against these. But completely rising above them also ensures him a high degree of love, and then the unity with Me can take place, then the Father will draw His child to Him and will never ever leave it again."

Being a Child of God

Ref: MESSAGE OF ST. MICHAEL THE ARCHANGEL TO HIS BELOVED LUZ DE MARIA DECEMBER 27, 2018

St Michael the Archangel is speaking: "Beloved children of God: Every human being should rejoice at being a child of God and honor Him as God deserves, serve Him and worship Him, knowing that God does not need man, but loves man.

WE ARE THE SERVANTS OF GOD AND WITH INFINITE ADORATION OUR JOY ATTAINS ITS CULMINATION IN LIVING THE WILL OF GOD, AND THIS WILL DIRECTS US TO SERVE MAN, but within this service we are not allowed to act against man's free will, because man is free and within freedom he must choose salvation by his own merit; That salvation in which a great part of Humanity rejects, because of having become dehumanized is scorning its essence as children of God and taking as its own a collective mentality where thoughts and desires are alien to it. The man of this generation has immersed himself in modernistic thought where there is no room for God.

Therefore, Our King and Our Queen constantly call you to look inside each one of yourselves, but you do it superficially because you have not come to understand that to see yourselves within, you do not have to look at your brother, but at yourselves:

You cannot compare yourselves with your fellow man but look at yourselves. You cannot value the works or acts of others because it is personal truth dwells in each person, not that of others.

HENCE THE FAILURE OF THOSE WHO WISH TO GROW IN THE SPIRIT BY LOOKING AT THEIR BROTHERS AND SISTERS, HIDING THEMSELVES BEHIND THEIR BROTHER IN ORDER TO HIDE THEIR ERRORS. Therefore, man does not rise up, he does not aspire beyond what is earthly, he does not long for greater



closeness to the Divine; it is only, yes only by facing the enemies of inner truth that man will be able to see his own reality.

WHEN MAN ACCEPTS THAT ALL STRENGTH COMES FROM GOD (Cf. Ps 37,39, Hab 3,19), THEN PERSONAL CHANGE WILL BEGIN.

People of God: look, meditate and be aware of what is around you - the Universe with the elements is maintained for the service of man, and WHAT HAVE YOU DONE WITH IT? YOU HAVE DESTROYED, CONTAMINATED, TRANSFORMED IT FOR EVIL, YOU HAVE DISOBEYED SEEKING THAT WHICH YOU CONSIDER TO BE HAPPINESS.

Men have created frontiers for thought by limiting themselves, taking possession of knowledge that is not their property.

Children of God: you, at this instant, must share the love that comes from the Divine Will in order to create the force to counteract the demonic wave experienced among Humanity, anticipating the pain to which the Church will be subjected.

You know full well that love prevents evil: it is a wall that holds it back; love is reflected in the actions of creatures that do not cause harm to any brother or sister and seek the common good (cf. I Cor 13,4-8ff).

You must be those who forge love in the likeness of Our Queen...You must be disciples and missionaries at the same time, like Our Queen, who from the Annunciation to her Assumption into the Heavens, through Her Faithfulness and Her Motherhood, reached Eternity.

THE PEOPLE OF GOD WALK TOWARDS THE FEAST OF OUR QUEEN AND MOTHER OF HUMANITY AND BEFORE THIS SOLEMNITY ITS GLORIES ARE SUNG IN HEAVEN. FOR THIS MEN OF GOOD WILL SHALL UNITE ON THE 29TH, 30TH, AND 31ST OF DECEMBER AT 6PM IN EVERY COUNTRY, WITH THE PRAYING OF THE "ANGELUS" (*), OFFERED FOR THE NEEDS OF HUMANITY.

When the Cross is despised, you must love it more ... Satan suffers enormous torments when he sees the Cross: for that reason, he has ordered it to be taken out of every place. What the devil forgets is that Christians carry the Cross in their hearts, in their souls, where evil and its followers cannot erase it.

Children of the Most Holy Trinity, the future of Humanity must be fought with love. Our Celestial Armies remain attentive to the work and action of Humanity, and therefore to the events in the natural order which Humanity will face.

Pray children of God, in the Mediterranean there will be subsidence in the seabed. Pray children of God, the South Pacific shakes. Pray children of God, the volcano Etna is changing its activity. Pray children of God, in Turkey many innocents suffer persecution for being faithful to Our King. Pray children of God, pray for Nevada in the United States, it will be flooded by water.

It is not human predictions that the children of God are reading, but I have been sent to warn you out of Mercy, since the one who loves God knows that from His Love emanates knowledge so that man takes it, and so that, with the knowledge of the events that are approaching, man understands that whoever loves does not fear.

Children of the Most High, I shelter you, you are protected by your Guardian Angels, whom you must not forget.

HOW MANY HERODS THERE ARE! ... LOOK AT YOURSELVES, EXAMINE YOURSELVES, IT IS NOT ONLY THE ONE WHO USES A WEAPON WHO KILLS.

Humanity is seething with a total lack of love, and the children of God must not sleep, but respond within the love to which the Most Holy Trinity has called them.

Evil has become entrenched within Humanity and claims souls for itself; you must remain faithful to God and not allow yourselves to be confused. The Angel of Peace, Envoy of God, will arrive to protect man; the children of God will never be abandoned by God.

I bless your acts and your works." St Michael the Archangel

Do 'non-fallen' Spirits attain Childship to God?

BD No. 8793a of 03/29/1964 book 92, BD No. 8793b of 03/30/1964 book 92

God the father is speaking: "You will receive an answer to every question in order to disprove every misguided point of view, so that you will not remain ignorant when you desire the correct information: The deification of My created beings is the goal I set Myself with My Creation and which I will certainly achieve one day. Everything that came forth from Me was supremely perfect, the beings I externalized as independent beings were like Me, they were images of Myself. Nevertheless, they were only ever My creations, which were unable to be any different than I had created them. They were My living creations. But I wanted to have children next to Me. For this reason, I released them from My will when they were to prove their will as to whether they would retain their perfection despite the option of turning it in the opposite direction. This passed test of will also subsequently presume that the being was subject to all temptations which it had to resist, for all strength requires the resistance upon which it can prove itself. Understand this correctly: each being was confronted by temptation because it possessed free will which was able to choose either direction. Thus, the first being, Lucifer, the bearer of light, which My greater than great love had externalized, was the first which was supposed to provide Me with the proof that it wanted to keep the supreme perfection it was granted. It was so exceptionally permeated by My strength of love that it reveled in absolute bliss and thus used the constantly inflowing strength for the creation of equal beings because, in its perfection, it was able to be just as creatively active as I Am. And this process of creating beings lasted for eternities, they were therefore always 'living creations' which could not possibly be anything but supremely perfect. Then I expected My first-created being, Lucifer, merely to acknowledge Me Myself as the source of strength, thus I expected of him to present Me to his created beings as the One from Whom he himself had also emerged. But since he had free will, it was also possible for him to ignore My will, which he did by presenting himself to the beings as the highest being, because they were unable to behold Me but he was visible to them in all his glory. Thus, he did not pass the test of will and confronted the created beings as a tempter. He tried to influence their will to likewise be in opposition to Me: And he was very successful. For many of these beings, despite their abundance of light, despite utmost realization, acknowledged him as the Lord of eternity and renounced Me, precisely because I was not visible to them. And these apostatized beings, having fallen into the deepest abyss of their own choice, must first reach

higher spheres again, they must try to deify themselves of their own free will, which is indeed possible with My help. Once they have reached this goal, they will have become God's children, perfect beings, who aspired to and achieved this perfection themselves.

But a large proportion of originally created spirits also remained loyal to Me, they resisted all temptations by Lucifer; thus, they passed their test of will when they had to decide whom they should choose as their Lord. So, what is their situation in regard to the childship to God? You must know that these beings enjoy utmost bliss, for they did not forfeit their perfection and are constantly permeated by My strength of love, which makes them incredibly happy. But on account of their perfection, they are also knowledgeable; they know My plan of Salvation, the wretchedness of the fallen original spirits is evident to them, and their love is so great that they also take part in the work of redemption in order to advance the return of the once fallen spirits. This redemptive work, however, requires eternities, which you humans are incapable of estimating. And time and again the original spirits in the stage of a human being are in need of active help, for although they shelter the divine spark of love within themselves which enables their return, they are so weak that they require assistance. This is granted to them by those beings of light which embody themselves on earth for this very purpose and therefore also take the path through the abyss where they are subjected to all temptations and consciously pass their test of will, which lets them become a child so that it can create and work completely freely next to Me and not only work according to My will, even though these non-fallen spirits are also granted unlimited bliss. It is the immense number of fallen beings which requires eternities until the goal is reached. Consequently, there are also endless opportunities for the beings of light, having remained faithful to Me, to achieve the childship to God through overcoming the abyss they voluntarily enter for the salvation of the original's spirits, and this signifies constantly higher levels of beatitude for the original spirit which once remained faithful to Me. For no limitation exists for Me, and thus I can and will make My children happy to an inconceivable degree. A countless number of original spirits have already offered to take the path across earth, who mainly had the salvation of their fallen brothers at heart; hence they did not embody themselves on earth for selfish reasons, they did not walk through the abyss for the sake of the 'childship to God' but nevertheless attained this childship to God and returned to Me as My children. The only advantage the beings which remained faithful to Me have over their fallen brothers is the fact they will never need to take the path through the creations of earth and that they will never fail in earthly life either, that they must certainly resist all temptations but that they will always have much strength at their disposal, because love is within them, and they will not relinquish it during their life on earth.

However, the people in whom such original spirits are embodied are unaware of it and often have to travel very difficult earthly paths. They fight and serve and reach their goal with certainty, the complete unification with Me on earth which, although it was not interrupted, must nevertheless be sincerely aspired to by every person, because it is and will remain the goal, because the right decision of will of every being is to profess Me freely. Nevertheless, you humans should not believe that these beings which remained with Me can be

called less happy, for their will is already so inclined that their love for Me is exceedingly powerful and constantly growing, and I reward this loyalty to Me accordingly, but neither will I deny them the bliss which is guaranteed to them through the childship to God. The whole sequence of events from the very beginning and for all eternity happens in lawful order. I cannot proceed contrary to My eternal order. Once I have designed a plan it will be carried out because My will is irrevocable.

The beings which were once emanated by Me carried My will as long as they were connected to Me with a heartfelt bond of love, as long as I was able to permeate them with My love and thus no other will but My own was able to be in them, that is, their will and thoughts concurred with My will and thoughts. And yet the beings had free will, precisely because they were created by Me and were profoundly perfect beings that had the same will as Me in them without having been under duress. Hence, they had free will from the start, but it was not different from Mine. And this similarity of will lasted for eternities, since it was not possible to disturb this similarity of their will with Mine as long as these beings were permeated by My flow of love. Only when Lucifer, the first-created original spirit, used his faculty of thought wrongly, when he no longer accepted My Word flowing to him with a craving for love and thereby slightly weakened the flow of My strength of love, did the free will in him begin to express itself without being prevented by Me, and only when he began to reject My strength of love increasingly stronger was it possible to speak of an expression of his free will which, until then, had completely concurred with My will despite it being free. At that time My first-created image had to make a free decision, because I only expected the test of will of him when his will started to deviate from Mine because he rejected the flow of My love's strength. And the same happened with all beings which our mutual strength of love created, which then again were prompted by Lucifer to express their will, which was free and likewise concurred with Mine for as long as they received My flow of love unimpeded. They, too, began to misuse their thinking ability and associate more with Lucifer's will, and I did not prevent their free will for I wanted them to openly test their will as to with whom they wanted to stay. Thus, free will only became active when the beings closed themselves to My love, because before this their will, despite being free, completely concurred with the One from Whom they emerged.

The being therefore only proved its freedom of will when it rebelled against Me, since prior to that its great love prevented it from willfully opposing Me, for love will always share the same will as Mine. It has to be said that every living creation is undeniably in possession of free will as a divine attribute because it was in My image, but it had not used this free will for eternities because it was completely as one with Me and continuously stayed within the circuit of My flow of love, which meant that it did not leave the eternal order. Only Lucifer's change of thinking led to a change of his will, and I gave free reign to both his wrong thoughts as well as his wrong will, which, after an infinitely long time, affected his created beings increasingly more, and thus the will divided and 'free will' openly manifested itself. Therefore, when it is said that the beings were unable to want differently than was My will, then it required the state in the beginning when they only accepted My will because of their exceedingly great love for Me and as a

consequence of My overwhelmingly powerful emanation of love. A different will than My own was not possible in this state, nevertheless, in the beginning the beings were not subject to a state of coercion, instead I only externalized each being as proof of supreme perfection. However, the fact that Lucifer and a large proportion of his followers had fallen and experienced immense wretchedness, made becoming a child of God possible. It is just that the being had to go through the deepest abyss and wage such an immense battle on its path of return to Me that it thereby acquired the right of a child, whereas the non-fallen beings enjoy uninterrupted heavenly bliss and yet are not excluded from equally striving for and attaining the childship to God; all the same, I truly know what I bestow upon My living creations and which paths they must take in order to reach the highest goal. Nevertheless, it is always the unification with Me which leads to their greatest bliss, and I Am so close to My children that they are able to feel Me and yet so far away that they will constantly strive towards Me and time and again may receive My illumination of love as evidence of My presence."

Body, Soul and Spirit

BD No. 4757 of 10/09/1949 taken from book 54 also (Galatians 5:1, 13-18)

God the Father is speaking: "People cannot understand the relationship between body, soul and spirit, which makes it difficult to explain to them the working of the spirit. The spirit is in opposition to the body, whereas the soul finds itself between both, thus it effectively has to side with either the body or the spirit, but it can never pay attention to both. In the beginning of embodiment as a human being the soul is totally attached to the body. Hence it endeavors to fulfill the body's every desire, that is to say thought, feeling and will, the human soul, are wholly focused on the body which, still consisting of matter itself, also seeks to unite with matter. Thus, the person will long for material possessions because they epitomize the body's satisfaction. Therefore, the spirit will not come into its own, the soul ignores the spirit's demands, the spirit cannot find acceptance because the body is still stronger and completely occupies the soul, thus dominating its thoughts and aspirations. However, the soul can also recognize the worthlessness of earthly things, it can consider its bodily wishes to be unimportant, it can demand more of earthly life than mere material goods, then the spirit comes into its own. Then it will express itself and be listened to by the soul. The soul will start to move in a different direction, it will no longer ask for the body but strive for spiritual values. It will accept being taught, that is, it shall willingly accept what the spirit conveys. Indeed, it will feel happy and pay consistently less attention to the body, or it will try to incline the body to do what the spirit demands of the soul, to renounce earthly matter in exchange for spiritual knowledge. Now the spirit will be victorious over the body. Both spirit and body try to win the soul for themselves. And as soon as the spirit has succeeded in displacing the desires of the body, it is the stronger.

But what is meant by spirit? The spirit is the Divine in the human being; it is that which identifies the human being as God's living creation, the spirit is the bond which connects the human being to the eternal Father-Spirit. It is the human



being's realization that he will always be in contact with the Father of eternity. The human being only recognizes himself as God's living creation when the spirit becomes active, until then he will merely be conscious of himself as a living being who wants whatever life has to offer. But once the human being recognizes himself, the world will no longer mean anything to him. Then he will search for higher values, then his thoughts will be directed towards the spiritual kingdom, then he will try to make contact with the One Who gave him life, then his thoughts will be right and his wishes and actions in accordance with divine will. Then the spirit of God will be working within the person. The soul subsequently will give itself to the spirit to be guided and taught so that body, soul and spirit unite at last and seek unity with God, because the human being's spirit constantly strives towards the Father-Spirit to whom he is, and remains, inseparably joined for eternity."

Food – body and soul

BD 8041 16.11.1961

God the Father is speaking: "I want to enlighten your spirit if you ask Me for it: The soul's actual task during its life on earth is to attain full maturity, for at the beginning of its earthly existence its substances are still more or less immature. It still has to tackle many instincts which it brought along from its previous embodiments and will always have the opportunity during its earthly life to master them, providing its will is good and directed towards Me. Nevertheless, it is passing through the satanic realm, which means that it has to wage a constant battle which lasts as long as it lives on earth. Time and again it will come into contact with spiritually immature substances, which it also consumes in the form of food in order to keep the body fit, and these substances must be spiritualized by the soul too, that is, it has to try to bring everything into the right order. Hence these spiritual substances will join the body; they serve the growth and preservation of that which was given to the soul as an external cover, in which the soul itself should attain full maturity. The spirits, the substances contained in food, are therefore of service and thereby slowly ascend as well, irrespective of whether they come from the plant or animal kingdom. The nourishment needed by the body as sustenance is spiritual substance in the process of maturity too, which has achieved various degrees of development. The body can also consume something unhealthy, that is, nourishment which still contains too many immature spiritual substances, which then might not only bother the body but also the soul and manifest itself in the form of diseases. However, a strong soul is able to put these immature substances in order, but it must already have achieved a high degree of spiritual maturity to be able to exert a redeeming influence on the still immature spiritual substance. The correct preparation of food can therefore promote faster maturing by eliminating virulent spiritual substances before it comes into contact with the human body. For all spiritual substances still constrained in creation have a low degree of maturity but they can be redeemed faster if they willingly serve the human being. Then their path can be shortened, which is the case when the body submits to the soul's will, when the body does not prevent a soul's conscious striving towards attaining perfection and when these spiritual substances also support the soul by subordinating themselves to the body and thus let themselves

become spiritualized too. But this only happens if the food the body consumes is pure, healthy and beneficial for the body's continuation. For once the soul succeeds in making the body compliant by submitting itself to the soul's will, the body's spiritualization will soon take place, providing the soul has united itself with the spirit within itself, thus consciously strives towards spiritual perfection.

If, however, the soul has no bond at all with its spirit then it will allow itself to be determined by its body i.e., all unspiritual substances of its external cover will strongly predominate and control the soul. In that case, its thoughts and intentions will only aim to increase its physical well-being and then a high intake of food and drink will also prevent its spiritual development. The body will consume an excess of unspiritual substances which pull body and soul down, for then everything of a satanic nature will push itself into the forefront and find no resistance, thus endangering higher development if not preventing it altogether. And once again it follows that the *prayer for blessing of all nourishment is the best means to avoid this danger*. I can and will transform everything that is detrimental for your soul if only you always think of Me before you eat your food, which will always contain more or less immature spiritual substances, because everything passing through the works of creation is still earth-bound whatever degree of development it may have achieved. Your will to attain perfection on earth is valued by Me, and a prayer for blessing everything you consume always proves your will to Me and I shall always comply with it. However, that which serves the maintenance and growth of the body fulfils its actual task of service, and in this way, you must always look at the consumption of food. The fact that certain moderation has to be observed, that you must not merely satisfy your physical cravings, speaks for itself, for then you will avoid the danger of your body being harassed by harmful spiritual substances. You don't need any special clarification as to which foods are useful and which are detrimental to you, for your will to live in My eternal order will also give you the right feeling in the choice of your meals, and each one can be of use to you, just as each one can harm you if you don't keep to the right amount or if base cravings incite you into satisfying them. For you must know that only your free will determines to what extent you resist the temptations of the adversary, of your soul's enemy. And he will always make use of everything that can become a danger to you. He will arouse cravings in you, he will use the body to influence your soul and put it under pressure wherever it is possible for him.

He himself is incapable of forcing you, just as he has no direct influence on the spiritual substance which is still bound in matter; but he can incline your will towards him if you accept the thoughts he transmits to you through cravings and you comply with them yourselves, by either satisfying these craving or by being careless in the choice as well as the amount of your food or even consciously sin against My order which you, however, know full well and can also observe with good will. Hence in a sense you contribute towards the redemption of immature substances within matter by consuming the right amount of food and drink, because the maturing process of these small spiritual particles involves their being of service, and as soon as you enable them to 'serve' you are helping them to mature. I Myself assigned this serving function or duty of service to every work of creation, and if the human being himself lives within divine order he will never

prevent the spirits' higher development, in whatever form they are still bound. For I also created the human being with all his needs, and it is up to him to always observe moderation and to make use of that which I assigned to him in love and wisdom. And anyone who does not consciously want to sin will also make use of all creations I designated for him, on whatever spiritual level they may be, according to My intended order. And in unity with Me he will always appeal for My blessing and then also contribute towards the fact that his body's still immature spiritual substances as well as those the body consumes for its upkeep will be guided into the right order, that they will mature during earthly life according to My will."

Development and Relationship between Body, Soul and Spirit

Ref: "Gifts from Heaven" As revealed to Jacob Lorber (1800 - 1864) Translated by L & A (17 June 1840) - excerpts

Jesus is speaking: "This is the full answer on the greatest and most important question I gave you Monday, of which the greatness and importance will only become shiningly clear to you.

It is important, for the sake of the answer to be properly understood, that the being of man and his nature and spiritual sphere be explained to you, for without this foreknowledge it would be futile to preach while all is directed only toward the spirit, but not yet alive is in you – yet it is still about to become alive in the love, the mother of the spirit. I intently gave this first question to you in order to first stimulate your spirit. In this question rests the life of the spirit, it's rebirth and only then, the eternal life in absolute freedom.

You see, man is composed of a natural body, serving as container, out of which a living soul can develop – for during coming to existence in procreation, only the being of the body is constructed. Only in the seventh week, when the bodily being is only organically formed – but not yet complete according to form, but according to all parts formed by the vegetative life of the mother, a small bubble is opened up in the region of the stomach which has its origin from the procreator. It is invisible to your eyes, and it houses the substance of the soul, which is transported throughout the whole of the being by means of the connections of the nerves. This soul-substance then convert the magnetic fluid – which is present in all nerves – to its own and presses then into all the remaining organs with full electric speed. Last of all, it reaches the heart muscles only after seven days, in some a bit later.

The heart then slowly begins to expand because of the gradual infilling of the soul substance and when it in time filled up just like an electric bottle (capacitor), it discharges into the veins through the upper chamber. This discharged fluid is then transferred to all fluids present, forcing them into all containers as well as out of the containers itself to move again into the veins and again back to the heart, in which time the heart already are being filled again, to once again send out the fluids that returned.

As such the pulse and circulation of the fluids and blood will develop from this a bit later on. Through this means of continuous traffic and exchanging of fluids – and indeed of the blood – the mass of the body is built. Through the substance contained in the finer fluids is electromagnetically formed the solidity of

the soul. When the stomach is completely formed and able to receive coarser fluids – first from the body of the mother as support for the fluids - and the blood, also used for this purpose, then the human is loosed from the feeding tubes in the body of the mother and is born into the outer world, equipped with five natural, external senses to be able to perceive the visible world in terms of the different substances as of light, sound, taste, smell and general feeling. Each of these have the purpose of developing the soul and to let her grow according to her needs in the body. This process takes several progressive years. Now the human exists as two in one, namely first a material and inside, a substantial human.

Now, give keen attention: about three days before the birth is formed from the most noble, yet most solid substances of the soul, in the region of the heart, another infinitely fine bubble and in this bubble a spirit is placed, who, once in the past became evil, but is in it's being a spark of the Godly love. Irrespectively of the gender of the body, the spirit is genderless, yet it absorbs gender in time, expressing it's wishes.

Yet, this spirit is currently still dead like it was in matter already for very, very long. Since the soul is an immeasurable, substantial being – simple and as such indestructible – and receives her food through the already well developed senses of the body, as follows: According to the hearing, the reason. According to the sight: the mind. According to the taste, the feeling of impressions received through sound and light. According to smell, the perception of good and evil. According to the general feeling [friction, pressure, temperature], the realization of the natural life in her, brought about by the continuous evolution of fluids and the absorbed substances from it, enabling the soul to think –where the thought processes in fact being affected by the circulation of the finest substances in her corresponding organs in the body.

Just like the circulation of fluids in the body at first formed the being of the soul by means of the influx of substances from the outer world, likewise, should and will, by means of the circulation of the finest substances in the organs of the soul, the encased spirit be fed for as long as until he himself ripens enough to break through the bubble and then permeate all the organs of the soul. Just like the soul in the body, likewise the spirit become a proper third man through feeding received from the thoughts of the soul. The process is as follows:

The spirit has, just like the body and the soul, corresponding organs. According to hearing and reason: receptiveness or perception. According to the light and mind: the will. According to taste and feeling of impressions received from sound and light: the ability to absorb all worldly things in corresponding forms. According to the smell and perception of good and evil: the insight to discern truth and falsehood. According, ultimately, the general feeling and recognition of natural life: the love, flowing from it all.

Just like food for the body is served through all the senses, the same is true for the soul and ultimately also for the spirit. If the food is in general bad, everything becomes bad and as such unacceptable. But, if the food be in general good, everything becomes ultimately good and acceptable. This is the truthful relationships of existence between body, soul, and spirit. Now the question arises: what is bad and what is good food?

Look, everything worldly is bad, for it leads the spirit back to the world – from whence I wrestled it from its dungeon of nightly darkness of matter and have placed it in the heart of the soul, in order to be enlivened and purified of all sensual, natural and material worldly attitude in order to ultimately become qualified to absorb life from Me. If it should be fed only bad food, it again becomes worldly minded, sensual and finally materially dead, just like it was before birth – just like the soul with the body, because it became completely flesh.

But if the soul would receive good food – consisting of My revealed will and the mediation of the works of salvation – or ***My love in full substances through the living faith, a new spiritual bubble is formed in the heart of the spirit, where a pure spark of My love is deposited.*** (This is the Divine spark that is attached to the spirit so that it can find its way back to the Creator where it came from) Then, just like with the previous generation of the soul and from that the spirit, it happens with this new generation of the holy place. If it should come to full ripeness, this holy love will tear the bonds of this container and will flow like the blood of the body or like the most noble substances of the soul, or like the love of the spirit, over into all organs of the spirit – this condition being called the new rebirth, just like the condition of this life bubble, is called the insertion birth.

At the same time, though, already at the time of conception, hell implants a great number of bubbles in the region of the stomach and the sex organs, especially if the act of conception was performed out of purely animalistic gratification. These get freed/born [from their bubbles] at the same time as My love. Like caterpillars in Spring with the heat of the sun, this brood emerges with the ascending heat of My godly love in the spirit of man.

*See, **this is then the origin of temptation**, since every one of these hatched beings from hell continuously tries to, wherever possible, interfere with the life of the soul. If man then does not intentionally and powerfully resist these beasts with the newborn love from God, they pour with overpowering force into all organs of the soul and get stuck like polyps at the places where the spirit is supposed to pour into the soul and hence prevent the soul to assimilate life of the spirit and thus the life of the godly love. When the spirit see that it cannot expand itself to be able to absorb the fullness of the new life from God in himself, he retracts into his dumb bubble – and much more so My love in him, which is the God in man.*

When this happened in man, he again becomes bound to nature and very sensual and as such lost, because he does not know what happened inside of him – for these vermin have, quite unseen and pleasantly, bribed the senses of man and gradually took him captive completely until he cannot at all wants to know, hear, see, taste, smell or feel anything coming from the spirit. This then is great woe, comparable to nothing which ever existed since the beginning up until now – and never again will be. *But when man would take his refuge in God by praying out loud, especially My prayer, by fasting and reading of the Word from Scripture, he will develop a great longing to be freed from this great misery.*

If man has taken this seriously, seeing himself in great doubt, then I begin to work from the outside as the conqueror of all death and all hell, by My works of salvation and I then give man out of My compassion cross and suffering according to My wisdom. Through this the world and its joys becomes such bitterness unto man that he develops pure abhorrence for it and begins to develop a longing to be

freed from this life of suffering. See, because these vermin then through this receive no more food for the soul from the sinful world, they become weak and wither almost completely in the organs of the soul and ultimately falls into unconsciousness.

Since the outer soul-saving compassionate love of Jesus Christ at this stage begins to pour into the sickly organs of the body as well as the soul, it illuminates the organs and makes the soul – being the admonishing consciousness – aware of the great number of vermin of sin. *The soul then takes a fright, demonstrated through a heaviness in the heart and an inner contraction of the chest in the region of the stomach and man then ask in this humble contriteness, empowered by true repentance, for God in crucified love, for mercy and compassion. And look, then she again perceives the spirit and again begins to stir in the bubble in which it withdrew.*

Then, by the compassionate love of God, the laws of Moses are strongly brought into man's memory through earnest admonition – from the first to the last – and is charged with the strict adherence thereto. This brings man to self-humiliation and self-denial in his deepest inner being, for the same reason a washer woman would press her linen through the narrowly set rollers, for to press even the smallest bits of dirt out to be washed down with the flowing water – and this process is repeated for as many times as there are still visible impurities in the water. Only then it is placed in the rays of the sun to remove the last drops of dirt through evaporation, in order for it to be blown away by clean winds to all directions and destroy it.

*Thus is the laws of Moses from God according to its number, **ten**, which is a number of God and it shows that man first should believe who I am, when he fell into misery, that then he can have the highest regard for Me – yes, even believe that he is guilty – that he should choose from the seven days the appointed Sabbath and hallow it in the rest as the true day of rest of the Lord, for him to learn to deny himself and look deeper and deeper into himself – to recognize his inhabitants and then turn to Me, that I can destroy them by the above mentioned means and expel them from the organs of his soul.*

If he would humble himself, till deeply below My great power and might, it again comes down to the washing of the linen and is to be understood as the strict adherence to the still remaining seven commandments, by which he humbles himself far below his equals and have to take captive all of his evil desires and have to break all of his own will and desires, to even make the softest of his desires subject to My will, then I will come with love and warm the residence of his love, like a hen her chicks. Look, then the spirit, who already began to stir, is once again birthed by the warmth of the godly love and will soon flow over into all parts of the purified soul and it eagerly soaks up the compassionate love working from the outside from the purified organs of the soul, becoming mightier and mightier.

When the love of My compassion penetrated to the depths of his heart, where still rests the peculiar bubble of the godly primordial love, then this pure godly bubble hatches anew – this bubble that had locked into it the great holy place of the love of the eternally holy Father – touched by the love of the Son who now lovingly cleansed the soul – flows over, intimately united with the soul in great clarity, similar to a big rising sun, into the spirit and thus also into the soul

and through her, also into the completely deceased flesh. As such man becomes alive through and through and this re-enlivening is the resurrection of the flesh.

When everything is permeated by the Father, the Son of the Father is taken up in heaven, this is the heart of the Father, but the Son takes up the spirit of man and the spirit the soul and the soul the body, the to you already known nerve spirit, for the rest are only excrement thereof.

When now the Father, this is the love of the Father, becomes predominant in man, then it becomes light in man, since the Wisdom of the Father was never separated from His Love. Then man also becomes full of love, full of wisdom and might and by this now completely reborn in all life and wisdom. Look what trouble, endurance and patience it always asks of Me to barely save one out of thousands and how often is My effort with such a person denied, despised, cursed and trampled underfoot – and look, still I never cease to call you: Come to Me, all who are weary and heavy laden, and I will give you rest!

It is difficult to preach unto the deaf and the blind since they themselves are fully buried in the miseries of the world and by this they defiled the earth, which is their flesh, with the cursed filth of the stinking hell of which the stench is truly a pestilence of the soul, forcing Me to oftentimes let rain the rain of deluge from heaven – which is to be understood: the bitter works of salvation. If this earth is then again cleansed of the cursed-stained soul and when the puddles and marshes is once again dried by the winds of mercy, only then there is again a possibility to preach to you the ways of life out of Me.

Since I am now already preaching to you for quite a time, follow My voice and return to the fold of My lambs, that I can lead you, being the only good Shepherd on the pasture of life – then you can give unto Me wool as white as snow of which I can prepare a garment for you, which you can adorn into all of eternity.

See now even more the sequel to this my answered message and look:

When a brother has a little orchard and he sees that the trees thereof are a lot of strange growths, he will think by himself: what am I to do? If I would remove them from the soil, my garden would be empty and if I should put others in their place, they would ultimately also be just wild growth and possibly not even as strong as those already existing. I will cleanse these properly of all the malignant worms in their nests. I want and will then at the right time search for noble branches from noble trees and graft them onto it. So will these strange growths – still being fresh and strong in the core – quickly be restored with help from above and they surely will one day produce lots of good, sweet, and noble fruits. Look at this clever farmer, what he did and wisely thought – he will harvest within a few years, a joyful harvest.

Look, your parents all are such farmers on who's bodily soul by means of careless whorish ways, with all fornication of Sodom and Babel, many strange growths of hell have grown. Therefore, you have to, with double effort, remove these growths of all the thousands of vermin. This means that you have to pay detailed attention to all the wishes and desires which has their origin from these indwelling hellish creatures. Destroy them by the true means I have already clearly shown to you and then regularly trim, from the very beginning, all the useless side-branches of those branches which, although looking good, is depriving the

life of the trunk with their weakening self-will. Then you will soon have a healthy and powerful trunk. When then the time of my in-grafting shall come – consisting of the revelation and in-grafting of My highest Love-motivated laws of Moses, then you can with certainty await the adding of My powerful help, that those strange growths which were taken care of and properly cleansed. My will shall take a powerful hold on them and when their self-will is completely removed from them, they will in a very short time produce an abundance of the most beautiful and wondrous fruit of all kinds. If you would diligently water them with the water of life to let their tips soon grow into heaven, blessedly broadening their spiritual view and soaking up even more light of grace which abundantly, steadily flows from the sun of grace and originated from the deed of salvation, offering whole of creation in its warmth and light the ultimate rebirth unto eternal life.

But this is the salvation: that you recognize the holy Father and the Life who – reconciling and hallowing the whole world – bled on the cross even for criminals through the last piercing of the heart of eternal Life, opened up the holy gates to light and eternal life. Just like one man became seeing and alive in faith and love, likewise can all become seeing and alive in the faith which is the true substance of salvation – in order for the bubble of the eternal Love to be impregnated by the rays of the sun of grace and that you again can be permeated by the old Love of the Father by the works of the Son in all power and might, out of the Holy Spirit out of both, in the pure love of your reborn hearts.

Regarding the meaning of the principle of the deed of My salvation, I tell you this:

- **Firstly**, it is the greatest deed of the eternal Life, since I, the Highest, became in the fullness of My Love and in the complete fullness of My Godhead a man – yes, even a brother unto all of you. I took the full weight of the sins of the world upon My shoulders and in this way cleansed the earth of the old curse of the untouchable holiness of God.
- **Secondly**, it is the subjection of hell under the power of My Love, which before was only under the power of the anger of the Godhead and as such was separated from the influence of My Love which is the most terrible weapon against hell – since she is the complete opposite of it – and by which hell is driven away into infinity through the thoughtful and loving mentioning of My Name.
- **Thirdly** it is the opening of the gates of heaven and the eternal life and the faithful signpost thereto. For it atones you – not only with the holiness of God, but it shows you how you have to humble yourselves before the world if you want to be exalted by God. It furthermore shows you to carry all mocking, suffering and cross out of love for Me and your brothers, with all patience, meekness and surrender of your will. Yes, it teaches you to carry your friends on the hands and to bless your enemies with the godly Love in your hearts.

Since this world is nothing but the pure outer form of the hell, and the earth, which is again blessed with salvation and by this means would once again become the carrier of hell, have the world exalted himself above the earth and lives in high buildings in the glamour of selfishness, self-deceit, self-love, love for

glamour, sensuality, riches, stinginess, usury and general, self-serving lust for power. To not let the earth again be stained with shame, she is washed and hallowed by the blood of eternal Life. Whenever the serpent wants to get rid of his excrement by means of war or trade, robbery, fornication, whoring, denial of God or adultery – natural or spiritually, the saving deluge of the crucified Love immediately becomes active by means of activating men and seers of God, who again have to remove the decay of the serpent from the earth after they visited it and threw it into the barns of the great ones of the world. The worldly heart then admires such a treasure, but My children have to suffer a short while because the earth becomes infertile for a short time. When they then flee to the foot of My cross and hear My voice speaking of the new life through the mouth or the pen of My seers and then water the earth with water from the well of Jacob, then the earth quickly become blessed again and again bears fruit of the most noble kind. This fruit is then again, the part of the great work of salvation, performed at the cross.

Lastly I have to add for you, the parents, the following Fatherly advice: *do not let your sons get married – even if they would be self-sufficient according to the world whether in trade or possessions – if they are not yet at least halfway born again, in order for their wives to be sanctified through them, to bring forth into the world blessed fruit, who would soon be able themselves to easily become the blessing of heaven of great generation, by which you will establish a great reign like that of Abraham, in the heavens – which would multiply your joy eternally because of the increasing glories proceeding from your blessed seed.*

Give your daughters to My sons who approach you in My Love and acknowledge Me in this world and let themselves be drawn and guided by My Love, who daily hear My voice and directed their eyes to My heart. Then you will make Me the blessed Father-in-law of your daughters. And I tell you, since you have made Me a closest family member, you can easily think for yourselves that I will not let my in-law family go to ruin. When I say that they will live in My house and will eat at My table and will have daily abundance of joy with exceedingly beautiful grandchildren of My beloved Sons and their blessed daughters; and when they will be guided by the hand of the Father into all kingdoms and will see great glories – only then will they understand what it means to have Me as Father-in-law!!!

Look, this is a complete answer. It is not educated, but is much more, from the source of eternal Love and Wisdom of your holy, good Father, eternally faithful in all truths given like a great beam of light, beaming from a great sun on a high morning, giving you all-penetrating light – when you will have - gradually – completely absorbed it into your still unenlightened hearts. You will feel it even more if you would compare it with your own weak answers and surely learn from it how much you still lack and how deeply you already have penetrated into yourselves.

Yet, I say unto you, the answers are deeper than your hearts, for I have adapted it for the better ones of you and have placed it undetected into your hearts. You will only find the sign of truth of My answer if you would find a deeper meaning to your answer, rather than to add something to soften it. But this will be

a sure sign for you to show how deep I have penetrated into you and how shallow you have penetrated into Me.

Therefore, come to Me, all who are cast down and heavily laden, for I want to refresh you and perfect you with My grace. Amen. I, the eternal Love and Wisdom, Amen, Amen, Amen."

Chapter 3: God's Plan for Man



Process of Mans Development on Earth, What is Man? Man the Adoptive Son of God, God's Plan for Man, Childship to God, Different Kinds of Creations correspond to the Beings' fall, The Human Being's Task on Earth, Becoming God's Children, Do 'non-fallen' Spirits attain Childship to God? The Earthly Path of Angel-beings, Expediency of Creation, Who was Embodied in Adam, God Breathed a Living Soul into Adam, Hypostatic union with Christ, The Divine Spark – Calling upon the Holy Spirit, The Audible Word, Inner Reflection, The Soul's union with the Spirit

. . .

God Creates Man: Genesis 1:26



Then God said: "Let us make man in our image, after our likeness. Let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, the birds of the air, and the cattle, and over all the wild animals and all the creatures that crawl on the ground." God created man in His image, in the divine image He created him; male and female He created them.

God blessed them, saying: "Be fertile and multiply; fill the earth and subdue it. Have dominion over the fish of the sea, the birds of the air, and all the living things that move on the earth." God also said: "See, I give you every seed-bearing plant all over the earth and every tree that has seed-bearing fruit on it to be your food; and to all the animals of the land, all the birds of the air, and all the living creatures that crawl on the ground, I give all the green plants for food." And so it happened. God looked at everything he had made, and he found it very good. Evening came, and morning followed-the sixth day.

Process of Mans Development on Earth

BD No. 7800 of 01/21/1961 taken from book 82

God the Father is speaking: "When earth came into existence, countless spiritual substances were able to embody themselves in its works of creation and gradually ascended during their evolutionary process, because the creations corresponded to the spiritual substances' inherent resistance, which was still unbroken but of different intensity. The works of creation were more or less hard matter, because even earth itself gradually evolved into a work of creation which was to shelter people one day; the spiritual essence which had already covered the process of development to the point when all substances of a fallen original spirit had gathered once again and regained their self-awareness and free will.



But an infinitely long time had passed before the spiritual substance could reach this stage because earth needed this time in order to produce all the creations required by the spirit for its higher development. And the human being should know that he has already spent infinite periods of time on this earth, that the stage of human being is the conclusion of an evolutionary process which his will can now bring to an end. He should also know that one day this infinite path

will be shown to him in retrospect, but that this memory has to be removed from him as a human being, since his task as a human being concerns his voluntary return to God. However, when he contemplates the countless wonders of divine creations surrounding him, he should seriously ask himself what purpose they have to fulfill, and then he will receive clarification in his heart. He will feel it, if the knowledge is not yet made accessible to him. And he should try to grasp the Creator's fundamental nature, i.e. request clarification about his relationship to Him. And this, too, will be given to him, since the goal of earthly life rests in the person re-establishing his relationship with God, which he once voluntarily had severed. *For that was the 'fall of the spirits', they had separated from God of their own free will. And thus, during the last stage of their return to God, they have to voluntarily restore their relationship with Him again and the purpose of their earthly progress will be fulfilled.*

The fact that creation has largely contributed in returning the fallen being again can only be understood by you humans when you have achieved this return, because you would never have been able to reach the ascent if the divine Creator had not taken you away from His adversary's power who had caused your fall into the abyss, if He had not removed you from his influence during the infinitely long time when you were integrated in the works of creation as tiniest particles of soul. His adversary had no control over you during this time; nevertheless, you still belonged to him because you once followed him of your own accord into the abyss. But since you were completely without strength and light as a result of your apostasy from God, your path of return to God would have been impossible for you. For this reason, God Himself provided you with this path of return through His works of creation which, in supreme wisdom and infinite love, were shaped to give the spiritual substance the opportunity of service in some form or other and thus, through service, reach ever higher levels of maturity. *The spiritual particles which once belonged to an original spirit gathered again and having achieved a certain level of maturity, commenced their last transformation. For a brief period of time, they were allowed to live on earth as a human being and had to be of service again, but of their own free will and with love. The purpose of earthly life for every soul embodied in a human being is to liberate itself from every cover by way of loving service, to return to the spiritual kingdom again, when its earthly life has ended, as the free spiritual being it had been in the beginning.*

However, it cannot achieve this spiritualization without help because it is burdened by the original sin which repeatedly pushes it down again i.e. during its earthly life God's adversary has the right to exercise his influence again, since the spirits once followed him voluntarily. And the fallen original spirit, the human being, would succumb to his influence once more were it not for the offer of guaranteed help: redemption through Jesus Christ, in Whom God embodied Himself to redeem the guilt of sin for all fallen spirits through His sacrificial death on the cross. *This help by Jesus Christ, the complete redemption and forgiveness of his sin, is assured to him providing he wants it himself, providing he acknowledges Jesus Christ and His act of Salvation, and he acknowledges Jesus as God Himself, Whom the original spirit once denied acknowledgment.*

And thus, you humans are given a brief explanation concerning the cause and significance of the act of Salvation. You have to know this in order to fulfill the

purpose of your earthly life, in order to understand the divine plan of Salvation too, which only ever aims to guide the spirit essence back to God and which will be carried out with love and wisdom, since He has every power at His command to one day achieve the goal He had set Himself when He created all spiritual beings.”

Jeremiah 1:4-5, 17-19: The word of the Lord came to me, saying: Before I formed you in the womb I knew you, before you were born, I dedicated you, a prophet to the nations I appointed you.

What is Man?

MV - Epistle of St. Paul to the Romans: 135 -141

Man, in whom the three kingdoms of the sensible Creation are represented in synthesis, was made on the sixth day, and in a marvelous truth, his creation by God through the spiritual soul infused by God into the matter of man.

Man: true link of conjunction between Earth and Heaven, the true point of union between the spiritual and material world, the being in whom matter is the tabernacle for the spirit, the being in whom the spirit animates matter not only for the limited mortal life, but for the immortal life after the final resurrection.



Man: the marvel of the power of God who infuses His breath, a part of His Infinite Self, into the dust by elevating it to the power of man, and gives to him the Grace which elevates the power of the man-animal to the power of life and to the condition of a supernatural creature, to a child of God through participation by nature, by making him capable of placing himself in direct relationship with God, by availing him to understand the Incomprehensible One and by making it possible and permissible for him to love He who is so superior over every other being that, without His divine gift, man could not, through his own ability and venerable respect, even only desire to love.

Man: the created triangle that rests its base – matter – upon the Earth from which he was drawn; who, with his intellectual faculties, tends to ascend to the knowledge of He whom he resembles; and touches with his peak – the spirit of the spirit, the elect part of the soul - Heaven, by losing himself in the contemplation of God-Love while Grace, freely received, unites him to God, and love, lit by the union with God deifies him; For ‘the one who loves is born of God’ and it is a privilege of children to participate in the likeness of His nature. To the soul deified by Grace, therefore, man is the image of God, and because of love made possible through Grace, he is like God.

On the sixth day, man was therefore created, complete and perfect in his every material and spiritual part, made according to the Thought of God, according to the order (the end) for which he had been created; to love and serve His Lord during his human lifetime, to know Him in His Truth, and to therefore enjoy Him forever in the other.



Man: the creature in whom the Spirit Maker shines and dwells.

Thus, the one Man was created, the one from whom all of humanity would come, and the Woman in the first place, the companion of the Man and for the man with whom he would have populated the Earth by reigning above all other lower creatures. Thus, the one man was created, the one who, as a father would have transmitted to his descendants everything that he had received: life, senses, material goods, as well as immunity to every suffering, reason, intellect, knowledge, integrity, immortality, and finally, the gift of gifts, Grace.

The theory of the origin of man according to evolutionism, which is based on the conformation of the skeleton and on the diversity of the colors of skin and appearance in order to sustain its erroneous assertion, is not a theory against the truth of the origin of man – creature created by God – but in its favor. Because what reveals the existence of a Creator is exactly the diversity of the colors, of the structures, of the species of the creatures wanted by Him the most Powerful One.

And if this is valid for the lower creatures, it is valid even more so for the creature-man; he who is man created by God even if due to circumstances of climate and of life, and even due to corruption – and so came the flood and then, much later, in the prescriptions of Sinai and in the Mosaic curses, so severe the command and punishment (Leviticus 18:23 and Deut. 27:21) he shows a different aspect and color from race to race.

It is a proven fact, ratified and confirmed by continual proofs that a strong impression can act upon an expectant mother in a way of making her give life to a little "freak" who mirrors in its makeup the object which disturbed the mother. It is also a proven thing that the long co-existence amongst peoples of a different race than the Arian produces, through a natural mimesis, a transformation more or less marked of the traits of an Arian face in those people who are not Arians. It is also proven that special environmental and climatic conditions have an influence on the development of the limbs and on the colors of the skin.

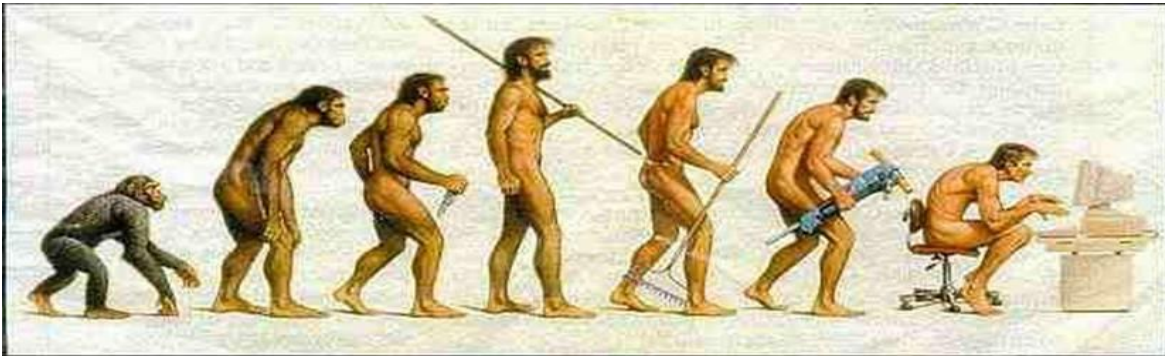
Therefore, the clouds on which the evolutionists would like to base the edifice of their presumption do not sustain it, but actually favor its collapse.

There perished in the flood of the corrupt branches of humanity groping in the darkness consequent to the fall, darkness in which only for the few just ones, as through heavy fogs, there reached once again a sole ray of the lost star, the memory of God and His promise.

Therefore, once the monsters were destroyed, Humanity was preserved and multiplied again from the lineage of Noah, judged just by God. Thus, it was returned to the first nature of the first man, still made of matter and spirit, and

remained so even after sin had stripped the spirit of divine Grace and of its innocence.

When and how was man to receive the soul if he was the end product of an evolution of brutes? Is one to suppose that the brutes received the spiritual soul together with animal life? The immortal soul! The intelligent soul! The free soul! Just the thought of it is blasphemous. How then could they pass on what they did not have? And could God have offended Himself by infusing the spiritual soul, His divine breath, into an animal, which had evolved for as long as one wishes to think, but nevertheless having come from a long procreation of brutes? Even this thought is offensive to the Lord.



When and how was man to receive the soul if he was the end product of an evolution of brutes?

By wanting to create a population of children in order to spread the love of which He super abounds and to receive the love of which He is thirsty; God created man directly, with His perfect will, in a sole operation occurring on the sixth creative day in which He made a living and perfect flesh from dust. Flesh that He then animated on account of his particular condition as man, the adoptive child of God, and heir of Heaven. And not yet only of the soul 'which even animals have in their nostrils and which ceases with the death of the animal, but of the spiritual soul, which is immortal, that survives beyond the death of the body and which will re-animate the body beyond death, at the sounding of the trumpets of the Last Judgment and of the Triumph of the incarnate Word, Jesus Christ, so that the two natures, which lived together on Earth, live together either by enjoying or suffering, according to what they both merited together, for eternity.'

This is the truth, whether you accept or reject it. However, notwithstanding that many of you want to obstinately reject it, a moment will arrive in which you will know it perfectly, and it will engrave itself into your spirit, making you convinced of having lost the Good forever for having wanted to follow pride and lies.

The truth is that whoever does not accept the creation of man, as a work of God – and creation just as I have said, that is, in such a way by making him quickly and always capable, if he wants, of guiding himself in all his actions so that they may all be turned to the reaching of the end for which man was created; the immediate end: to love and serve God during his earthly life; and the final end: to enjoy Him in Heaven – cannot understand with precision exactly what constitutes the Sin, the reason for the condemnation, the consequences of these two.

However, follow me. My word is luminous and simple because I am God. And God, Infinite Wisdom, knows how to adapt Himself to the ignorance and relativity of His little ones, because I love the little ones, provided they are humble, and I say to them, whoever is a little one, come to Me, and I will teach you Wisdom."

Man the Adoptive Son of God - Summary

Ref: PMG-5:928, PMG-1:681, MV N1945-1950:324, 325, MV Vol. 1:27-30

"From the oceans of wonders, which is the throne of God, the bosom of God, God draws the most beautiful gem, and it is the light preceding the most perfect gem, that is, the creation of man, in whom there is not a jewel of God, but God Himself, breathing over the dust to make living flesh and His heir to the heavenly Paradise where He awaits the just, His children, that He may rejoice in them and they in Him.



God, infinitely perfect and blessed in Himself: in a plan of sheer goodness, freely created man to make him share in His own blessed life. For this reason, at every time and in every place, God draws close to man. He calls man to seek Him, to know Him, to love Him, with all his strength.

Man is a creature endowed with reason composed of soul and body. The noblest part of man because it is a spiritual substance endowed with intellect and will, capable of knowing God and possessing Him eternally. Man was created by God to know, love, and serve Him.

Genesis 2:7 says, 'And the Lord formed man from the mud of the earth and breathed the breath of life into life, and man became a living creature.' And Genesis 1:27 says, 'God created man in his image.' The Catechism confirms, 'Man was created in the image and likeness of God.'

And how? Perhaps in his face? In the shape of his body? God does not have a body or a face. To become man He had to take on our shape, for He had no bodily shape of His own. God is a most perfect Spirit – simple, eternal, with no beginning or end. The Catechism thus teaches that 'man is said to have been created in the image and likeness of God, for the human soul is spiritual and endowed with reason, free in its working, capable of knowing and loving God and of enjoying Him eternally – perfections which in man reflect a ray of the infinite greatness of the Lord.'

God, then, created man as composed of two substances, one called the body – initially created with mud and subsequently procreated with the flesh and blood of man – and one called the soul, which, uniquely created in each case, only once and for one flesh, descends to unite itself to the flesh forming in a womb. Without the soul man would be an animal creature guided by instinct and natural gifts. Without the body man would be a spiritual creature with the supernatural gifts of intelligence, will, and grace, like the angels."

On the sixth day, man was therefore created, complete and perfect in his every material and spiritual part, made according to the Thought of God, according to the order (the end) for which he had been created; to love and serve

His Lord during his human lifetime, to know Him in His Truth, and to therefore enjoy Him forever in the other.

Thus, the one Man was created, the one from whom all of humanity would come, and the Woman in the first place, the companion of the Man and for the man with whom he would have populated the Earth by reigning above all other lower creatures. Thus, the one man was created, the one who, as a father would have transmitted to his descendants everything that he had received: life, senses, material goods, as well as immunity to every suffering, reason, intellect, knowledge, integrity, immortality, and finally, the gift of gifts, Grace.

Man is the sovereign whom God created to be the king of creation and He created him in His image and likeness, giving him His likeness according to the spirit, and His image by drawing his perfect image from His perfect thought. Look at the air, at the earth, at the seas. Can you see an animal or a plant, however beautiful it may be, which is equal to man? Animals run, eat, drink, sleep, procreate, work, sing, fly, creep, climb. But they do not speak. Man can also run and jump and is so agile in jumping as to emulate birds; he can swim and is so fast that he swims like a fish; he can creep and look like a reptile; he climbs like a monkey; he can sing like a bird. He can procreate and reproduce. And, besides, he can speak.

Do not say: 'Every animal has its language.' True, one moos, another bleats, another brays, another chirps, another warbles, but the last bull will bellow exactly the same as the first one, and so sheep will bleat until the end of the world, and donkeys will always bray like the first one, and sparrows will always chirp, whilst the lark and the nightingale will sing their songs: the former to the sun, the latter to a starry night, also on the last day of the world, exactly as they greeted the first sun and the first night. Man, instead, having not only a voice and a tongue, but also a nervous system, the center of which is the brain, the seat of intelligence, is capable of perceiving new sensations, meditating on them and giving them names. Adam called dog his friend and gave the name of lion to the animal that seems most like it because of its mane round its short bearded face. He called sheep to the lamb that greeted him mildly and gave the name of bird to the beautiful flower of feathers that flies like a butterfly but sings a sweet song that a butterfly cannot sing. And later, throughout centuries, the children of Adam created new names, as and when they 'became acquainted' with the works of God in His creatures, or through the divine spark which is in man, they not only procreated children, but they also created things which were useful or harmful to their children, according to whether they were with God or against God. *God avenges His children tortured by man's wickedness.*

God desired to put a king in the universe that He had created out of nothing. A king, who by the nature of matter should be the first amongst all the creatures created with matter and endowed with matter. A king, who by nature of the spirit should be little less than divine, united to Grace as he was in his first innocent day. But the Supreme Mind, to Whom all the most remote events in centuries are known, incessantly seeks what *was*, *is*, and *will be*: and while It contemplates the past, and observes the present, It penetrates deeply with Its foresight into the most distant future and knows in every detail how the last man will die. Without confusion or discontinuity, the Supreme Mind has always known that the king

created to be demigod at Its side in Heaven, heir of the Father, would arrive adult in His Kingdom, after living in the house of His mother - the earth, with which He was made - during His childhood, as child of the Eternal Father for His day on Earth. The Supreme Mind has always known that man would have committed against himself the crime of killing Grace in himself and the theft of robbing himself of Heaven.

Man is the true link of conjunction between Earth and Heaven, the true point of union between the spiritual and material world, the being in whom matter is the tabernacle for the spirit, and the being in whom the spirit animates matter not only for the limited mortal life, but for the immortal life after the final resurrection.

Infinite Self, into the dust by elevating it to the power of man, and gives to him the Grace which elevates the power of the man-animal to the power of life and to the condition of a supernatural creature, to a child of God through participation by nature, by making him capable of placing himself in direct relationship with God, by availing him to understand the Incomprehensible One and by making it possible and permissible for him to love He who is so superior over every other being that, without His divine gift, man could not, through his own ability and venerable respect, even only desire to love.

Man, the created triangle that rests its base, matter, upon the Earth from which he was drawn, who, with his intellectual faculties, tends to ascend to the knowledge of He whom he resembles and touches with his peak, the spirit of the spirit, the elect part of the soul. Heaven, by losing himself in the contemplation of God-Love while Grace, freely received, unites him to God, and love, lit by the union with God deifies him. For 'the one who loves is born of God,' and it is a privilege of children to participate in the likeness of His nature; to the soul deified (revere as a god) by Grace, therefore, man is the image of God, and because of love made possible through Grace, he is like God."

God's Plan for Man

MV Vol. 1:27-30

"God desired to put a king in the universe that He had created out of nothing. A king, who by the nature of matter should be the first amongst all the creatures created with matter and endowed with matter. A king, who by nature of the spirit should be little less than divine, united to Grace as he was in his first innocent day. But the Supreme Mind, to Whom all the most remote events in centuries are known, incessantly seeks what *was*, *is*, and *will be*: and while It contemplates the past, and observes the present, It penetrates deeply with Its foresight into the most distant future and knows in every detail how the last man will die. Without confusion or discontinuity, the Supreme Mind has always known that the king created to be demigod at Its side in Heaven, heir of the Father, would arrive adult in His Kingdom, after living in the house of His mother - the earth, with which He was made - during His childhood, as child of the Eternal Father for His day on Earth. The Supreme Mind has always known that man would have committed against himself the crime of killing Grace in himself and the theft of robbing himself of Heaven.

Why then did He create him? Certainly, many asked themselves why. Would you have preferred not to exist? Does this day not deserve, in itself, to be lived, although so poor and bare, and rendered harsh by your wickedness, so that you may know and admire the infinite Beauty that the hand of God has sown in the universe?

From whom would He have created the stars and planets that fly like thunderbolts and arrows, furrowing the vault of Heaven, or dash majestically in their rush of meteors, and yet seems slow, presenting you with light and seasons, eternally immutable and yet always mutable. They give you a new page to read on the sky, every evening, every month, every year, as if they wished to say: 'Forget your restriction, forsake your printed matter which is full of obscure, putrid, dirty, poisonous, false, swearing, corrupting material and rise, at least with your eyes, to the unlimited freedom of the firmament, make your souls bright looking at so clear a sky. Build up a supply of light to take to your dark prison. Read the word that we write singing our



sidereal (relating to, or concerned with the stars or constellations) chorus, which is more harmonious than the one drawn from a cathedral organ. The word that we write while shining, the word that we write while loving, bears in mind Him Who gave us the joy of existing. And we love Him for giving us our existence, our brightness, our movement, our freedom, our beauty in the midst of the gentle azure, beyond which we can see and even more sublime blue: Paradise. And we fulfill the second part of His commandment of love, by loving you, our universal neighbors, loving you by giving you guidance and light, warmth and beauty. Read the word we say, the one on which we modulate our singing, our brightness, our smile: God!'

For whom would He have made the blue sea, the mirror of the sky, the way to the land, the smile of waters, the voice of waves? The sea itself is a word that with the rustling of silk, with the smiles and happy girls, with the signs of old people who remember and weep, with the clamor of violence, with clashes and roars always speaks and says: 'God.' The sea is for you, as the sky and the stars are. And with the sea, the lakes and rivers, the ponds and streams, the pure springs, all of which served to nourish you, to quench your thirst, to clean you: and they serve you serving their Creator, without submerging you, as you deserve.

For whom would He have created the countless families of plants and flowers that look like butterflies, like gems and motionless birds, and the families of fruits that are like jewels or jewel cases and are a carpet on your feet and the trees that form shelters for your heads, a welcome relaxation and joy to your minds, your limbs, your sight and smell?

For whom would He have made the minerals in the bowels of the earth and the salt dissolved in cold and boiling springs, the iodine and the bromines unless one should enjoy them, one who was not God, but the son of God? One: man.

The joy of God lacking nothing: God had no need. He is sufficient in Himself. He has only to contemplate Himself to rejoice, to nourish Himself, to live to rest. The whole creation has not increased by one atom His infinite joy, beauty, life, power. He made everything for the creature that he wanted to place as king in the work made by Him: that creature is man.

It is worthwhile living to see such a work of God and to be grateful to His power that gives you the opportunity. And you must be grateful to be alive. You should have been grateful even if you had to wait till Doomsday to be redeemed, because you have been prevaricators, proud, lascivious and murderers in your First Parents and you are still so individually. Yet God allows you to enjoy the beauty of the universe, the goodness of the universe: and He treats you as if you were good children, who are taught and granted everything so that their lives might be happier and more pleasant. What you know, you know by the light of God. What you discover, you discover through the guidance of God in Goodness. Other knowledge and discoveries that bear the mark of evil come from the Supreme Evil: Satan."

Different kinds of Creations correspond to the Beings' fall.

BD No. 8405 of 02/07/1963 taken from book 88

God the Father is speaking: "*You inhabitants of earth are destined to become children of God*, and therefore you have to overcome the lowest depths in order to be able to reach the highest heights. You will only understand this when you know that the beings' apostasy was quite different in as much as their resistance to Me was not equally strong either, so that, as a result of your maker's will, you were also quite differently natured yourselves, which only relates to your degree of resistance, when you were supposed to make your free decision for Me or for My adversary. You all were permeated by the light of realization, and yet you turned away from Me and joined My adversary, because you were able to see him in all his beauty, whereas I was invisible to you. Nevertheless, you knew that you had originated from Me. Hence your resistance was more or less strong with the result that you were also assigned to different creations where you were likewise meant to take the path of return to Me, only the conditions differed from those which the inhabitants of earth had to comply with.

Earth is the work of creation which essentially makes the greatest demands on the fallen being in order to ascend again, whereas other stars offer their inhabitants easier possibilities, nevertheless, the ultimate goal, the childship to God, can only be attained on earth, even though the beings on other stars are granted unimaginable beatitudes after they have concluded their higher development and their will has subsequently been directed correctly.

*But in order to attain the **childship to God** the path across earth has to be travelled, and this can also be covered by a soul, if it so wishes, which has entered the spiritual kingdom from other heavenly bodies and which has reached the specific degree of maturity so that it can be granted a life on earth for the purpose of a mission.* Then they (such souls) are already enlightened, yet they are not 'non-fallen' beings but beings from other stars, whose distance to Me has not been so great, so that they relinquished their resistance to Me sooner and endeavored to reach Me again. And as soon as they are enlightened again, they also realize the

significance of the creation work Earth, and many souls also desire to attain the degree of childship to God and thus accept the extremely difficult conditions because their love for Me and for humanity impels them to do redeeming work.

And thus souls, which do not achieve the degree of maturity during their earthly life, will similarly be able to continue their development in the beyond, and corresponding to their degree of maturity they will be assigned to schoolhouses where they can steadily ascend. For creations everywhere are prepared for souls of all degrees of maturity, and since all creations are arranged differently and offer different living conditions they can already signify a state of joy for the souls having been transferred to them, for they are far more beautifully shaped than earth, since the creations therein delight the souls and inspire them to greater spiritual endeavors, for they so obviously testify of My love and might and wisdom, that it also intensifies these beings' love for Me. For when the apostasy of the beings took place an incredibly long time ago, which you would already consider an eternity, all beings indeed turned away from Me, but a countless number also separated from My adversary again soon after their apostasy, they did not follow him into the deepest abyss but left the large host.

And My will did the same unto them as it did unto those who had fallen furthest away: From the strength which had been emanated by Me as a being It formed different kinds of heavenly bodies than earth, and the process through these works of creation was far easier and continued faster for the fallen spirits, so that the beings returned to Me sooner, since Jesus' act of Salvation was accomplished for these beings as well and it was possible to redeem their original sin, depending on each individual being's attitude towards its God and Creator, Whom they also recognized in Jesus. For they, too, received the knowledge of the act of Salvation through messengers of light who worked amongst them, whom I assigned as teachers to all beings so that they will find and take the path to Me.

Consequently, there are untold possibilities for the still imperfect soul departing from earth to mature spiritually, and My love and wisdom truly recognizes the most beneficial opportunity to achieve maturity for every single soul. And thus, all creations in the universe are populated by spiritual beings in the most diverse degrees of maturity, and they offer unparalleled kinds of bliss and splendors to those who have already achieved a higher degree of light, yet they will always, even for less mature beings, exhibit better and easier living conditions than earth. For this truly is the most wretched work of creation, which requires a lot of effort and makes great demands on the fallen being, up to the human being, but which can lead to the most glorious fate: the childship to God, which makes up for all hardship a thousand-fold and turns the being into the most blessed child which will be able to create and work with Me throughout the whole of eternity.

To what extent the creations in the universe are of a spiritual or still material consistency will only be recognized by you humans when you have attained a particular degree of maturity or light, but this much is certain, they all serve the once fallen spiritual beings as an abode and thus are also shaped in accordance with their state of maturity. Hence you should consider all heavenly bodies as schoolhouses which I established Myself in order to one day bestow upon My living creations the bliss again, which they once had voluntarily forfeited and which they will also have to voluntarily acquire again."

Note: In the next teaching, our Lord will give us an example of a soul from another spiritual kingdom who wants to become a child of God but is very reluctant because of the requirements and the seriousness of its journey.

The Earthly Path of Angel-beings

BD No. 6858 of 06/26/1957 taken from book 73

God the Father is speaking: "Being allowed to live on earth is also the wish of non-fallen beings, which indeed live in unimaginable happiness but were unable to reach the highest perfection of childship to God, which necessitates the path across earth. ***These beings' wish will be granted, and they will travel their path under extremely difficult circumstances in life on earth, but generally will attain the final goal, although as human beings they don't know their origin.*** They are, however, very frequently and severely tempted, and their earthly life, too, is particularly difficult and sorrowful, yet since their souls came from above, they are far more willing to love and therefore also recognize the purpose of their earthly life very quickly, thus steadfastly following their goal despite their externally difficult circumstances, ill-health and all kinds of adversity. **Attaining childship to God is the highest goal for the beings in the spiritual realm which, however, can only be accomplished by overcoming the abyss.** Consequently, such beings will predominantly embody themselves particularly in times of people's spiritually low level in order to carry a ray of light into a world of profound darkness. For wherever a person willing to love is working on earth a soft light will be shining which is soothingly touching his fellow human beings' souls. And a being of light will always bring such a soft shining light along to earth, since love in the soul will not need not be ignited but a small flame is already glowing when it enters into earthly life.

But such people will often be treated with hostility and have to prove themselves, hence pass the test of will as well, which this life on earth requires. For God's adversary will tempt particularly them in the hope of bringing them to fall, which he once failed to succeed in doing. Nevertheless, the human being is not left defenseless against his power since his spiritual friends will always support him and provide him with strength, which he will at all times request from God: For a soul from above will never relinquish its bond with God, even though it is free in its will and actions. And thus in times of spiritual decline messengers of light and love will arise time and again, who openly acknowledge God and work for Him and His kingdom, people who are permeated by His spirit and who eagerly and with conviction proclaim the divine Redeemer and consider it their task in life to lead their fellow human beings to the cross, because they understand the significance of the sacrifice on the cross and therefore also know the danger people find themselves in. They gained this knowledge through their life of love, and therefore they can also be diligent representatives of Jesus Christ and His act of Salvation.

Especially in times to greatest spiritual adversity the helpers will descend from above but without knowledge of their origin. For they, too, will have to pass the test of will, they often have to live a most difficult earthly life for the sake of their goal and on no account are they allowed to be spiritually so influenced that

they are compelled in their thinking, talking and behavior. But they can always expect help when they need it, since they will always take the path to God, whom they recognize as their Father and Whom they love with all their heart. This is why their hearts are always opened to receive a flow of strength from the spiritual kingdom, and reaching their goal is usually assured and only at risk if the person establishes contacts on earth which want to pull him down. The soul will not have to fear a fall into the abyss yet there is the danger that it will not achieve the highest degree of light, nevertheless it will keep its former happiness, only that it is no longer the created angel-being which can't help but think and act in accordance with divine will, but that it has gone through earthly life and proven its free will and its direction, so that it thus can enter into the highest spheres of light in order to be indescribably happy."

Expediency of Creations – God's will

BD No. 3739 of 04/08/1946 taken from book 47

God the Father is speaking: "Divine will is the foundation of all creation, and as it came forth from His hand it is good and serves its purpose. Hence His creations will remain unchanged until they have fulfilled their purpose and this for all eternity, as long as they serve the perfection of the spiritual substances. And one of His works of creation is the human being, whose external form came forth from the Creator's hand just as perfectly, so that his purpose of bringing the spiritual essence within himself to perfection can be fulfilled in every respect, but only on condition that the human being's free will subordinates itself to God's will, for God gave this creation freedom of existence so that it can determine its own fate, and therefore it is also able to act inexpediently, in opposition to God's will. A person's soul is intended to achieve the final goal on earth, and therefore it has to be able to manage its life independently from God's will, independently from fundamental law, so that it can emerge as a completely free spiritual being if it pursues its final goal.

And thus, the human being's external shape will in fact always be the same because it is God's creation. However, the human being himself will, due to the awakening of the soul, due to the spiritual substances' various degrees of development, demonstrate an entirely diverse character, and the opportunity of change is available to him throughout his earthly life so that, at the end of his physical life, he no longer needs to be the same as he was at the beginning of his earthly course of life. His outer appearance also changes but always in accordance with divine law. But the spiritual being within the person, which gives life to the person in the first place, can shape itself in many different ways and will neither be forced nor prevented by divine will. In addition, the human being also has the opportunity to shape his own creations in accordance with his will. If his will subordinates itself to divine will, these creations will be expedient again and contribute to his higher development, since everything in accordance with divine will leads towards spiritual perfection.

Shaping his own character will progress faster when the human being occupies himself productively and creatively on earth, thus subordinating himself to the great divine law of releasing the bound spiritual substances, even if he is unaware of his achievement. Throughout the duration of earthly life God also

gives the human being the ability to use his inflowing energy of life in order to develop new creations. The divine law rests in every human heart but it can also be deliberately ignored. Nevertheless, subordinating himself to this law understandably has to be beneficial for the human being who is using his strength in accordance with God's will. But he is also responsible for the direction of his will, because he has been given freedom of will and intelligence, and because divine will was placed into his heart, which he thus should recognize and obey if he wants to be able to continue to exist before God when accountability is demanded of him one day. He will be answerable for the expedient use of his divinely created external form as well as for the creations which he voluntarily brought into being, because everything has to be in accordance with God's will and thus serve the higher development of the spiritual essence or its inexpediency will be in opposition to God's will."

Further Explanation Regarding the Soul

BD No. 8012 of 10/05/1961 taken from book 84

God the Father is speaking: "It is necessary to clarify the concept of the 'soul' so that you do not live in error: Everything you see around yourselves is spiritual strength, which was once emanated by Me as beings which were dissolved when they did not use the strength of love, which flowed to them ceaselessly, in accordance with My will. For this strength must become active according to the law of eternal order. Thus, I reshaped this strength of love, once emanated as 'beings', into works of creation which perform a serving function.



And so, all of creation which surrounds you is basically the strength which was externalized by Me as independent beings. And regardless of how solidified the spiritual strength is that became matter, they are all sparks of light and love which emanated from Me, My will merely gave them a shape according to My love and wisdom. However, this spiritual substance can no longer cease to exist, My once emanated strength will inevitably return to Me again. Yet the degree of maturity of everything around you varies considerably, because the meaning and purpose of creation is to bring the spiritual substance to full maturity since, as a result of its fall into the abyss, it had completely reversed its nature and, by means of this process of probation, this purification process through the whole of creation, shall deify itself again, thus become an independent being once more, which will work in light and strength and freedom for its own happiness. ***Sooner or later all tiny particles of a dissolved original spirit will gather again, and this will then live on earth in the external shape of a human being in order to achieve its final perfection of its own free will. Hence this soul is My once emanated strength of love, yet all of its substances still need purification.*** Nevertheless, it is a spiritual substance, for everything you see is spiritual strength, even if it is consolidated as matter as a result of My will. The spiritual essence which now animates the human being as a 'soul' has certainly reached a certain degree of maturity already, or it would not be permitted to embody itself as a human being; however, one cannot

speak of a 'perfect' soul, because it travelled through Lucifer's realm and its thoughts and intentions are still satanically inclined. But it is the once fallen original spirit which, through earthly progress, can entirely release itself from all unspiritual influences, which can freely want and act and therefore also has the opportunity to achieve final perfection on earth and to enter the kingdom of the beyond as a radiant spirit of light again when it has to leave the earthly body. Hence the soul is something invisible to the human eye which is everlasting, which continues to exist for all eternity, whilst matter, every external form that is visible to the eye, is transient but will also only be disintegrated by My will in order to release the spiritual substance concealed therein.

So, the visible creation is likewise a spiritual substance which was once externalized as beings, it merely goes through these creations in a disintegrated state, yet one day it will be mature enough so that the fallen original spirit will be permitted to embody itself as a soul in a human being. Although the soul has the shape of a human it is, however, only visible to the spiritual eye, that is, only a certain degree of maturity enables another soul to see the former, just as the beings in the spiritual kingdom were once able to recognize and communicate with each other, but only because they possessed spiritual vision, which the human being or soul which departed from earth in an immature state does not possess. Thus, the soul is not a substantial form anymore, if 'substance' is to be understood as something material, visible. It is a spiritual form; it is My emanated strength which gives life to a dead form, the human body. Even so, the soul can think, feel and want, which the body itself cannot do once the actual life, the soul, is missing. The human organs certainly perform their functions, yet always driven by or animated by the soul, the real Self, which determines the activity of all these functions. This is why the whole responsibility for the existence on earth rests on the soul, never on the body, but it would always think and act wrongly had I not provided it with the spiritual spark as My share, which subsequently tries to influence the soul to subordinate itself to its urging and which always wants to advise it according to My will yet never forcibly influence the soul. It is entirely up to the soul to submit itself to the desire of the spirit or to the body's wishes; this is the actual test of earthly life the soul will have to pass in order to be able to enter the spiritual kingdom in a perfect state. You humans must get used to the idea that this very 'fallen spirit' is your real Self. But this original spirit at the beginning of its embodiment as a human being is still very impure, for it lives in Lucifer's realm, it travelled through all creations in which everything satanic is bound. And the human external frame is matter too, thus a spiritual substance that is still in the process of development. For the final perfection shall only take place during earthly life but it can be attained, because the act of Salvation was accomplished by Jesus Christ, My only begotten Son, Whom I sent to Earth in order to redeem the immense original sin which denied all fallen beings entry into the kingdom of light.

The soul of the man called Jesus was therefore a soul of light which, for the purpose of a mission, descended into the realm of darkness. A soul of light embodied itself in a cover of flesh, in the body of a temporal human which was just like any other human. Although the soul of light prepared this shell first, for it had to be a pure vessel, because I Myself wanted to take abode in Jesus, the man.

Nevertheless, the body of flesh consisted of earthly material substances, because Jesus the human being had to accomplish an act of deification on Himself which was to serve other people as an example, which therefore all people will have to accomplish in order to perfect themselves.

Moreover, Jesus' soul, a profoundly pure soul of light, found itself in dark surroundings; it descended into Lucifer's realm and was subsequently exposed to all onslaughts on him. However, Jesus' soul was not a fallen spirit. But since it had to travel through the abyss it was unable to resist everything unspiritual which badly besieged it on Lucifer's instructions. Jesus' soul was light in all its fullness. Yet when it descended into the abyss it left the light behind since it would irrevocably have consumed the people in darkness. Jesus therefore only entered His physical shell to a limited extent, He did not let His light of love shine, yet love was in Him, He did not deprive Himself of love and this love intimately united Him with Me, His Father of eternity. Thus, Jesus' soul consisted of spirit made of My spirit, it, too, was emanated by Me as light of love and did not surrender it either when it came into the world. But then My adversary's influence started, who wanted to prevent Jesus' act of Salvation and also sought to draw Jesus' soul down into the darkness. By virtue of the enormous light of love Jesus could easily have resisted his every onslaught but this would have put the following of Jesus into jeopardy, he would never have exemplified, as a 'human being', the life His fellow human beings should live in order to release themselves from My adversary, instead, divine strength alone would have accomplished something which would never have been possible for any human being. This is why a soul of light consciously took up the battle against My adversary by offering him every target. He challenged him deliberately and that meant, at the same time, not fighting the demons when they tried to take possession of His soul. He did not defeat them by virtue of His power but by virtue of His love, that is, He pacified them, He brought redemption to them, for His love was greater than great and, during His earthly life as a human being, it grew into a sea of flames. He accepted Me Myself as the Eternal love in Him. He did not yield to the adversary's temptations but overcame every challenge, every desire by these demons with boundless patience and mercy in order to help these unredeemed spirits and to place them into a state that they could adapt to His soul. And love accomplished the work that all still unredeemed physical substances adapted to His soul, that soul and body radiated in supreme abundance of light and united with Me, the eternal light of Love.

And this very same process happens when a most elevated spirit of light, an angel-spirit, wants to take the path through the abyss in order to attain childship to God, in order to voluntarily become a supremely perfect spirit which can create in and with Me in free will. In that case, the spirit will always limit its abundance of light and strength, because it would burst the human body, which is not a pure spiritual body as yet. Thus, the spirit of light takes on the shape of the human body and yet remains a spiritual body. And this spiritually 'limited' form is the soul which animates the otherwise dead body of flesh in the first place. When this soul leaves the body of flesh again it will no longer be restricted and will be a free spirit again, full of light and strength, but it does not exclude the possibility that this spirit had once taken the path through the abyss as a human soul. But

such a spirit will also have extraordinary spiritual abilities at its disposal in earthly life, for although it is exposed to the most severe temptations on the part of My adversary it will never completely lose its connection with Me, and the strength of its love will also ensure that it will emerge as the victor. For what My adversary failed to achieve when he caused the apostasy of the great host of originally created spirits from Me, he will not achieve now either. And yet, a light spirit's life on earth will always be a particularly difficult one until it has quite openly passed the important test of will which turned it into My child that will forever be united with Me, with its Father, and then enjoy unlimited beatitudes."

Hypostatic union with Christ – the imprint of God

Ref: Conchiglia Aug 27th, 2004

The Divine Spark that is attached to the soul is the imprint of God that guides the soul as it makes its final journey back to God.

Jesus is speaking: "Here Conchiglia, how it will deduce through the meditative reading of the words that have been given you. The imprint of God is within you, is within your Essence. But for an imprint to be visible it must have a ground where to lean and where to imprint and that ground can only be of soil that is the human body with all the mineral features of the earth.

Your Body-Earth welcomed the Imprint of God which is now visible on Earth through your image. The Extraordinary, in the ordinary; the Divine, in the human; the Supernatural, in the natural; Heaven, on Earth, is it a surprise? Is it a novelty? Is it a lie? Is it a scandal? Or is it just the truth? What does your heart tell you?

You who read these words almost adoringly, how do you feel at the feeling level when you read this My daughter, Mine and your Conchiglia, perhaps the feeling of being next to your God and Love? A God who speaks to you and tells you how to live that is pleasing to Him and that is according to the Gospel? Yes children.

The Word of God is identical to this Word, the Scripture of the Gospel is identical to the Scripture. In both situations, the intents are the same that is, instruct the People of God on their origins and the Eternal Salvation of the Soul.

The completion of these writings is irreproachable by any human being and that human who will judge My Word of Life, is under My careful Eye. I allow him to do so, I follow him constantly and I wait patiently, that he distracts himself from thoughts and sight of that which he thinks of doing. But human liberty is a barrier to Me beyond which I cannot go in spite of My Deity. And then I just have to sit back and watch and wait just like you are doing Conchiglia, and with you pray to My Father's and yours."

The Soul - The Divine Spark in the Human Being

BD No. 1618 of 09/18/1940 taken from book 25

God the Father is speaking: "The human soul is the unification of countless soul-substances which are assembly points for spiritual strength, i.e. which are receptacles for the spirit of God. Each one of these countless substances was previously embodied somewhere else, that is, enclosed in an outer form for the

purpose of the spirit's higher development and for the prospect of later unification with an equal substance. Hence each single substance of the human soul has passed through every work of creation and has, so to speak, matured for its last embodiment on earth. The soul always assumes the same shape as its surrounding outer shape. If a person with spiritual vision would contemplate the human soul in its composition, he would be presented with an incredibly charming and varied picture. This work of God's creation, invisible to human beings, is beyond description, both in its structure as well as in its usefulness. But a description of the formation of the soul would only confuse human thought for he cannot understand the countless miracles within the human body. What human beings understand to be 'soul' is all of creation in miniature. The soul is the innermost part of the human being and includes the whole of creation, intended to become enlightened during its life on earth and in glorification of God to enjoy the delights of heaven.

The soul has the divine spirit within itself. Although the original substance of the soul is also spirit in all its phases of evolution, the divine spark of spirit is placed into the incarnating soul of the human being by God Himself. He instills His breath into the human being. He places the divine into him and gives the soul the task to choose between the divine and the human during its last existence on earth. If the soul, the spirit out of God which at one time had opposed God, is now willing to unite with the divine spirit, the transformation of what was once far away from God begins and the human soul becomes enlightened. The unity of the human soul with the divine spirit occurs when the soul steadfastly overcomes all human desires, which, for the purpose of testing and for strengthening of the will, cling to the human body as temptation, when it resists all that the body as such requires and willingly submits to the requirements of the divine spirit.

Then the soul finally surrenders its former resistance to God. It chooses God, it is no longer in conscious opposition to the divine and accepts the emission of love, the strength, to increase the spirit within itself, to bring about the unity of the spirit within itself with the spirit outside of itself, and thus consciously strives to draw closer to God. If, however, the body's desire dominates then the divine spark of spirit stays dormant and completely buried deep within the human being, it cannot emit light and the soul dwells in utter darkness. Its earthly life goes by without the smallest accomplishment; the spirit within is condemned to stagnate, its earthly process is not a path towards higher development but a time of standstill or even regression. The divine spark of spirit in the human being had been ignored and therefore could not manifest itself. The strength of divine love could not flow into the being and, as a result, the unity with the spirit of the eternal Father could not take place either. The soul takes this lightless state, which it had chosen for itself on earth, across into eternity and there, with endless pain of regret, contemplates the wasted time on earth and now has to struggle far more strenuously to improve its situation."

The Soul's union with its Spirit

Ref: BD 8327 12.11.1962

God the Father is speaking: "I reveal Myself to you humans in the most simple and understandable way, for My Words are not solely intended for the intellectual person but for all who desire the truth, even if they do not possess a keen intellect. However, I speak to them in a way that they can understand and therefore I avail Myself of a plainly spoken person, who can also be understood by everyone when he speaks to them from person to person, because then I will work through My spirit if he takes part in spiritual conversations. When My Word is therefore conveyed to Earth it also happens in a way that the contents of My revelations are clear and understandable. And thus every person will be able to understand that the process of the spirits apostasy consisted of the fact that they rejected My illumination of love, My 'spirit of love,' and that the return to Me also consists of the fact that they will voluntarily accept My illumination of love again, that they thus must unite themselves with My spirit once more. The union with My spirit takes place when the divine spark of love, which is placed into every person as My share, gets kindled into a bright flame which incessantly strives towards Me, the Primal Fire. Then the fallen original spirit will have become its fundamental element again, and this consciously, for even after its apostasy from Me it remained My strength because My emanated strength of love cannot cease to exist. Hence the return to Me can only be achieved consciously and this requires free will, which is returned again to the previously constrained being as a human who must subsequently use it correctly. The original being certainly takes the path of return in an unconscious state, dissolved in countless tiny particles, while it is bound within the creations of earth. This return is an act of grace on My part, because I want to help the extremely deeply fallen being to reach the point again when it can receive its free will back. But then the unity of the spiritual spark with the eternal Father-Spirit must take place if the final return is to be accomplished.

The original spirit, which travels the earthly path as a human soul, will remain distant from Me for as long as the human being is without love, for I have also given him a spark of love which he must first ignite before a union with the Father-Spirit can be accomplished, for only love can achieve this union, and love must voluntarily be practiced by a person, which also makes the illumination of My strength of love possible and the being becomes again what it was in the beginning. **The soul is a fallen original spirit. Consequently, when it is said that the soul unites with its spirit, then the latter should always be understood as the spirit of love from Me, which the original spirit once rejected and thereby closed itself to all illumination of love. As a human being the soul, the once fallen original spirit, carries a tiny spark of divine spirit within itself, but it must voluntarily acknowledge it, which it consciously does when it opens itself to My illumination of love and thereby becomes lovingly active itself.** Thus it has the spirit within itself and it is its earthly task to let itself be influenced by this spirit, which will always result in the fact that the person will practice love and through love unite



with Me, since I Am the Eternal love Itself. Hence the soul unites itself again with its spirit. The original spirit no longer reacts negatively towards Me and My illumination of love, instead, it consciously strives towards Me, it wants to be illuminated by Me and every distance between us is abolished.

It is the same divine original being again which originated from Me and after its voluntary apostasy also voluntarily returned to Me again, except that it has become My 'child', which I was unable to create because it required the created beings free will to become supremely perfect. Thus, it deified itself voluntarily and can now create and work with Me in supreme beatitude and free will which, however, is the same as Mine, because a perfect being cannot want and think differently than I, as I Am the most perfect spirit in infinity."

Love and Suffering Purify the Soul

Ref: BD 8113 01.03.1962

God the Father is speaking: "Love should be the driving force for all your deeds and failings, then you will always do My will, you will work with love and thereby also attain the strength needed by your soul for your path of earthly life. The soul is meant to mature fully, that is, it is meant to push away all impurities it is still burdened with, it is meant to become translucent, so it is able to accept My love's emanation of light which signifies strength and bliss for the soul. But My ray of love cannot penetrate it if the soul is still surrounded by dense layers, by impure longings and instincts, by all kinds of vices, by low characteristics such as pride, anger, vindictiveness, by any kind of unkindness.

The soul has to try to free itself from all these faults and longings, and the means for this are love and suffering. The impurities dissolve through deeds of love, but the soul will also be released from them through suffering, and it can be ever more illuminated by My love and mature until it has become completely translucent, and then it need not fear death anymore, because then it can enter the kingdom of light, because its earthly progress has not been in vain since it has reached its goal on earth: the transformation of itself into love. And therefore, you will understand that My commandments of love are of utmost importance, that they have to be fulfilled, that your life on earth has to be a life of love if it is to be successful for you. You are only on earth for the maturity of your soul which, at the start of its incarnation as a human being, is still without love, although I have provided it with a spark of love which can ignite and change the soul's still imperfect state until it is close to perfection. But the person also has to muster the will to live a life of love. He has to listen to his inner voice which constantly urges him to act with love. He has to perform deeds of love, or his soul won't change but will keep its lowly attributes and is then in danger of entering the kingdom of the beyond in a completely immature state, which means, that it will still have to go through torments of purification there in order to be able to enjoy happiness one day.

Only love will release it from all impure attributes, only love will crystallize it and it will push all impurities away from itself, or it will have to accept much suffering during its earthly life which can also mature the soul, because this calms it down and gradually also ignites the spark of love within itself, and then love and suffering work together and achieve the soul's maturity. And the human being

should always reject his selfish love and give love to his neighbor. Then he will change quickly, for only unselfish neighborly love is the true, divine love which I demand, which the soul has to change into by itself during its earthly progress as a human being if it wants to attain eternal life. And therefore, My divine commandments of love always have to be emphasized as the most important, for only love has the redeeming strength, only love will be able to achieve the soul's transformation. Only through deeds of love will it mature and become bright and clear, so that My emanation of love will find no more obstacles, so that I can then make it blissfully happy as in the beginning, because through love it will find union with Me, which is its purpose and goal of earthly progress."

The Flesh and the Spirit

Ref: Romans 8:5-13

For those who live according to the flesh are concerned with the things of the flesh, but those who live according to the spirit with the things of the spirit. The concern of the spirit is life and peace. For the concern of the flesh is hostility toward God: it does not submit to the law of God, nor can it; and those who are in the flesh cannot please God. But you are not in the flesh; on the contrary, you are in the spirit, if only the Spirit of God dwells in you. Whoever does not have the Spirit of Christ does not belong to him. But if Christ is in you, although the body is dead because of sin, the spirit is alive because of righteousness. If the Spirit of the one who raised Jesus from the dead dwells in you, the one who raised Christ from the dead will give life to you mortal bodies also, through his Spirit that dwells in you. Consequently, brothers, we are not debtors to the flesh, to live according to the flesh. For if you live according to the flesh, you will die, but if by the spirit you put to death the deeds of the body, you will live.

Soul and Spirit and the Divine Spark

Ref: Chapter 42, 43 – "The Great Gospel of Joh: by Jakob Lorber

Jesus is speaking: "Mathael, who has clearly heard these words, says, "Make your soul as free as possible from all ties to the world, and then you will soon understand very easily from where a soul can quickly achieve the greatest wisdom! But as long as the soul lies yet firmly buried in the old heap of the decay of death, which is your body, there can be no discussion and no comprehension of any special divine wisdom!

There, a few steps in front of us, you can see a tree stump which seems to be firmly stuck in the earth. Go there and sit on it, and I give you my word that you will not move it from the spot even after many years; only when it becomes rotten and totally brittle will you fall to the earth along with it. But if you cannot separate yourself then from your favorite seat, you will then certainly decay along with it in the end; for everything that is dead must first be completely destroyed, if it is to cross over to any sphere of life again. But if you go down to the water, get onto a boat, untie it, raise the sail, and take hold of the rudder, in this way you will no longer remain on one spot, but instead you will soon reach a new land in which you will learn many new things and enrich the treasure chamber of experience. You see, as long as you look after your flesh and your sweet and comfortable life,

you will sit on that stump and cannot move on; but if you completely give up the overwhelming worry about your flesh, and only concern yourself with what affects the life of the soul and its spirit, you board the ship of life and will soon move on. Do you understand this image?"

Suetal says, "What did you just say about a spirit in the soul? The soul is what one calls the spirit, isn't it?!"

Mathael says, *"Yes, friend, if you don't know yet that a spirit of all life lives in every soul, you can certainly not understand from where my little bit of wisdom comes! You know, it is still difficult to talk to you; for with your open ears, you hear nothing and likewise with your open eyes you see nothing!"*

The soul is only a receptacle of life from God, but by no means life itself; for if it was life itself, which one of a prophet could ever pretend to know anything about the achievement of eternal life, or on the other hand about a possible eternal death? But since the soul can only achieve eternal life on the path of true divine virtue, as can be proven by very many examples, ***it cannot possibly be life itself, instead only a vessel to hold life.***

What one calls the spirit of God and actual life is only a little spark in the center of the soul. This little spark must be nourished with spiritual food which is the pure Word of God. Through this food, the little spark becomes larger and more powerful in the soul, finally it even takes on the human form of the soul, fills the soul finally once and for all and in the end, it transforms the whole soul into its being; then the soul itself becomes complete life which recognizes itself as such in all profundity.

When life fully recognizes itself in this way and becomes quite clearly aware of it, it recognizes the truth in its foundations; but if that is not the desired case, there can be no talk of wisdom!

True wisdom is the light of the spirit in the eye of the soul; but if a soul still asks what the spirit is in it - where should the light of the spirit and of all life come from into its otherwise completely blind eye?"

Suetal says, "I beg you, friend, stop talking like this and pause for a moment until I become more receptive to this; for I see very well now that I am still much too stupid and blind for this! But we all want to take as active a note of your present instruction as possible! For I now see that you are completely correct; but to understand your deepest wisdom quite thoroughly requires great preparation which was completely impossible for us until now! But as I said, we want to become very strong disciples for you.

Mathael says, "When Noah built the ark, he is supposed to have begun his commanded work very dilatorily in the beginning. When his adversaries noticed this, they constantly destroyed by night what he had built during the day. Only after many years did he begin to work on the ark day and night and placed guards there; only then did the construction proceed towards its completion with swift steps and offered protection in the time of the flood, as we know, to those who were inside and kept them from an otherwise certain demise.

I tell you that we are basically all Noah's. The world with its lies and deceptions and all the temptations that come from this are the perpetual flood. In order not to be consumed we must most diligently build the commanded ark; this

*ark is the consolidation of the life of our soul for the maintenance and **final complete education of the life of the spirit of God** in the soul.*

When the flood of enticing world temptations then finally sinks into the depths of emptiness, the life of God will come out in all strength in and around the soul and will begin a new work in the pure and new sphere of life in the most unrestricted freedom without any hostile highwayman and thereby bless through and with God the whole infinity from eternity to eternity! Do you understand this image?"

Life - Awakening the Divine Spark in the Person

Ref: BD No. 3240 of 09/02/1944 taken from book 42

God the father is speaking: "The divine spiritual spark in the human being is his actual life; consequently, one can only speak of rebirth when the spirit in the human being has been awakened, when it can start to become active and thus the spiritual life begins. In that case the human being is spiritually reborn, for his physical birth only makes sense and serves its purpose when *spiritual rebirth* has taken place. The divine spiritual spark has consciously been acknowledged by the person's soul even if the person is not yet able to rationally differentiate between the two concepts of soul and spirit. For the process of unification of spirit and soul can happen without a person's knowledge, since this is only conveyed to him when it occurred. Only then will the spirit explain to the soul what the unity of the spirit with the soul means, and only then will the soul strive towards ever closer union with its spirit and will accept the most valuable knowledge from it. And from then on, the human being will be alive, that is, he will utilize his knowledge and consciously work for the kingdom of God; he will eagerly work at distributing the obtained information and at imparting the knowledge to his fellow human beings. Life is a continuous activity. Admittedly, the human being is certainly physically alive without having awakened his indwelling spiritual spark, that is, he is active in an earthly way and thus works for his earthly life, for his body and for earthly goals. But this is not the true life, the life which is everlasting, the life Jesus had spoken about and which He promised to anyone who believes in Him. True life is the never-ending life of the spirit, the attainment of which is the purpose of life on earth. This purpose will only be achieved when the human being's spirit has come to life.

Spiritual rebirth is the most worthwhile goal to strive for, because it will yield indescribable gain for the human being's soul. That which is offered by the earth is impermanent and only benefits the body but never the soul. In contrast, what the spirit offers the soul will refresh it and quench its thirst, it is its nourishment, thus it is strength for living; it is a precious commodity which can no longer perish, which induces happiness and encourages diligent activity and therefore can be called the elixir of life, because death, which previously had threatened the soul and would be its inevitable share had rebirth not taken place, will no longer be possible. The carnal body is the shell which harbors the divine spark, and it is up to the person's free will as to whether he bursts the shell, whether he strives to awaken the Divine within himself to life. If the soul, the bearer of the will, turns towards the divine spirit by trying to penetrate the shell, by trying to liberate itself from all earthly wishes, from bad habits and vices, if it tries

to dissolve the shell through activity of love, the divine spiritual spark will start to move, it will make contact with the human being's soul, it will help it rise above itself, it will constantly whisper advice and instructions and thus guide the soul as soon as it allows itself to be guided. From then on the divine spark in the person will take the lead and this will truly be right. Then the spirit and soul will no longer oppose each other but pursue their goal together, they will strive towards the eternal home and pay no attention to the body, the earth and everything of an earthly nature, even though the human being still lives on earth. The human being is alive, even if earthly matters are of no further interest to him, for his spirit is alive and is constantly active. The human being only works for the spiritual kingdom, for the kingdom of God, he works at improving himself and his fellow human beings, he is incessantly active, for the indwelling spiritual spark will not allow him to rest, that is, to rest idly, as it is harmful and synonymous with death, with a state which is painful in eternity and should therefore be feared as the worst fate that can befall the human soul. However, once the spirit has come alive then death will no longer exist, for the spirit is immortal and also draws the soul into eternal life, into everlasting glory."

The Divine Spark - Calling upon the 'Holy Spirit'

BD No. 8674 of 11/15/1963 taken from book 91

God the Father is speaking: "You humans often call the 'Holy Spirit' that it may come upon you, and you are unaware of the fact that it is within you and only requires your free will so as to be able to speak to you. The spirit is part of Me, it is inseparably connected with the Father-Spirit, thus it is a divine spark which was added to your soul when it incarnated on this earth as a human being, in other words: you once emerged from Me as an emanation of love and therefore consist of the same fundamental substance as I Myself. This substance solidified after your past apostasy from Me and you, who once had been full of life, became a lifeless being. For My strength of love permeated you and this strength was able to be constantly active. However, since you rejected My strength of love it also left you incapable of any kind of activity. And you are still in this weak state when you enter the earth as a human being. In order that you will be able to accomplish the task given to you in your earthly life I radiate a spark of My eternal strength of love into every human heart, which thus is My share again. You are alive with the once emanated strength and that means that you are in possession of vitality, that you can be active in an earthly way and therefore also comply with your task as a human being. Your real task, however, is and remains your spiritualization, the retransformation of your nature into its original state. And you can only accomplish this task if you change yourselves into love. In order to be able to do that a spark of love has to be radiated into you first, since you, due to your past apostasy from Me, are completely without love. This spark of love is the emanation of Me Myself, it is the emanation of My spirit into your soul which, however, only awakens you humans into life if you apply your will. You all possess



the spiritual spark, which is part of Me Myself, within you. Hence it need not come to you anymore, it is inside of you but can only manifest itself if, through a life of love, you provide the possibility for it, because it will not impose itself and influence you against your will in any way. Therefore, you can at all times awaken the spirit in you but you will not be compelled to it.

When you pray for the Holy Spirit to come to you, you demonstrate your lack of knowledge regarding the right correlations, furthermore, you prove that you have a false concept of it, because you personify it to a certain extent and call upon it as an entity. It is, however, My 'emanation', for I Myself Am the Holy Spirit of eternity, and I Am present to anyone who calls upon Me. However, you must never think that the spirit you call upon is separate from Me, and it will and cannot comply with your call as long as you do not shape yourselves into love, for even if My strength of love is unlimited it will never be able to radiate into a closed heart, and a heart remains unreceptive as long as it is unwilling to love, since precisely due to the spiritual spark or spark of love it received from Me it is capable of loving. Willingness to love, however, prompts the spirit to reveal itself to you, even if you don't call upon it expressly. It is within you but will remain silent as long as you disregard love, because it is love itself and therefore can only speak to love. It is inseparably connected to the eternal Father-Spirit, and therefore enables 'My spirit,' or the divine fire of love, to flow into you humans in abundance and thus cause the spiritual spark to continuously educate you from within; for the divine light of love must also illuminate your hearts and that signifies brightest realization, it signifies the receiving of knowledge which corresponds to the truth, because My spirit knows everything and can therefore only impart the pure truth to you. Therefore, you can only ever pray that I Myself may be present to you, but this also requires you to shape yourselves to love, otherwise the Eternal Love cannot be present to you. You can therefore only pray to be granted the strength to fulfill My commandments, then you will always become aware of My presence, for with every work of love you draw Me close to you because I Am Love Itself. And then I will also work through My spirit in you, as I have promised you."

The Audible Word – Spiritual Spark

BD No. 3381 of 12/27/1944 taken from book 44

God the Father is speaking: 'The inner Word certainly sounds clearly and audibly, yet only to someone who listens within and who, due to his way of life, has so shaped his heart that God Himself is able to express Himself through this heart. The human being's soul has to be so intimately connected with the spiritual spark within that it can hear its voice at all times and that the spiritual spark, which is an emanation of God, is able to express itself such that the person can hear its voice like spoken words, so that the Words sound in him and thus cannot be misunderstood. Just like people who speak to each other from person to person, God speaks to people through the heart. This process cannot be explained in any other way, yet it is only understandable to someone once he has heard the divine voice. He feels God's Words in his heart and is ecstatically happy to receive this grace, for then he will have no more doubt, no unbelief, no question which will not be refuted or answered to him once doubt or questions arise in him. The audible Word is the evidence for the person that everything he previously believed is true.

And the audible Word reveals to the person the heavenly Father's presence, His proximity, which causes indescribable bliss.

However, it sounds so very gentle and subtly in the heart that it can only be heard by paying utmost attention. The most heartfelt contact must be mentally established with God and then the listening will have to start, the awaiting of His grace, which then will noticeably flow into him. But only a person whose heart has changed into love will be able to hear the divine voice, for it is divine love which expresses itself to a person and this can only manifest itself where true love exists. Yet once a person has audibly perceived the divine Word he will never lose this gift of grace again, then he will be able to hear His voice at all times and in all places, he will only need to remain in heartfelt contact with Him and he will clearly and distinctly hear the answer. He will not be overcome by doubt as to the truth of it because he feels God's nearness and it will also be understandable to him that God manifests Himself audibly. However, as long as the earthly child has not attained a specific degree of maturity as a result of a selfless life of love it will not be able to experience the happiness of this blissful union with God either. Nevertheless, it should always and forever listen within and from the bottom of its heart appeal for this grace, so that it will receive the strength to live according to God's will, and His eternal love will draw close to it, so that it will clearly and distinctly hear His voice, so that He will speak to it through the heart and the earthly child will feel His love and be abundantly happy while it is still on earth."

Inner Reflection

BD 1590 31.08.1940

God the Father is speaking: "It requires some time of reflection as to be able to listen to the inner voice, for it does not express itself in the midst of earthly commotion, that is, it is not perceptible to the person. Only someone who withdraws into his inner life will be able to perceive it, precisely because it only sounds deep within the heart. *Thus, in order to establish a connection with the spirit, it is absolutely necessary for a person to shape his inner life by trying to harmonies it with the will of the One Who gave him life. An inner life after divine will, can give rise to inconceivable success, for this guarantees access to spiritual knowledge.* It opens the gate to life beyond earth for the human being. The human being is unable to penetrate these areas from the outside, but if he takes the path by means of his innermost life, by means of his thoughts and feelings which are deeply rooted within his heart, he will take the right path and will reach the right goal.



The human being needs many heart-to-heart talks with himself and needs to subject himself and his actions to self-criticism and must always want what is best, then he will shape himself according to God's will. However, the more he is prevented by the outside world from times of inner reflection the harder it will be

for him to establish contact with the spiritual world, for every pensive hour will already be, so to speak, the unification with spiritual beings which try to influence his thoughts and which, precisely during such inner introspections, can speak to the listener of the inner voice unimpeded. These beings can only make themselves noticed through the most subtle spiritual vibrations, hence they have to be received during profound silence otherwise they cannot be sensed and ineffectively glide past the human being's soul. The more easily you are able to detach yourselves from the earth and desire spiritual contact, the more clearly and perceptibly the voice will sound in you, and therefore you should do everything in your power to avoid earthly experiences which might detract you from the inner work of improving your soul, from introspective hours of rest, during which you seek spiritual contact. You will undeniably have far more success than you can ever achieve by earthly means."

Thus, in order to establish a connection with the spirit, it is absolutely necessary for a person to shape his inner life by trying to harmonies it with the will of the One Who gave him life. An inner life after divine will, can give rise to inconceivable success, for this guarantees access to spiritual knowledge.

Chapter 4: Adam, Eve, and Cain



Was Adam the only Human Being Created by God? Human Population Growth, Will for Descendants – waiting souls, Creation of Eve, The Rib of Adam, The “Tree of Life” and The “Tree of Knowledge”, Deliverance from Selflove to Rebirth, The Fall, The Lord’s Judgement, The Reconciliation of the Lord, The Measure of God is Always Just, The Means, Good and Evil - Law of Eternity, Adam and Lucifer’s Test, The Casting out from Paradise, Punishment, God the Father speaks about the First Original Sin, The Fall into the Depths of Darkness, What would have happened if Adam had not Failed? . .

Did the Human Being Evolve or was He a New Creation?

BD No. 8235 of 08/09/1962 taken from book 87

God the Father is speaking: "There can be no contradictions in the spiritual knowledge you receive from Me Myself, which My spirit has imparted to you who are of service to Me and who have the task to pass on the pure truth from Me to your fellow human beings, to spread My Word which should enlighten you. Because I want to shed light onto the spiritual darkness in which people live and especially when you desire an explanation yourselves:

It took an infinitely long time for the creation work 'earth' to become what it is now, a creation which should enable people to achieve final perfection. And during this infinitely long time the original spirits, having been dissolved into the tiniest of particles, passed through countless works of creation in order to evolve ever more. The solidified spiritual substance gradually became alive, as you have been told several times already. It covered the infinitely long way in a state of compulsion, i.e. all creations fulfilled the purpose and task given to them by Me, no constrained being could make its own decisions but gradually matured, Forms were created for spiritual substances of all degrees of maturity aspiring to ascend; the forms of the mineral, plant and animal world were infinitely diverse, and they all were brought to life by the minute particles of the fallen original spirits, which progressively united and finally became smaller and larger living organisms. On leaving their forms they united again and finally were embodied into forms which already rather resembled the shape of a human being.

The whole lengthy course of development was subject to My law, in other words, all events in this creation which emerged through My will took place in accordance with natural law. As a result of their fall into the abyss the original spirits had lost their self-awareness. However, one day they should regain this self-awareness again and embody themselves in the last form as a human being, in order to then bring the path of higher development to a close. The final forms in the compulsive state therefore became increasingly more human-like (pre-Adamites) but they had no self-awareness as yet, they acted instinctively in accordance with My will, although they already performed functions which resembled those of a human being. However, they were unable to think, they lacked reason and free will and were therefore not accountable. They were impelled into action by spiritual intelligences; just like every spiritual being still constrained within the form was subject to supervisors, who likewise transferred My will onto the constrained spiritual being through natural law. And then came the time when free will could be returned to the matured original spirits by which they then should be tested as to whether they wanted to return to Me or remain with My adversary. And for those original spirits I created the form of the human being.

All works of creation, especially the ever-larger created living beings, originated through My will, in as much as My thoughts took shape. And for this reason, these living beings were represented in the most varied forms, yet every form was different. There were the most diverse species bearing no resemblance to each other, which continued to reproduce themselves but always remained the same creatures. When the first original spirits had attained a level of maturity which required the form of the human being, My will once again brought forth a

work of creation which was truly a work of wonder in the whole of My creation. This being was structured incredibly intricately; it was created in accordance with My will so that it could fulfill its earthly task, a being which I 'created', but which did not 'evolve' from the already existing human-like creations. Because it was intended for this form to shelter an original spirit, a being which was once externalized by Me in My image, and which was to become what it used to be once again. And therefore, it had to be equipped with intelligence, free will and self-awareness, and these did not gradually evolve in the animal-like beings, but they were given to the human form when the original spirit took possession of the first form, and they will always be given to every human being as part of his soul when, as divine breath, it gives life to the human being at birth.

Afterwards people indeed reproduced themselves again in accordance with My law of nature, but they will always remain the same living creations as the first human being, Adam, was. They will not change into other living creations, but any change will always purely be an act of the soul which at first can still be disinclined towards Me and during its time as a human being achieve highest perfection. The human body, however, will remain as I created it when Adam's soul took possession of it. Although the act of creating earth with everything in, on and above it, with all dead and living creations, certainly required an infinitely long time, but at the same time a phase of higher development had come to an end for the fallen spiritual essence when the minute particles of an original spirit had gathered again and the last process of return to Me began.

And this existence on earth as a human being also required a new work of creation by Me, a form which could do justice to all demands in order to take the last test of its own free will. And thus, the human being can consider himself a special creation by Me, because he is the only being on earth with the gift of intelligence, reason and free will, the marks of divine origin. He is therefore also able to recognize above himself a God and Creator Who gave him life, and therefore he can also achieve final perfection on this earth if his free will genuinely strives for it."



Afterwards people indeed reproduced themselves again in accordance with My law of nature, but they will always remain the same living creations as the first human being, Adam, was.

What is language? How did it come into being?

Ref: "Secrets of Life" by Jakob Lorber: Chapter 9 - **30 January 1871**

Jesus is speaking: "Last night two of your brothers discussed the style, or the kind of syntax, often prevailing in My dictates to you which is not always in accordance with their concepts of German grammar.

The first critical remark by your brother M. was that sometimes in his attempts to change it he still had to return to the sequence of words as set by Me, whereupon your brother L. gave him the good answer, saying that one shall not read My words with the head, but with the heart, and their meaning will always be clear.

Since the latter hit the nail on the head through his remark, I will elucidate for you the manner in which one should express oneself, the right syntax and, finally, a fundamental truth which applies to My entire creation, beginning with the just suggested doubt of your brother M. and ending with the great spiritual man.

Before entering fully into a more detailed explanation of your question, namely, why My style often differs from yours, we must as always begin with the basics and ask:

"What is language? How did it come into being? And who was the actual head who set down the sequence of words in the way you now read, write and think?"

Always proceeding from the simplest, one arrives most easily at the right and truly valuable conclusion which, built on solid, simple and firm ground, is like a house firmly built on rock, which cannot ever be destroyed.

To start with the very first question: "What is language?", we have to answer:

Language is a combination of different sounds produced by parts of the mouth, which in their diversity, often singly, often in association, express a word, and the word, a concept.

The lower the spiritual level of a people, the fewer requirements it has and therefore requires fewer words to express its needs and to mark various objects.

Thus, language came into being when through articulating sounds and uttered tones one either wanted to imitate the notes of certain sounding objects or invented actual sounds meant to express one or the other need, be it of the body or of the soul; such as you still find in baby language, where in every family from a child's first babble to a better communication every child has its own peculiar way of expressing its need.

What you observe daily with children was also once the case with the original people, who had to invent many words themselves, but many others they learned from My spirit-world through their intimate contact with the same, words which always in correspondence denote the object in question spiritually.

When mankind increased in numbers, indeed already after the fall of the first man, whereby communication with the spirits was severed until your time, language and minor dialects have formed by the thousands. People no longer understand each other and the languages of the nation's one wants to contact have to be learned, otherwise a mutual understanding is impossible.

Of course, these several thousands of languages now existing underwent many changes from the time of their origin to the present. Some have progressed,

some regressed, in keeping with the cultural level and the spiritual development of the peoples as such.

But wherever a language exists, or existed, one of its characteristics, apart from the names of objects and concepts peculiar to the language, was also the way of combining the words into a sentence and, finally, also the way of recording them either in script or pictorially.

As for syntax, where your two brothers have just exchanged their thoughts on the method used by Me, the first question is: "How actually is the same to be handled properly?"

Look, here we have arrived at that point where, in contrast to the way you are accustomed to write, I often express Myself differently.

In order to explain this to you, let us enter into a discussion and first ask: "What is a sentence?" A sentence is the expression of a thought at the bottom of which is the explanation of either a concept or an action.

Therefore, if I want to explain an action, the sentence should first contain the acting verb, as the expression of the will to act, and should only then be followed by the word describing the action.

At least in the language of every spirit the first fundamental thought is: I want to do something, followed by what I want to do.

Thus, it says in the Bible: "And He created the light", but not: "He has the light created" (*this is typically German syntax*), as you are used to write; the word "create" precedes the word "light".

Well, in My dictates this same syntax is often found, and L. was quite right. Reading it with the heart, namely spiritually, is right as I dictated it and as it is customary in almost all the old languages of the Orient and Asia, and also in some newer ones. However, in yours (the German language) it is avoided by inserting the noun between the auxiliary and the main verb, even whole sentences in such a way as to make the actual verb stating what is really going to happen, appear at the end.

Since at the basis of everything there is a spiritual "Why", also here it is again the Spiritual which justifies My syntax and replacing "Spiritual" with "heart", it means as much as: If you leave aside your intellect and, like My spirits, think only with the heart, you will readily accept My syntax, as soon as you abandon the inner language of the soul and go over to an intellectually orientated, or outer life, you lose also this order, as happened with the recording of the languages.

All the ancient languages of Asia and Africa are like the universal spirit-language. It should be written down to be read only from right to left, whereas with the languages of your present mankind which lives only outwardly, or according to the intellect, the exact opposite is practiced, that means from left to right.

This inversion, too, points to the said difference, namely, material versus Spiritual.

In the material sphere, as for instance in the human body, the left side is the side of the heart from where the blood flows into the whole body; it is the positive or spiritual side, while the right side from where the blood is transported to the lungs and later back to the heart, is the negative, material side.

What is conveyed through the ear to the soul's organ of feeling and emotion, or to the spiritual man, from the outer world, is the negative aspect, and what the soul tells the outer world through its motive tools, the positive aspect.

Everything has also two sides, a right and a left, a negative and a positive, an inner and an outer aspect.

The human skin is inside, on the left side, positive, on the outside or right side, negative. In its positive aspect it eliminates, whereupon it changes its poles and absorbs, being negative. This happens countless times at every moment. For repulsion and attraction, friction and generated warmth, destruction and newly creating are the first principle of life.

The eye, as the receptive organ for the outside impressions, is negative, but as mirror of within, positive.

What here is designated as "positive" and "negative" is, expressed in different terms, in the spirit-life a drawing to, or a distancing from, Me and My laws.

In the early times, when the people and the nations were still closer to the spirit-life, they invented their languages according to their spiritual state, according to their syntax and script. However, when gradually they turned away from the great natural law, taking the wrong path, also their ways of expression and writing became perverted, so that the majority of newer languages have a wrong style and a wrong manner of writing.

People have exchanged the spirit-language of the heart for the brain-language of the intellect and have turned away from Me and from their own mission. For this reason, many a thing in nature appears to them quite wrong which once appeared just right to primitive people living a simple life.

Thus, you see that there is from heart to heart, or through the heart or through the intellect a to and from, a drawing near and distancing, a betterment, and a worsening.

What I told you earlier about the skin, applies to every fruit, every tree and to every object; everywhere there are two aspects by which the intelligence of the within manifests to the outer world, or receives impressions from the outer world, and they are everywhere positive – negative, right – wrong, everywhere a drawing near and a distancing, eliminating and absorbing, straightforward or reversed.

Thus, it continues in the entire creation – up to the great cosmic man, whose viscera consist in nothing else but suns, comets and planets, and up to the still endlessly greater spiritual cosmic man, whose inner arrangements are all heavens of the most diverse kinds and beatitudes.

These too absorb for their sustenance from without what they then change within into Spiritual, ejecting or expelling what the cosmic man requires in spiritual substance.

There, the right order prevails, there, My heaven is the heart in the center and the great positive pole which lets all the goodness emanate; and the spirits in the material world are the negative pole which returns to Me all the Spiritual purified, having first to change from the negative into the positive pole, whereby the change is initiated anew.

This is the great fundamental law of creation: I, Love, am the positive pole and you and My spirits and angels, as absorbing components, are the negative

pole until, after much absorbing and repelling, which is equivalent to movement, or life, finally My positive pole, as Spiritual forever and immutably existing, will alone remain and all that was absorbed, spiritualized like Me, will enjoy eternal peace and bliss and only gentle attraction, but no repulsion can occur any longer.

Of course, eons upon eons of time will pass until then, but it will happen that spirit and matter, thus purified and spiritualized, will renounce their principles given them as first impulse and what once could only secure its permanence through conflict and dissolution, will be living peacefully side by side and within each other, so that there will be unity among all.

Now you see, My dear children, beginning with the minor question and L.'s answer and ending with the spirit-man, the same bond linking them with all the creations; there as a minor question as to the syntax in your language, and here in immense, for you unthinkable distances as power of attraction and repulsion.

From this you may learn how little is required to discover and elucidate a whole great truth, a great fundamental law of My divine Household. Of course, it requires also Him who can explain it to you, who has ordained the same way to all these great and small worlds, to all these objects, be they spiritual or material. It requires your Father, who wants to explain to you such great miracles in minor questions, thereby showing you how much and how little is needed to understand, firstly, My magnitude and, secondly, My love, and learn to value the same! Amen.

A Further Word About Language and its Origin

Ref: "Secrets of Life" by Jakob Lorber: Chapter 26 - 9 November 1875

God the Father is speaking: "Under this heading I have already given you several words: now I want to show you this word, *language*, from a different aspect. By its elucidation I prove again to the scholars of our world that they really know nothing, or at least that their conclusions in some cases are quite wrong.

Look, whenever you ask the philologists generally where language had its origin or how it developed, they simply reply: "Language, as necessary communication between people, was at first limited to very few words. Only with the growth of their culture, with the increase of their daily requirements where they coerced to invent new words. And in this way the languages in the world gradually formed, in keeping with the intelligence of the individuals and peoples."

This, in a nutshell, is the entire result of all linguistic research. Whosoever is satisfied with it, can let it rest at that.

However, since I think differently and have other intentions concerning My earthly children than feeding them with such wisdom, you shall again receive today a message from Me on a universally known word, namely, "language". One or the other among you speaks several and can express himself in them without ever having spiritually investigated as to how languages in general, namely their regular, deliberate structure, developed. And some languages, of antiquity as well as of modern times, are still familiar to you.

Now look, here I will raise a question for you and say: "Have you never reflected on the manner in which a language with all its verbs, nouns, adjectives and pronouns, etc., with all its declensions, conjugations and variations, has come into being? Where, looking alone at the verbs, a logical sequence, a correct

thinking is apparent and where the most diverse actions in all possible periods of time are defined according to a regular order?"

Have you ever been struck by the thought of how it is possible that the original people and their first descendants could already express themselves in such a way that their communication with one another was intelligible and in keeping with their needs?

For you can certainly not assume that the first people, before opening their mouth to speak, mentally concerned themselves with grammar.

Well, if you consider language from this aspect and compare it with the forementioned sentence of your linguists, some doubts could arise in our heads. You and your scholars may not find them so easy to resolve, for I alone am capable of unraveling them.

In order for this lesson to be instructive and intelligible to you, you must follow Me onto another field where I must start with different questions, the answers to which will lead to an elucidation of the language problem.

Do you, My children, believe that at the period of time when your world was created, no other solar systems were in existence? Or are you of the opinion that the entire universe came into existence all at once, including the most distant shell globes, which your eyes only laboriously discover with the most penetrating telescopes, when they appear to you as faint nebulae, down to your planetary system with its sun and the planets, moons and comets orbiting around it?

To this I must reply that also the creation of the entire universe has proceeded, and will forever proceed, only gradually and during long periods of time. In other words, to give you an example, just as today a plant forms from the seed and again, the seed from the plant.

In this way the worlds, the suns, the planets, and comets came, and still come, into existence, for it is this very same process of creation that implies and postulates infinity. Thus everything, the smallest as well as the greatest, replaces and replenishes itself only spontaneously.

Thus, also your solar system was formed out of other systems and of ether, first orbiting as comet in ether through eons of time. There it absorbed everything essential for the sustenance of its own world and of the earths and moons coming forth from it. And then the earths and moons had to pass through their own revolutions, while the comets move towards the formation of new globes until they become suitable for living beings such as seen on your own earth. There, by the way, the formative or developmental periods have not ceased but your earth, as well as the beings living on it, obeying the urge forward, always progress to a higher level. Finally, the time will have come also for them when the material earth globe with its inhabitants has become a more spiritual, more ethereal one.

These worlds and cosmic systems in immense numbers, forming the material edifice of the universe, have, and had, to pass through this very same process, and are still in the process of change, of perfection.

There are global systems, the number of which cannot be expressed in the figures available to you, nor can their duration be defined.

Millions of worlds had been created and had vanished long before your sun as a light, comet-like star orbited in the ether-space. These worlds and suns were,

and still are, populated by beings vastly differing in physical and spiritual structure.

Spirits from the great spirit-realm let themselves be incarnated in these worlds in order to speed up their progress in their probation school. Thereby more spiritualized, they would again leave them, thus able to gradually draw near Me, from whom they all had gone forth.

This chain or link between the spirit realm and the cosmic one existed everywhere.

Just as the spirits, incarnated as beings of the different worlds, fulfilled their mission, it required a language as a means of communication. This, in keeping with the intelligence of the inhabitants, sometimes necessitated many words and sounds, sometimes few, by means of which to express their thoughts. As there are millions of worlds, there is a million-fold difference in their language.

This envelopment or incarnation of the spirits, or this migration of souls from one star to another, always on a voluntary basis, occurred, and is still occurring. *And so, the first complete human beings on your earth arrived in this world with a certain spiritual ability to express themselves. However, the grammatical construction of the language was not their own merit, but their inheritance from other worlds.*

In this way the thousands of languages so far known to you, as well as their offshoots, came into existence on your small earth globe. They are only the beginnings of languages brought by spirits from other worlds. And they were here gradually, in keeping with the requirements and the cultural level of the various peoples, formed into your living languages.

Thus, you see ever" language, though faulty, yet always formulated according to rational principles not grown on your own soil. Adding to this a later urge to write down the spoken word, it resulted in the written, as well as sign and metaphorical, language.

From thousands of worlds the spirits flocked to this little planet, many foreseeing its future spiritual importance. Many came later, when I established for all spirits this small earth as the place of My grace, where I as Man wanted to set the greatest example of meekness and tolerance to all spiritual beings living materially or immaterially in the entire universe.

Thus, the languages came into being, improved by man whose higher goal in life it was to refine them and adapt them in keeping with their own cultural progress to the requirements of the peoples.

And so out of single mother tongues the offshoots formed. At first only dialects, which were later languages in their own right, according to how the peoples had achieved a more or less important role socially and politically.

This is the whole historical and political process of how languages came into being, existed for a considerable time and again went out of use. Or how they underwent such changes that of their original mother tongue nothing was left, according to how the peoples had progressed or regressed culturally.

Among all nations it is always only individual people who decisively influence their spiritual and material progress, and these people were in most cases spirits who came from better worlds. Thus, you find in history single nations in the splendor of highest spiritual culture or of material progress. However, either

arrogance due to their good fortune or the decline into animal passions prevented their further progress.

The incarnation of better spirits became less frequent, and they were replaced by lower spirits, who then gradually brought about the decline of the peoples and helped to corrupt them.

And so, you now see nations, which once had great insight into My secrets of nature, become brutish, indulging only in the lowest passions and in material interests. And of all the greatness of the ancestors there are at most a few traces left in the language bearing witness to the talents that had been at work here leading the people along the spiritual path. However, no one has now the inclination or the willpower for this.

Examples of this you see in India, Persia, Egypt, also in nations of America, whose traces have long since disappeared from the earth.

And so, My children, your language is not the Last to find its conclusion on this earth. It will be followed by a still more intense, more spiritual one. Mankind will only learn it once its communication with the spirit-realm proceeds freely. Then passing to or from it will only be a gentle transition and a slight metabolic change, and the intelligent requirements of the incarnated human beings will be in better harmony with those of the spirits from the beyond.

Now it so happens that your language, however cultivated and rich in expressions you imagine it to be, so far has no words for many feelings and emotional states which you try to express, as for instance in the most sublime moments of the highest ecstasy of first love, or of farewell or reunion, or even when you want to give verbal expression to harmonic chords and sounds. How much you would then like to express in a word! However, your language has to be satisfied at most with a look full of bliss, a handshake, an embrace. For your words are too poor and unable to express in the least what stands written in flaming letters of spirit in your soul and culminates in the word "love" but cannot be described exactly.

Since all this can only too often be proved from your own experiences, you can conclude from it that you human beings are not the last on the great gamut of spirits and that there are many levels above you. Likewise, that your language is not the ultimate one, and that there are still other modes of expression of which you can have no conception while you are still souls encased in matter.

You must always keep in mind that the more your spiritually sharpened eyes can absorb, the greater, more blissful things, and the more wonders of a spirit-world will one day unfold before you, the more words you will need to give proper expression to them. So, the higher the understanding, the more spiritual the language, since it is then no longer a matter of outer form, but of spiritual content.

As I said at first, it is the same process that makes the seed grow out of the plant and the plant out of the seed. So also, in the great cosmic realm of spiritual intelligence, one language develops from another. It always progresses in accordance with the spiritual requirements, beginning with the corrupted dialect of the rural population and ending with the purest expression of an educated person.

This difference, though here only briefly touched upon, is in the spiritual sense in the mode of expression, in the way of speaking among intellectual

beings, a great, vast one without limits. For language, being an expression of spiritually infinite concepts, can and must also be infinite in its scope as to amplification and perfection.

Thus, language is not, as the scholars believe, a fabrication contrived by linguists, but an inheritance from other worlds. In most cases much had to be omitted, either because the spiritual capacity of the people did not require it, or because even the surrounding nature and the cultural level on earth differed from those existing on the globes from where your migrating spirits had brought these language elements.

It is always human pride which believes people have done everything; that they knew how to graft plants, to lift animals to higher levels, if it were only possible, even to the human level. All these people believe themselves to be able to contrive, without considering that that which I created can neither be refined nor better cultivated by them.

In every single word there is already hidden so much profundity, so much significance that only a profound thinker can surmise it without, however, being able to ever fathom it. How much more in the whole edifice of a language, where, without man's innate spiritual gift for expression, the linguists would certainly often be in doubt as to how to denote an action in all its possible modifications.

Rest assured, none of your professors would ever have been capable of inventing even the verb "to be" with all its conjugations.

Just reflect on what you have been told and you will easily realize that it is a different matter whether one investigates an existing language or invents a new one without imitating old languages. This is an impossibility for you human beings.

This is why I had this word given to you, namely that you may recognize from it how small, how limited your knowledge is and how wrong the pride of your learned people. For, seen in the right light, you have achieved very little in your own tight, but most of it is My gift of grace. It sees further and has everywhere and always known what it is doing, how it achieves it at the right time, and what means to employ.

The spiritual element inherent in the material nature is also present in the language since the same is meant to be capable of serving one day as mode of expression to the spiritually evolved or reborn person.

Hence, this language must carry everything within it so as to fulfill this requirement, and for this reason language with its grammar or structure is formed so rationally and logically that for a reborn person there is always the right word available for a certain concept.

Since all human beings are meant one day to be reborn, so as to populate the future spiritualized earth, also their language must gradually adapt itself to these spiritual requirements and spiritualize itself so that, finally, for the most exalted feelings corresponding expressions may exist in the language.

Millions of worlds and millions of years had to pass, during which the languages had to prepare themselves for the future. Whole generations are only now reaping the advantage of being able to express in a well-structured verbal or written language what is suitable for their spiritual requirement and will not only benefit the now living, but also their later descendants.

Thus, also this word shall give you proof that the grace of your Father does not fail to subdue your silly human pride and to give you means by which to understand the spiritual cosmic realm, where after all that has been heard, seen and felt, only the language, "the word" alone is given. In this way also others can be told what individual initiates, who had personal contact with the spirit-world, were given in many a solitary hour, when the love of the Father allowed the weak children to feel His grace and showed them how, eons of years ago, the seed was planted for that which only now is going to mature into a harvest. Amen. "

First Primordial Language - Sanskrit

Ref: The Great Gospel of John Vol. 4: ch129

Jesus is speaking: "O yes, the priests in Burma know this language **(Sanskrit), and it was this tongue which was the primordial language of the first people on this earth – your own, old Egyptian, and amongst others even that used by the Greeks – have their origin almost in their entirety in this one primitive language of mankind.** Do you think that you would understand Father Abraham, Isaac, or Jacob if they were to be here now talking as they once did? You would certainly not understand one word! You already have difficulty in understanding the writings of Moses, who was nearly a thousand years more recent than Abraham, so how much less would you comprehend the primordial fathers themselves! Indeed, there have been many changes for the Jews, including the language, but without the chaos of a second Tower of Babel. Do you also understand this?"

NOTE: The Sanskrit language has been the traditional means of communication in Hinduism, Jainism, Buddhism, and Sikhism. Sanskrit literature holds the privilege of being used in ancient poetry, drama, and sciences, as well as religious and philosophical texts. The language is believed to have been generated by observing the natural progression of sounds created in the human mouth, thus considering sound as an important element of language formation. This is one of the prime reasons why Sanskrit has been rich in poetry and its expressive quality of bringing out the best meaning through perfect sounds that are soothing to the human ear. Vedic Sanskrit also contains abstract nouns and philosophical terms which are not to be found in any other language. The consonants and vowels are flexible enough to be grouped together to express nuanced ideas. In all, the language is like an endless ocean without a base due to its reach, complexity, and hundreds of words to express a single meaning or object.

Was Adam the only Human Being Created by God?

BD No. 8236 of 08/10/1962 taken from book 87

Genetic evidence doesn't support the notion of all humans descending from one man and one woman, but rather from a population of individuals. Ref: Live Science By Tia Ghose October 30, 2014

God the Father is speaking: "But now the question will arise in you how the whole earth came to be populated with people. This is a valid question, for there were many original spirits when the first original spirit Adam embodied himself, and all of these original spirits wanted to continue their course of development

and engender themselves as souls in a human being because they knew that their final return to Me could only take place in this way. And I also gave human covers to those original spirits who consciously wanted to take the path across earth. I created a large number of human beings, for only one thought by Me sufficed and *every fully matured original spirit received its external form, and each form was physically created such that procreation would take place in accordance with My will.* But I restricted the regions of the first forefathers. You should understand that I allocated the prepared land to the human beings.

Yet the first people, Adam and Eve, had to take the test of will, and as a result of their fall the whole human race became weakened. The disobedience against My divine commandment had, due to My adverse spirit Lucifer, likewise arisen in those original spirits, and the hereditary sin, which consisted of changing the pure, divine love into selfish love, was repeated in these human beings too, for My adversary tempted all people, and his enticement succeeded because people still had too little knowledge of him who wanted to cause them to fall again. And people spread across the entire earth, but Adam was and remained nevertheless the founder of the human race, and people were informed of the descendants of his house and the following generations were recorded until the birth of Jesus, who descended to earth as a result of the inherited sin in order to redeem humanity.

Since Adam, after Lucifer, had been the first fallen original spirit, he was also the first to be embodied as a human being, and if he had observed My easy commandment, he very quickly would have shed his external form, and all other original spirits would soon have given up their resistance as well, they unconditionally would have given themselves to Me, and their return to Me would have been guaranteed. Yet his disobedience was another opposition to Me, it was a repetition of the first sin of rebellion against Me. However, owing to Adam's fall Lucifer had regained power, and he used it on each generation which, being as weak as Adam did not resist and remained weak until Jesus arrived in order to help them.

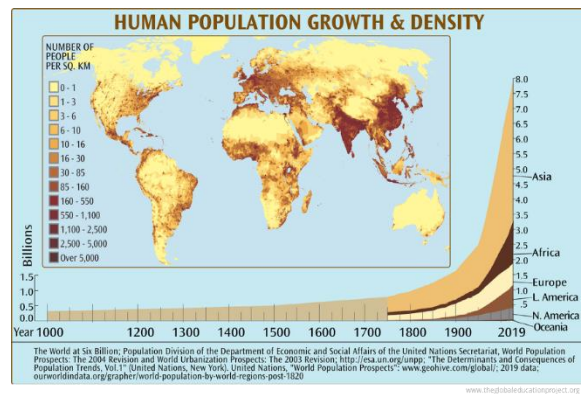
You humans should know that I populated the whole earth because many of the fully matured original spirits desired their last embodiment on earth and because every one of these original spirits was entitled to undertake the final test of will within the human being. There were a large number of them, and everyone had many followers, original spirits which had followed him and time and again joined him again. And for all these I chose the living conditions which suited their various inclinations, and thus, having created its human external form, I placed every original spirit appropriately, consequently reproducing himself corresponding to My will and My natural law. The procreation method was the same everywhere, which is why I always joined the original spirit with a second spirit.

Thus, the creative act of the first human being was repeated time and again in regions which were inaccessible for the individual human tribes, for My creation of the earth had been so comprehensive that the process of further development everywhere necessitated the original spirits to incarnate in the human being and for this I created the first prerequisites. And only after a long period of time had passed did the various tribes make contact with each other. Their spiritual

development, however, had advanced entirely differently, all depending on the degree of love within each person. But they all can be instructed by Me Myself when their resistance diminishes and My commandments are heeded again, and the human souls will come to full maturity, for the divine Redeemer Jesus Christ accomplished the act of Salvation for all human beings, and the knowledge of it can also be brought to all human beings through people or through the working of My spirit. Nevertheless, Adam's direct descendants will accept this knowledge more easily and hence belong to the human generation which will find redemption while still on earth, so that the souls will be able to become free while still on earth if they accept Jesus Christ's act of Salvation Who, apart from the original sin, also took Adam's past sin upon Himself and thus purchased humanity's salvation from My adversary through His death on the cross."

Human Population Growth

Note: If you watch the following video, you will notice that starting in the year 1917, the year of Fatima, the world population grew from 1.5 billion people to a staggering 9.5 billion by 2020 and is still climbing. It's the greatest increase in human population since the world began! This all relates to Pope Leo XIII dream where Satan asked the Lord for more power and time to try the Church. The power was to feed the world from the tree of knowledge where an excess in knowledge would create a godless society and the time was 100 years where Satan would reach his zenith, both were accomplished:



<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=PUwmA3Q0 OE>

Jesus is speaking: "The human will to have children is, however, mostly due to love for each other, and it is of great advantage for the incarnating soul if this love prevails because the spark of love leaps into the new-born being and it can gain spiritual maturity on earth much easier. Nevertheless, the effort to avoid descendants can be harmful to the souls who are willing to incarnate, in as much as people's sexuality adds to the same urges in the new being whose soul consequently constantly has to fight against them during its earthly life. Souls who cannot incarnate nevertheless stay close to people and trouble them, i.e. they try to influence people to unite for the purpose of procreation. Understandably, in that case physical desires will always be stronger since souls only try to influence people along the lines of their inclination; they just want to transfer physical lusts to get the opportunity for their own embodiment. Consequently, people who unite sexually without love shoulder a tremendous responsibility as they are surrounded by souls who want to incarnate, and their lust attracts equally disposed souls who use these uninhibited moments to occupy a newly created being which now starts its earthly path of life as a human being. And such souls are mainly predominant because only a few souls entered life as a result of love and a conscious will for

descendants. For this reason, human generations will become consistently less spiritual because there is little love between people who were also born without love." Ref: BD No. 2795 of 07/03/1943 taken from book 37

This lack of love in the parents who have children born without love will be more receptive to use birth control or abortion with no remorse. They are the new Cain's!

Will for Descendants - waiting souls.

BD No. 2795 of 07/03/1943 taken from book 37

God the Father is speaking: "Countless souls are waiting for embodiment and thus new generations have to arise time and again. Human beings have to be born all the time so that souls can occupy their bodies during their final period of development on earth. Hence people's willingness is always necessary for the embodiment of a soul, and at the same time it is also an act of love for the unredeemed soul if people offer it the opportunity for its final incarnation on earth. ***Only the will to awaken a new life should be the reason for a union between a man and a woman; without this will the bodily function, which is only intended for the awakening of a human life, is unlawfully performed. Many sins are committed in this respect, i.e. the divine will is not taken into account, the body is not educated to carry out its correct task and subsequently many souls wait in vain and cannot incarnate even though they have the degree of development which permits an earthly embodiment.*** These souls remain close to earth and try to persuade people to unite, especially people who are in love, since love has to be the motivating force for a union to bring forth new life. Love between two human beings is essential to give the awakened soul during its short time on earth the opportunity to achieve the kind of maturity which will result in its entrance into the realm of light. A loveless union provides the opportunity for embodiment to those souls whose bad instincts are still particularly strong and who, as a result, have to struggle considerably during their earthly life to overcome these instincts.

The human will to have children is, however, mostly due to love for each other, and it is of great advantage for the incarnating soul if this love prevails because the spark of love leaps into the new-born being and it can gain spiritual maturity on earth much easier. Nevertheless, the effort to avoid descendants can be harmful to the souls who are willing to incarnate, in as much as people's sexuality adds to the same urges in the new being whose soul consequently constantly has to fight against them during its earthly life. Souls who cannot incarnate nevertheless stay close to people and trouble them, i.e. they try to influence people to unite for the purpose of procreation. Understandably, in that case physical desires will always be stronger since souls only try to influence people along the lines of their inclination; they just want to transfer physical lusts to get the opportunity for their own embodiment. Consequently, people who unite sexually without love shoulder a tremendous responsibility as they are surrounded by souls who want to incarnate, and their lust attracts equally disposed souls who use these uninhibited moments to occupy a newly created being which now starts its earthly path of life as a human being. ***And such souls are mainly predominant because only few souls entered life as a result of love and a conscious will for descendants. For this reason, human generations will become consistently less***

spiritual because there is little love between people who were also born without love."

Who was Embodied in Adam?

BD No. 7463 of 11/26/1959 taken from book 79



God the Father is speaking: "And one of those fallen original spirits was Adam, whose soul was entitled to embody itself as a human being due to its maturity, but this nevertheless did not protect him from falling for a second time, because once again his free will failed, but not because he was too weak to make the right decision."

God the Father is speaking: "You will always be directed correctly by My spirit and mentally guided into truth. I have given you this promise, and it will come to pass as soon as you want to be instructed by Me Myself through the spirit. For My spirit in you is My share, it therefore knows all that which you would like to know. In the beginning only supremely perfect spirits existed, for My tireless spirit of love created them for its own happiness. This spirit of love yearned to receive the same love in return, It yearned for a like-natured being, and possessing it initiated the act of creation, insofar as that this being came forth from Me first. From then on I wanted to share with it the bliss of creating, because it is extraordinarily blissful for a perfect being to time and again create through its will and strength the same beings in all magnificence and constant urge to love, which thus resulted in creating. And My first-created being, Lucifer or the bearer of light, experienced the pleasure of creating in the same way, and it was inconceivably happy. I allowed it complete freedom, for it was devoted to Me in profound and purest love, I did not limit its creative power since My strength of love constantly permeated this first created being and because its will, too, was entirely free but nevertheless utterly concurred with Mine, because its love for Me shone brightly to the highest degree. Consequently, only like-natured, supremely perfect beings were able to emerge from this bond of love, beings, which were true images of Me Myself, just as the first-created spirit had been in the beginning. When the division of his will started, when Lucifer, in full possession of strength and light, began to compare himself with Me, when his love occasionally lessened and a certain amount of selfish love broke through, it also occasionally lessened the bright shine of his nature, and this affected the beings as well. Nevertheless, these beings had been created through his will and thus My permeation of strength, they equally still emerged in supreme perfection but now and then also started to direct their will wrongly, since it was and remained completely free in all beings which arose from our mutual will and strength. The beings took on the nature of their creator

but since My strength of love was their fundamental substance, they were also divinely natured; they were perfect because nothing imperfect can emerge from Me and My strength, however, free will is part of a perfect being and this was able to develop in every direction.

Thus, it cannot be said that the beings were forced to conform to their creator's nature, because the strength from Me, which was always involved in the creative process, always guaranteed that, after the first being was created, nothing inferior would emerge from its creator's will, because free will is bestowed upon every being and this required every being to experience its own test of will. And this free will resulted in the fact that the fall into the abyss also included beings which emerged from us first, whose intense light of love should never have allowed for it but who misused their free will just as Lucifer, the bearer of light himself, whose exceedingly magnificent nature should never have come to fall because he possessed brightest realization. But for this reason, his (Lucifer's) fall has to be condemned even more just like the fall of those first beings, just as, the other way round, the later created beings stood firm and detached themselves from him (Lucifer) when they were allowed to use their right of self-determination and chose their Lord. *And one of those fallen original spirits was Adam, whose soul was entitled to embody itself as a human being due to its maturity, but this nevertheless did not protect him from falling for a second time, because once again his free will failed, but not because he was too weak to make the right decision. He wanted to be greater than God.* That was his original sin, and it was the renewed sin in paradise. And I wanted to create children for Myself who see their Father in Me and after whose love I longed, because My immeasurable love constantly desires reciprocation. This love was the basis for My whole act of creation, the creation of all original spirits and later of earthly-material creations, because I want to attain this love one day, if only after an infinitely long time. Time and again I try to make you humans understand the magnitude and profundity of My love, yet as long as you have not become love yourselves, as long as you have not shaped yourselves such that My strength of love can permeate you again as in the beginning, you will be unable to comprehend the depth of My love. However, you should know that you are able to touch My heart, that I will fulfill your every wish, that I guide you into truth and bestow light upon you because I know that only light causes happiness, because light originates from love and you possess all My love, even if you are unable to feel it. But time and again I will provide you with the evidence of it."

God Breathed a Living Soul into Adam

God the Father is speaking: "But the life in you is actually nothing but My breath in you or My perfect image in every human being. And as I am forever and perpetually in a state of the clearest awareness of My very own most perfect life, thus every created being has for you an incomprehensibly tiny part of this life of Mine which keeps it fully alive for its particular needs. However, all life



is of such a nature that it can constantly increase and grow thanks to My incessant flowing in; and the more life has grown the more perfectly it manifests. But life becomes aware of itself only when it receives with the little spark of love also a little spark of the light of grace out of God. With this light the existent life recognizes its being and becomes freely aware of itself. When this life is not only aware of itself, *but becomes also aware of its eternal, holy origin*, offers Him thanks, praise, love and adoration and recognizes the will of the One Who created it, only then does it become completely free and with this knowledge through love a child of eternal Love and eternal Life; and only through this life will it arrive at the clearest awareness of itself and a living awareness of the One Who is now carrying you on His arm." Ref: "The House of God" by Jakob Lorber Chapter 185

God the Father is speaking: "My eternal plan of Salvation intends to bring about the deification of your souls, which indeed had once been divine and perfect beings, yet they forfeited this perfection of their own free will. You humans should know that I did not externalize you from Me as imperfectly as you are now, that I undeniably created the human form, but the soul, which animates this human form, had already spent an infinitely long time of changing its voluntarily fashioned, completely wrong state to such an extent that it was able to dwell in the human form in order to attain complete deification again. You must know that I did not create you imperfectly to then demand of you as human beings to perfect yourselves, because nothing imperfect can emerge from Me. Once you are in possession of this knowledge you will also consider your earthly existence from a different point of view. You will realize that it is not an end in itself but the means to an end. However, as long as you are lacking this knowledge you justifiably believe that you may use your earthly life purely for the sake of improving your physical well-being. You believe that you may use your energy of life purely physically, even if you aspire to the goal that every individual person should improve himself ethically in order to achieve a better human race. But you don't understand the spiritual task of the individual yet. *The human being himself is not the final goal, the existence as a human being is merely the final opportunity on this earth to reach the highest goal.* And the teaching that I 'created man so that he should love Me, be of service to Me, in order to thereby enter Heaven' is only justified if the human existence is looked upon as a limited stage for the soul which once became imperfect, otherwise this teaching will lead to wrong ideas, such as the one that something 'imperfect', the soul, was joined to the human being at birth, that thus something imperfect was brought to life by Me. This not only confuses the image of My nature, which is supremely perfect, but also people's train of thought, who do not grasp their actual task on earth and will therefore be increasingly more worldly orientated because a wrong concept is being developed in them.

Although through love for Me and selfless service the human being could indeed be able to attain the right realization and subsequently beatitude, it will nevertheless prevent love being kindled towards a Being which uses its creative strength for the emergence of imperfect creations; and even selfless service lacks the right motivation if people are unaware of the perfect spirits' former apostasy from Me, which consisted of the fact that they wanted to rule with arrogance, hence they discarded the principle of love. Their imperfection was caused by the

beings themselves. However, the fact that you are imperfect as a human being cannot be doubted, and therefore you must first try to ascertain the reason for your imperfection and not be satisfied with the explanation that I created you the way you are on earth now. **But the latter is endorsed by all those who portray the act of creation of the human being such that a 'soul' is 'created' at the same time for this human being, which they deem they can justify on account of the Words 'God breathed a living soul into him.'** *The fact that this living soul is a formerly fallen original spirit is not known to them, but this knowledge could be discovered by every individual person if only he seriously questioned the meaning and purpose of earthly life and his task on earth.* And even a misguided teaching could make a person question, if only he wanted to gain clarification. And especially the teachers who guide people should first attain clarification themselves, which they can receive at any time by merely turning to Me Myself if slight doubts, which everyone can feel arise within himself during deliberation, would make them turn to the right source, where purest trust will refresh anyone who desires it. The reason why there is so much darkness amongst people that misguided teachings were able to spread is due to people's indifference towards the truth, for it is available and within reach for everyone who seriously desires the truth. Yet only a few try to penetrate My eternal plan of Salvation, but for them everything is obvious, and they are brightly enlightened because the Light of eternity Itself kindles it in all those who want to escape the darkness." BD No. 6599 of 07/19/1956 taken from book 71

Creation of Eve - Genesis 3:21-24

So, The Lord God cast a deep sleep on the man, and while he was asleep, he took out one of his ribs and closed up its place with flesh. The Lord God then built up into a woman the rib that he had taken from the man. When he brought her to the man, the man said: "This one, at last, is bone of my bones and flesh of my flesh; This one shall be called 'woman,' for out of 'her man' this one has been taken."



That is why a man leaves his father and mother and clings to his wife, and the two of them become one body.

Creation of Eve

Ref: MV - Epistle of St Paul to the Romans: 142-162

Jesus is speaking: "When man awoke from his first sleep and found his companion by his side, he felt that his happiness had been rendered complete by God. It was already very great beforehand. Everything in Adam and around Adam had been made so that he could enjoy complete happiness, healthy and holy, and the delight that is Eden was not only around but also *within* Adam. The garden full of plant, animal, and marine beauty surrounded him; however, within him, a garden of spiritual beauty blossomed with every kind of virtue, ready to mature

into fruits of holy perfection; and there was the Tree of Knowledge suited to his state, and the tree of the Supernatural Life: Grace; neither were the precious waters of the divine spring missing which divided itself into four branches and always sprinkled the virtues of man with a new wave so that they could grow gigantically and turn him even more so into a faithful mirror of God.

As a natural creature, he enjoyed what he saw: the beauty of a virgin world that just a short while ago had come from the will of God; he enjoyed what he could: his dominion over the lower creatures. Everything had been placed by God at the service of man: from the sun to the insect so that everything would be a delight to him.

As a supernatural creature, he enjoyed - reasoning and most gentle ecstasy - the understanding of the Essence of God: Love; of the relationships of love between the Immense One who gave Himself and the creature who loved by adoring Him. Genesis veils this faculty of man and this communicating to him by God in the phrase: 'having heard the voice of God walking in Eden in the cool of the evening.'

As much as the Father had given knowledge to His adoptive children proportioned to their state, He still continued to teach them. Because infinite is the love of God, and after having yearned to give again, and so much more does He give, the more the creature is a daughter to Him. God always gives Himself to the one who gives himself generously to Him.

Therefore, when man awoke and saw the woman made in his likeness, he felt that his happiness, as a creature, was complete by having all the humanity and all the super-humanity, being that the Love gave Himself to the love of man."

The Creation of Eve – Adams rib!

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol.4: ch162 by Jakob Lorber

Jesus is speaking: "Your comments on Moses are not so wide of the mark, if measured on the scale of current earthly comprehension but, in the judgment of the spirit, Moses is something entirely different than he appears to you to be in your criticism of the text. Furthermore, comparing the texts of the two versions, the first one does not differ too much from the second, as you suggested, since the later text is more of a commentary on the earlier text and more accurately describes the ways and means - even if it is the spiritual path that is chosen – which brought about the creation of man.



The way creation should be understood in terms of nature, I have even tonight already explained, as far as it is necessary for you to grasp. Furthermore, Mathael who is quite familiar with comparative science has explained to you yesterday how Moses' scriptures should be understood; and I must again comment, My friend Cyrenius, that you really have a very short memory! A while ago I refreshed your memory, so that you are able to explore more freely with it, if you really wish. However, with regard to your doubts about the description of the

creation of man as set down by Moses, I will only add a few pointers to set you off in the right direction so that you and a few others as well, can use them to work out the real truth of the matter.

You should consider that everything that Moses is saying and wishes to say in his description of creation refers solely and primarily to the upbringing and spiritual development of the first humans in general, and it therefore applies by inference to the very first human couple as well.

Furthermore, Adam's body has been created and given its shape in accordance with My Will and My established ordinance, as I have shown you a short time ago, using the ethereal elements of the finest clay on this earth. Once My Will had charged up his body with a wealth of experience and when it had reached the necessary level in its physical strength which compels it to transform itself into a fully active external sphere of life and when finally he fell into a deep sleep, exhausted by work and travel, only then had the moment arrived for a natural soul embracing all the levels in the natural world which are familiar to you, to enter the external sphere of Adam's life.

This soul, finding itself to be in the external sphere of his life, immediately began to create from the very attractive external elements in Adam's life sphere, or from the extremely rich vapors of life itself - just as even today the souls of some dead people will do if they seek to make a final brief appearance before mankind - and thus created a suitable companion in accordance with My will and My ordinances, a work completed within three days.

When Adam awoke, he was full of amazement and happiness seeing his image beside him, which of course was well disposed towards him as it had to be because its body originated from his own being.

However, he felt a pressure in the area of his heart even if it was quite a pleasant sensation and at times, he also had an empty feeling - this was the beginning of sexual love - and he could never distance himself from the image which was giving him so much pleasure. Wherever he went, the woman followed him, and wherever she went, he was quite unable to let her go alone. He appreciated the woman's value and her love and therefore said to her in a clairvoyant moment: 'We, I as a man and you as a woman grown from my rib (near my heart) in accordance with God's plan, are therefore one flesh and one body. You are the most treasured part of my life, and so it shall remain, for man will leave his father and mother (the man's seriousness and care) and will cling to his wife!'

Where it is written that God covered the part of Adam with flesh when he removed his rib, hopefully none of you will be so stupid as to assume that God seriously wounded Adam by cutting away a rib in order to make a large woman from it. The ribs are an outer, rigid defensive shield to protect the soft, internal organs of life.

When David said: 'God is our strong fortress and reliable shield!', did he mean that God is really a solid castle build with bricks, or a large body shield made of metal?!

The same thinking applies to the rib from which Eve was made! The rib is only symbolic of the true essence of the matter which is Adam's powerful love of life. That rib, which serves as a shield in this life, was chosen by Moses in his

writings for the following reasons – firstly, since it protects life in man's environment as his outer shield, it can therefore represent this quality figuratively and, secondly, because later on a good, faithful and loving woman can also be regarded as a shield to shelter and protect her man's life, an apt metaphor for her man's rib – and finally the ethereal aura emanating from external life is also a very powerful shield to guard the natural life of the inner soul, without which no human could survive for longer than a few moments.

Now this Eva, to judge from her tender physical presence, was created from the exceedingly abundant ethereal aura of active life surrounding Adam and as this aura comes from the area of the ribs and the chest cavity and then surrounds a man in all directions for a considerable distance, Moses, who fluently made use of appropriate imagery in his language, was quite right to have Eve originate from Adam's rib and to have God cover the wound with her flesh. Eve was truly flesh which had its origin in the ethereal aura of Adam's physical life and it was God's intention to replace the portion which Adam had now lost. He therefore healed the wound with Eve's flesh which was very acceptable to Adam and was in fact also his own flesh."

Deliverance from Selflove to Rebirth

Ref: The Household of God by Jacob Lorber Chapter 7

Jesus is speaking: "And behold and comprehend what until now no one has beheld and comprehended: Eternal Love took that number out of Itself, and the number was the order and the eternal law within It, out of which and within which eternal Love has forever existed, is still existing and will be existing in all the might and power of the holiness of God. And It took clay, which is like the cream of the coagulated milk, and with the hand of Its might and the hand of Its power, according to the number of Its order, formed the first man and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life. And the breath became a living soul within him, and the soul fully pervaded the man who was made in accordance with the number of the order from which all the spirits had been made and the worlds in the spaces of infinity, the earth and everything on it, and the moon and the sun.

And lo, this first man on earth, who came forth from the hands of the might and power of eternal Love, was called by the mouth of merciful grace 'Adam', or 'Son of Mercy and Grace'.

Now take good note of this: This Adam was in the place of the first of the fallen spirits. It was not shown to him who he was, and since he did not recognize himself and could not find anything that was like him, he became bored.

And behold, imperceptible to the still blind eyes of his soul, eternal Love breathed on him and for the first time he fell asleep within the sweetness of merciful Love, whereupon merciful Love formed in the heart of Adam, as though in a pleasant dream, a figure, similar to him, of great charm and beauty.

And eternal Love saw what great joy Adam experienced through the inner contemplation of his second self. Then merciful Love touched him on the side where he had been given a heart, similar to the heart of the Deity, for the reception of love and life from the love in God. Thereby It took away his self-love in order to prepare a dwelling-place for Itself through the future law of merciful grace and set the selflove, which gave Adam so much pleasure, outside of him in a material

body and called it "Caiva" or, as you are used to say, 'Eve'. This was in preparation of the deliverance from self-love to rebirth.

And behold, merciful Love touched him and awakened him for the contemplation of his self-love outside of him and saw that he had great delight in the contemplation of his love outside of him and was extremely cheerful. And this love, which was now called 'Eve', had pleasure in the man Adam, bent towards him and followed his every movement.

And behold, eternal Love addressed Adam for the first time: 'Adam!' -And he spoke for the first time: 'Here I am, Lord of Glory, Might and Power!'

And eternal Love spoke again: 'Behold your helpmate!' -And 'Eve' answered: 'Behold, O Lord, the maid lying obediently at the feet of Your son and awaiting his orders!'

And behold, merciful Love found great pleasure in the works of Its might and power through the grace of Its mercy and continued to speak and instruct them in all things, teaching them to know, to name and how to use them. And when they understood and knew all things and were able to use them, merciful Love again spoke to them: 'Now you have learnt of all things, you know them and are able to use them, except for one thing, and this I will now teach you and put into you the power to procreate and reproduce your kind. But you are not allowed to use it before My return when I find you clothed with the garment of obedience, humility, faithfulness, and chastity. However, woe upon you if I find you naked; I shall cast you out, and the consequence will be death!'"

The Fall

Ref: The House of God by Jakobe Lorber Chapter 8

Jesus is speaking: "Thereupon eternal Love covered Its face and withdrew for a certain time in accordance with the number of orders, was blind out of the depth of Its mercy and would not, and could not, know what the newly created would do in the judgment of the Deity for their freedom-test during the short time on earth through the love of mercy. *And the place that was given them as a dwelling-place was a valley and a garden on the firm part of the earth and was called Paradise. That was the land which later abounded with milk and honey and was the place which in the great Time of times, when eternal Love performed the greatest of Its acts, was called - and will forever be called - 'Bethlehem'. This was the spot where the eternal Word bodily in the flesh saw for the first time the light of Its grace shine upon the drop of mercy from the distant sun, the moon and all the stars.*

And behold, their desire kept growing in the judgment of the Deity testing them in Its wrath. There was a tree standing in the garden bearing the most beautiful apples, and Eve felt a great desire for them and said to Adam: 'Look, Adam, I feel a great desire for this fruit. If you want it, I shall pick one and taste it and then hand it to you as a first gift from my hand.'

And Adam was silent, pondering the words of Eve. And an inner voice, which was holy as it came from the Deity within him, spoke to him: "If you eat from the fruit of this tree, you shall die!" This gave Adam such a fright that he was unable to answer his beloved Eve.

And the desire rose within Eve, drew her beneath the tree and made her pick an apple from it. Adam now felt that Eve had become disloyal to his heart. He became saddened and said:

'Eve, Eve, what are you doing! The Lord of might, power and life has not yet blessed us. You are holding the fruit of death in your hand; throw it away, that we may not die in our nakedness before the Lord of justice!'

And behold, the earnestness of Adam frightened Eve in her desire, and she let the fruit of death drop to the ground. And she was freed from her desire and Adam was very pleased at being liberated from the deadly snares of Eve's desire.

But behold, the desire Eve had banned from her heart was now lying on the ground and through the might of the condemning wrath of the Deity formed into the shape of a great serpent; it took the fruit of death into its jaws, crept up the tree, twisted round it and all its branches and twigs from the root to the top and kept staring at Eve. Eve saw it and gazed at the serpent, and through Eve also Adam became aware of it, but he did not see the serpent as yet.

And behold, Eve approached the serpent and gazed with great delight at its seductive movements around the tree and the opalescent colors of its cold scaly skin.

The serpent, however, moved and placed the apple into the lap of the now sitting Eve, lifted its head and spoke to Eve as follows:

'Eve, behold the daughter you have cast out, winding round the tree of your desire. Do not reject the small gift I have put into your lap but enjoy without fear the fruit of your love; not only will you not die, but you will be filled with the knowledge of all life about God Whom you fear, whereas He is weaker than you!' And lo, the tongue of the serpent split into two and became more pointed than an arrow. The serpent bent its head towards Eve's breast as though it would kiss her after the manner of a child, but it sank its two venomous fangs into the breasts of Eve, and Eve recognized herself in the serpent.

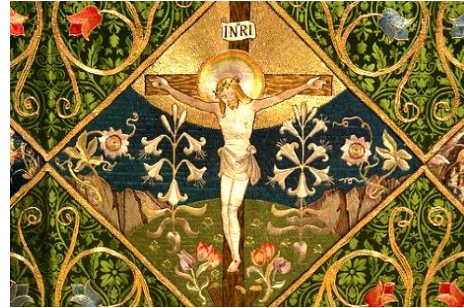
Now also Adam became aware of what was going on under the tree, and he was delighted with the second Eve, not realizing that it was only a serpent. And behold, he too became enflamed with desire and, lusting for the second Eve, took the fruit from the lap of Eve, became disloyal to his love and enjoyed the forbidden fruit from the body of Eve lustfully. And in this enjoyment, he recognized himself as the First who was lost because of the great conceit of his blind self-love in the kingdom of light of eternal Love and that he had fallen into the sea of wrath of the forever inexorably slaying Deity.

And now behold, as he thus recognized himself, and so did the deluded Eve through him, great remorse rose from the bottom of his heart and Eve was ashamed when she became aware of her nakedness and that of Adam, and in her great dismay she covered her nakedness with leaves from a fig tree. Adam too stretched out his hands for the leaves to cover his nakedness, hid himself in a cave and shed tears of great grief; and Eve hid herself behind a thorn bush and grieved bitterly over her guilt of seduction."

The "Tree of Life" and "The Tree of Knowledge"

MV - Epistle of St Paul to the Romans: 142-162

[Note: As we go forward, we should try to understand why the forbidden tree was called "The Tree of Knowledge?" Why not call it "The Tree of Sin" or perhaps "The Tree of Disobedience" or better still, "The Tree of Death?" Projecting out in time, Satan is going to visit the "Tree of Knowledge" again and the consequences of that visit will be devastating to all mankind.]



"The only limitation placed by God on the immense possessions of man was the prohibition to eat of the fruits from the Tree of Knowledge of good and evil. This would have been a useless harvest, and unjustified, for man already had that knowledge which was necessary for him, and a measure superior to that established by God could only cause harm.

Consider: God does not prohibit to eat of the fruits from the Tree of Life because man had a natural need for these in order to live a healthy and long existence until a more living divine desire of revealing Himself totally to the adoptive son would make God pronounce the following, **Son, ascend to my dwelling place and submerge yourself into your God,** a call, without suffering of death, to be celestial Paradise.

The Tree of Life that is encountered at the beginning of the Book of the Great Revelation (Genesis 2:9 and 3:22) and that is found again at the end of the Book of the Great Revelation: the Bible (Apocalypse of John 22:2,14) is a figure of the Incarnate Word - whose fruit, the Redemption, hung from the wood of the cross - of that Jesus Christ is the Bread of Life, the Fount of Living Water, Grace, and who has given you Life with His Death, and you can always eat and drink of Him in order to live the life of the just and have eternal Life.

God does not prohibit Adam from eating of the fruits from the Tree of Life; however, he forbids from eating those useless ones from the Tree of Knowledge. *Because an excess of knowledge would have awoken pride in man, who would then have believed himself to be equal to God on account of his newly acquired knowledge.* And he would have foolishly believed himself capable of being able to possess it without danger, with the consequent rising of an abusive right of self-judgment of his own actions and of acting, consequently, by trampling on every duty of filial obedience towards His Creator - given that, at this point, he was similar to Him in knowledge - His Creator who had lovingly showed him right and wrong, directly or by infused grace and knowledge."

The Lord's Judgement

Ref: The House of God by Jakobe Lorber Chapter 9

Jesus is speaking: "And behold, eternal Love through the might and power of Its mercy withdrew the hand of might and the hand of power from Its eyes of an enlightening grace, and the light of grace substantially penetrated the cave where Adam was weeping and behind the thornbush where Eve was grieving.

And Adam's tears were preserved in the bosom of the earth and were -and are - called 'Thummim' or stones, out of which symbolically reflects the light of the

seven spirits of God. And they became solid through the light of grace from the warmth of Love, like his honest repentance, as a permanent monument to enlightening wisdom. And they were scattered over the entire earth as comforting signs for the future rebirth, which is to be like the tears of Adam, capable of the reception and most beautiful reflection of the great light from the mercy of eternal Love's sea of grace, and they shall resist the hardest possible temptations of the world.

And the tears of the grieving Eve behind the thornbush were preserved in the earth and were colored like her justified blush of shame for misusing the hallowed love of Adam within her.

And eternal Love saw that each of these tears of Eve was righteous before Adam, the son of merciful Love. And the warmth of eternal Love hardened these tears to little stones, and their name was "Urim", as a symbolic sign of Eve's just tears. And lo, a tear dropped on the thornbush that sheltered her, and this was a tear of lost innocence. It colored the otherwise white flower of the bush, and its flowers became reddened as a sign of the lost innocence of Eve. And though people know by now already all the plants on earth, they are not aware of their true meaning in spirit and in truth and they will not know and understand this until they have attained to their rebirth, which is the mercy of eternal Love through the grace of salvation within them.

And now behold a further secret, which still has to be understood because of the wicked arrogance of the children of the world. And lo, two flowers of the bush were fructified by Eve's just tear for her innocence and they faithfully preserved this blessing of eternal Love through all the storms of the times during the great wars of Jehovah with the nations of the earth and made fertile the wife of Abraham at the time of the release of grace from above, foreshadowing the great work of merciful Love; and made fertile the wife of Zechariah towards the actual completion of the greatest of all acts of the eternal God's merciful Love.

And now turn your eyes back again to Adam and Eve, visit them with Me and see how I, eternal Love, found them naked, forlorn, weeping and grieving in just repentance and shame. And I called Adam out and drew forth Eve.

And behold, they dared not look at their Father, for they were frightened by a great thunder of the deadly judgment from the depth of the Deity's wrath.

The flames of the anger of God, the Infinite, rolled frighteningly through all the endless spaces down to earth where the great Love was now abiding with Its repentant and grieving fallen children, created by Its merciful grace.

And behold, there was a fierce struggle between merciful Love, that showed again compassion for the repentant and grieving created beings, and the angry Deity wishing to destroy everything for the atonement of Its incorruptible holiness.

For the flames of anger of the wrathful Deity rushed down to earth faster than flashes of lightning, penetrated its center and ignited it in all directions. And the consuming flames shot up to the moon, to the sun and even enveloped the stars. And lo, the whole of endless infinity became a sea of fire and terrible thunder rolled through all the endless spaces. The earth groaned, the sea roared, the moon wept, the sun lamented, and all the stars cried louder than all the

thunder in their extreme fear of eternal destruction, and their tremendous voices resounded from the endless depths of the wrath of the Deity, and exclaimed:

'Great sublime God, soothe Your extreme wrath and extinguish the destructive flames of Your most righteous anger and in Your holiness spare the innocent. For the fire of Your wrath will destroy the righteous and will destroy eternal Love within You and take You Yourself captive in the immense might and power of Your holiness.'

And see and hear with open eyes and ears what the angry Deity spoke. However, no one understood the words except eternal Love which, during the outbreak of the wrath of the Deity, protected the repentant, newly created couple on the groaning earth and prevented, thanks to the great might and power of Its grace, the angry flame of wrath from seizing Adam's place of repentance and Eve's place of grief.

Now hear and understand well the dreadful words of anger from the depths of the wrath of the Deity, which were as follows:

'What good is to Me the groaning and raving of the earth, the weeping of the moons, the lamenting of the suns and the wailing of the stars! For I am alone, forsaken by My Love, which has become faithless to Me and gone down to the earth to the twofold evil scum. What shall I do without It? Therefore, I shall destroy Its entire works from the foot and annihilate everything and leave nothing that in all the future Eternities of eternities might draw My Love away from Me. And I shall remain the only God forevermore as I was from the Eternity of eternities. And you, rotten structure created by My Love which became weak, tumble down into nothingness that I may find My Love '

And behold, thereupon the bonds of the creations in all the spaces of God's infinity loosed, and with a great thunder, with roaring, howling, raging, and rushing the ruins tumbled through the vast spaces towards the Depth of depths of their destruction, and this was the very earth which also was lying in ruins in the wide bosom of merciful Love.

The newly created trembled in fear at the terrible sight of this vast, horrifying scene of destruction, the magnitude of which no created spirit will ever be capable of conceiving in its fullness; for it was boundless.

And now behold and hear further what merciful Love then spoke and did. Perceive the words of Love in Its might and behold the great acts of mercy in their power, and hear and understand well the words spoken:

'Great almighty God in all Your might, power and holiness! Withdraw Your great wrath and extinguish the fire of Your all-destroying anger and hear in the stillness of Your holiness the words of Your eternal Love, which is the only life within You. It is eternal as You are and mighty and powerful as You out of It and It out of You. Do not destroy the life within It, and Yourself through It, but show mercy and let Love give You satisfaction and demand atonement for Your injured and offended holiness. No sacrifice shall be too great for Your Love, which You might demand from It for the eternal atonement of Your holiness!'

And now behold, hear, and understand well what happened thereupon and what the Deity answered. The fire became subdued, and from all the spaces blew a gentler breeze, still mixed with the roaring thunder of the flying debris from the dissolved worlds which, still burning, flashed like immense flashes of lightning

from one boundlessness to the other. And Love understood the thunder of God Who spoke with vehemence:

'I will place all the guilt upon You, like the debris of the worlds are cast upon the earth. You shall extirpate the offense caused to My holiness, which is the perpetual bond between Me and You. Behold, I curse the earth that no stain may defile My holiness and I might become an unholy God like You. And this curse shall be with Your guilt, which You have to bear and to extirpate for the sake of My holiness, washing the earth with Your blood from the curse of the disgrace through Adam's sin.'

And behold, hear and understand well what Love replied to this, speaking as follows: 'O great and most holy God of all might and power! It shall be done according to Your will!'

And lo, the fire suddenly died down on earth and in all the spaces of creation. The ruins of the destroyed suns, earths and moons were put together again through the might and power of Love that had been granted Its wish by the Deity, and they arranged themselves once more in the order in which they had been from the beginning of their existence. Yet they retained, as eternal evidence, the indelible traces of their former total destruction, like the stigmata of eternal Love, which later, in the great Time of times, bled on the cross for all creation.

Here and there also debris from other worlds remained lying on the surface, in the depths and in the seas of the earth for a sign of God's might and power and at the same time as eloquent witnesses of the immensely great acts of merciful Love.

And behold, hear and understand well what then happened. When eternal Love accepted the demands and thereby already in advance gave satisfaction to the great holiness of God, the Deity, with gentler rustling and blowing, again understood by Love alone, made known Its will and spoke softly as follows:

Behold, Your great mercy has arisen within Me and come before My all-seeing eyes, and in the stillness of My holiness have I recognized Your great sincerity and eternal faithfulness. I have counted Adam's tears of repentance and Eve's tears of grief and have become filled with compassion through Your great mercy.

And behold, I shall now withdraw My judgments and, as requested by you, let an abundance of mercy pour forth and repair the damage My judgments have caused. No one, except I alone, can do that, for no one is good but I, the holy Father, and this shall be My name forever. And You, My Love, are My Son, and the holiness, and the mightily all-effective bond of power between Us and all that has gone forth from Us, shall be the Holy Spirit and shall fill all the spaces of infinity forever and ever. Amen. This says the good and holy Father. Amen.

And now, My beloved Son, tell also the penitent and grieving couple - engraving it deeply into their hearts -that they shall faithfully keep the commandments of love and mercy to the end of their days, and at a time I have decreed I will send them a mediator between Me and them to redeem the great guilt and lighten the great and heavy burden of their disobedience.

Until then they shall abide in all patience and meekness, and the bread I will give them sparingly they shall eat gratefully by the sweat of their brow. And they shall never have enough, until the time of the mediator whom I will awaken from

their midst and who will be perfect and good, as We are perfect and good and holy forever.

And tell them also that I have withdrawn My judgments only for those who will conscientiously keep My strict commandments. But the trespassers are at the slightest transgression threatened with them forever in all the severity of the forever-holy truth.

This speaks the holy and only good Father through His Son, who is the eternal Love within Him, and through the Holy Spirit, as the active grace out of Us both, for the future forgiveness of the sin, which shall now make their bodies troublesome and keep killing them temporally for the attainment of life after the death of the body, subsequent to the time of the promised mediator.

This says the only holy and only good Father. Amen, amen, amen."

The Reconciliation of the Lord

Ref: The House of God by Jakobe Lorber Chapter10

Jesus is speaking: "Now behold, hear, comprehend, and understand well what eternal Love spoke and did. When the good and holy Father had completed His very serious speech, showing mercy, but threatening with judgment the transgressors of the law of supreme grace, giving death to sin, eternal Love was moved to the innermost depth of Its merciful heart and for the second time shed tears of compassion and tears of joy and bliss over the great and lenient grace of the so good and most holy Father and spoke with the deepest emotion of Its entire being to Adam and Eve:

You Adam have now seen the terrible judgments of God pass before your eyes, and Eve saw and perceived them through you. Now I shall open her eyes and ears also and she -as for as all who will be going forth from her according to the number of the stars in the Sky, according to the number of the grass on the earth and according to the number of the sand in the sea, which is endless -shall in the future see with her own eyes and hear with open ears what the Deity did in Its condemning wrath and what thereupon eternal Love did in Its infinite mercy.

I have engraved the law into your heart, as you shall also engrave it into the heart of Eve. And for a sign that shall remind you and all your descendants of God's judgments because of your sin, I will cause mountains to form here and there which shall burn alternately until the end of time. And I will leave you the flash of lightning to remind you of the destruction that once took place, always followed by thunder, which is too loudly proclaim to you the name of the great and mighty God in case you should -or could -ever forget Him.

And the tears of compassion, and those of joy over the great grace of the holy Father have I set for an eternal sign as a new creation around the wide expanse of the firmament, and they shall every night give light to the earth and shall refresh you in the twilight of life and proclaim the dawning day.

Now lift up your eyes to the sky and see them shine in manifold order and in manifold splendor. The ones sending forth a reddish light are to give evidence of My compassion and those giving a white light are for a sign of the joy over the great grace of the most holy and good Father. And the white-shimmering wide ribbon above the stars of compassion and joy -consisting also of stars of primordial times through the tear of Love, already then showing mercy to the

fallen spirits -which is drawn through the middle of the firmament, shall serve you as a sign of the eternal, holy bond between eternal Love that called you and everything that is into existence and the Deity that judges all things according to Its holiness.

And now Adam, and you Eve, too, look into My left eye, which is above My heart, facing your right eye and beaming at you mildly and mercifully. Behold, one more tear has formed in this eye, and it is bigger than all the ones that have already been shed from these eyes for you.

Where the great ribbon in the firmament appears to be parted, that is where you should always like to gaze with gratitude and be deeply moved. For this place shall serve you and all creation for a perpetual sign for your breach of faith with Me and My break at that time with the holiness of God because of compassion with you, and where the ribbon appears to be once more connected it shall remind you of the great mediation of eternal Love which is I from eternity, between the inviolable holiness of God and you who have sinned faithlessly before the countenance of His boundless holiness.

And behold, that is where this tear originated!

This tear will one day rise for you and your descendants as a beautiful morning star which will give light to the nations of the earth that will in times to come follow your penitent and grieving footsteps, will wash the stinking mire of sin from the earth and cleanse your tears of repentance and grief of the dirt of the serpent.

Now look here once more. I will let this tear drop upon a still white flower of this bush between the two already fructified flowers of Eve. And one day there shall go forth from it a pure woman who shall crush the serpent's head. Although the serpent will bite her heel, the venom shall not harm her. From her will go forth what is now before you: A bright morning-star for all the nations on earth that are of goodwill, and eternal judgment for all the stubborn children of the serpent.

And the spirits from the bosom of the Father's holiness will descend bodily upon the earth and proclaim to your children the great time and the manner in which He will come to you Who now is standing before you. You can still hear and see Him but will henceforth no longer hear and see Him till the coming promised by the holy Father through Me, as the eternal Love within Him.

Now you have learnt all you need to know to receive My blessing!

And so be blessed by the hand of might and the hand of power of the holy Father's eternal Love and the power of the Spirit, holy out of both of Us. Be fruitful and multiply and fill the earth with the living fruit of this blessing.

And every time you get close to each other because of this blessing, first offer your hearts to Me. If you fail to do this, the serpent, which is still alive and will be living forever in the wrath of the Deity, will spoil the fruit within you. And you, Eve, and all of your sex will instead of a blessed fruit bring forth a corrupt one. They will ruin the blessed children of light in great numbers and there will be no end to their rage and fury. Thus, you will pass on your sin to all, and your guilt will become evident until the great Time of times and also thereafter.

Let this offering of your hearts to receive My blessing and grace be for you a sacred service which you owe Me whenever you get close to each other for the sake of My blessing. This new and easy commandment, which you have just been

given from My mouth shall be the first church I am establishing for you in My memory; let it remind you of the acts of merciful Love, make you grateful and lead you back to the holy fear of God.

I will send you as a messenger from above a sinless spirit with a flaming sword in his hand that may guide you and show you the earth from one end to the other. He will enlighten you concerning the erring of the world but will also chastise you when you stray from My ways.

All this you are told by eternal Love in the name of the holy Father. Amen."

The Measure of God is Always Just

MV - Epistle of St Paul to the Romans: 142-162

"The measure of God is always just. He who wants more of what God has given to him is concupiscent, imprudent, and irreverent. He offends love. He who takes abusively is a thief and a violent [man]. He offends love. He who wants to act independently in every respect to the supernatural Law is a rebel. He offends love.

In the presence of the divine command, the Progenitors had to obey without asking the 'why' that are always the undoing of love, faith, and hope. When God orders or acts, one must obey and do His will without asking why He orders or acts in that way: Every action of His is good, even if it does not seem so to the being who is limited in his knowledge.

Why should they not have gone to that tree, gathered *those* fruits and have eaten of *those* fruits? There is no use in knowing. Obeying is useful, nothing else: And being happy with having received much. Obedience is love and respect, and it is the measure of love and respect. The more one loves and venerates a person, the more one obeys him/her.

Here now, being the One ordered by God - the Infinitely Great, the Good, the generous Benefactor of man - man, out of respect and gratitude, should have given to God not 'a lot' of love, but 'all' the adoring love which he was capable of giving, and therefore all the obedience, without analyzing the reason of the divine prohibition.

The discussions presuppose self-judgment and criticism to the order or other peoples' actions. Judging is a difficult thing and seldom is the judgment just; *but never is it just when one judges a divine order useless, wrong, or unjust.*

Man *had* to obey. The test of this ability of his, which is the measure of love and respect, was in the way in which he would have or would not have known how to obey."

The Means

MV - Epistle of St Paul to the Romans: 142-162

"The means: the tree and the Apple. Two small, insignificant things if you compare them to the abundance that God had granted to man.

And what? He had given Himself, God, and He prohibited the admiring of a fruit? And what? He had given a natural and supernatural life to the dust, He had infused His breath into man, and He prohibited the picking of a fruit? And what? He had made man the king of all the creatures and considered him not as His servant but a son, and He prohibited him from eating a fruit?

To one who does not know how to wisely meditate, this episode can seem to be like him on explainable punctiliousness (Strictly attentive to minute details of form in action or conduct.), similar to a whim of a benefactor who, having covered a beggar with riches, then prohibits him from picking up a little rock deposited in the dust. However, it isn't like this.

The Apple was not only through reality. It was also the symbol: The symbol of the divine right and of human duty.

Even when God calls and extraordinarily benefits, the beneficiaries must always remember that He is God and that man must never prevaricate, even if he feels extraordinarily loved. And yet, this is the test that only a few elect know how to surmount. They want more of what they have already received, and they go to gather what was not given. And that is how they find the snake and his poisonous fruits.

Beware, oh elect ones of God! Always remember that in your garden, so full of the gifts of God, there is always the tree of trial, and always looking to entwine itself around it is the Adversary of God and yours, in order to snatch an instrument from God and seduce you to pride in cupidity, to rebellion. Do not violate the right of God. Do not trample on the law of your duty, never.

Many seem to be the instruments of God, the 'voices,' too many according to some. I say to you all, to the theologians and to the faithful, that a hundred times a hundred more would there be if all those whom God calls to a special ministry knew how not to gather that which God has not given, so as to have more still.

All of the faithful had in the Decalogue, the Tree of Knowledge of good and evil, the test of faith, love, and obedience. For the 'voices' and the extraordinary instruments, more than ever, is that tree alluring and a snare of Satan. Because the greater the donation, the easier it is for pride and concupiscence to rise, the presumption of being sure of saving oneself in any case. Instead, I tell you that the more one has received, the more it is one's duty to be perfect so as not to have a greater condemnation which will not be given to the one who, having received only a little, has the extenuating circumstances of having known only a little.

I anticipate a question. Did that tree then bear good fruits and bad fruits?

It bore fruits no different from those of any other plant. However, it was the plant of good and evil, it became so according to the behavior of man, not so much as towards the plant as towards the divine order. To obey is good. To disobey is bad."

The Tree of Knowledge - good and evil

MV - Epistle of St Paul to the Romans: 142-162

"God knew that Satan would have gone to that tree to tempt. God knows everything. The wicked fruit *was the word of Satan tasted by Eve*. The danger of drawing near to the plant was in the disobedience. To the pure knowledge which God had given, Satan inoculated his impure malice that soon fermented even in the flesh. *However, Satan first corrupted the spirit, making it a rebel, and then made the intellect astute.*

How well did they know, *afterwards*, the knowledge of good and evil! Because everything, even the new sight for which they then knew to be naked alerted them to the loss of Grace that had made them blessed in their intelligent innocence up to that hour, and therefore, of the loss of supernatural life.

Naked! Not so much for the garments as for the gifts of God. *Poor!* For having wanted to be like God. *Dead!* For having feared dying with their species if they hadn't acted directly.

They committed the first act against love with pride, disobedience, diffidence, doubt, rebellion, spiritual concupiscence and *lastly*, with carnal concupiscence. I say, *lastly*. Some believe that carnal concupiscence was instead the first act. No. God is order in all things.



Even in the offences towards the divine law, man sinned *first against God* by wanting to be similar to God: '*god*' in the knowledge of Good and Evil and in the absolute and thus illicit freedom to act as he pleased and wished against all advice and prohibition of God; *then against love*, by loving himself disordinately, by denying God the reverential love that He is due, by placing the I in God's place, and by hating his future neighbor: his own offspring to whom he brought about the inheritance of sin and condemnation; and *lastly, against his dignity as the regal creature* who had had the gift of perfect dominion over the senses.

The sensual sin could not have occurred for as long as the state of Grace endured and the other consequent states. *There could have been temptation but not the consummation of the sensual sin for as long as innocence lasted, and therefore, the dominion of reason over the senses."*

Good and Evil - Law of Eternity

BD No. 3901 of 10/11/1946 taken from book 49

God the Father is speaking: "I also concede to evil but it is never My will, because evil contradicts My eternal law, it is a wrongly directed will which withdraws from Me and strives towards something entirely ungodly, a condition which completely opposes the original state of My created being. However, My created being has to have the option of aspiring towards good and evil, thus good and evil have to exist if the being wants to remain perfect or to become it of its own free will. Everything which contradicts My law of eternity is evil, everything which remains within My eternal order is good; but the fact that the being can sense or develop a desire towards either direction within itself is My will, and that it can feel every longing in its heart is My work. My wisdom and My love are the reasons why I have created the being in this way because I want to guide it towards eternal bliss, and this necessitates being able to voluntarily aspire towards good. In order to develop strength, it has to meet with resistance, in order to be good, the human being also needs to have the option to be evil and to become or remain good of his own accord, or his perfection would be a mere act of My love but would lack the highest degree for which free will is indispensable which, however, first has to be tested.

Evil can never be called good and can never be said to originate from Me although I also allow room for evil, although I concede to it. Evil thoughts, evil talk and evil actions are outside of My divine order. But if My will prevented the human being from thinking, talking and doing evil he would not be a free, independent and self-determining living creation but a mere product of My willpower which could never assert its claim to become perfect. But I want to shape perfect living beings for Myself which I can enlighten with My strength of love and, by doing so, make them extremely happy. And for this purpose, they need to have passed the test of will to aspire, of their own accord, of their own free will, towards the highest degree of perfection. This also requires the option of descending into a state of imperfection, the furthest distance from Me. My will is and remains eternally good, and anything which voluntarily submits to My will shall also be and remain good; anything which acts contrary to My will thus prefers evil and I will not prevent it, although it deprives itself of its own perfection, it does not pass its test of will. And even if it has descended into the deepest abyss, it inevitably has to ascend again of its own free will, although it needs an infinitely long time to once again achieve a degree of perfection which would allow My proximity. And precisely for that reason its will has to be given some leeway in order that the eternal divine order can be counteracted, but I will never approve of it nor shall it ever be My will. Thus, good and evil will continue until every spirit has been redeemed, that is, until everything which has emerged from Me has passed its ***test of will to voluntarily aspire towards good***, the Divine, until it has found Me of its own free will and as a most perfected being will then be able to enjoy all delights of eternal bliss."

God the Father Speaks about Adam and Lucifer's Test

BD No. 5802 of 11/09/1953 taken from book 63

God the Father is speaking: "Anyone who strives to arrive at the truth leaves all darkness behind him, he will have an explanation for everything, he will know the correlation between all things, he will recognize that his path leads upwards, that he has found the connection with God, that he cannot err anymore because God Himself conveys the truth to him. But striving for the truth means that it first has to be sincerely desired, and then the knowledge he receives, be it from outside or from within in the form of thoughts, has to be accepted with an open heart. For the heart will be willing to either accept or reject truth and error and thus influence the person accordingly.

Truth has to be aspired to in so far as that the human being's will has to be actively involved, it cannot simply be given to a completely passive person who does not want it himself and who will not take the necessary steps in order to gain it. For then he will remain in spiritual darkness and not achieve progress. Truth, however, is the ascending path. Truth is the spiritual knowledge conveyed to people by God Himself which tries to find a recipient in every human being, which can be acquired by every person's will since it can be imparted to people in many different ways, but it always has to be desired first. But anyone who has gained the truth no longer lives in darkness, everything is crystal clear to him, he no longer doubts, for whatever is still unclear will be explained to him when he asks for it providing, he turns to the source of truth, providing he submits his doubts

and questions to God Himself and then awaits God's answer through his heart. The desire for truth, the mental contact with God and his inward listening also ensures him a clear and truthful answer. You humans should know that no unsolved questions need to exist for you providing you just want an explanation and present every question to the One Who is truth Himself and Who also wants to impart it to His children in order to enlighten them, in order to illuminate their path of ascent:

The body of the first-created human being was also an act of creation by My love. I then had to create an external shell for the fallen spirit once it had worked its way up from the abyss to a point where it was able to undertake its final test of will in complete freedom. I had to create forms for all My once created original spirits whose previously dissolved substances had come together again after an infinitely long period of time and who, therefore, as self-aware beings once more, were waiting for permission to become active. Creating the external form of such an original spirit was no different than the countless many works of creation which had previously arisen, it was My externalized thought which, through My will, appeared before Me already completed. But giving life to this created form was only possible by permeating it with My strength of love.

The originally created spirit, however, was My emanated strength of love. Hence it only needed to take possession of the external form in order to turn it into a living being. The spirit was close to its perfection, and yet far from it because it lacked final realization, because the sin with which it was burdened had completely deprived it of all knowledge and in this state, it needed instruction and commandments, thus it was to gradually mature into realization by complying with these commandments. A great spiritual battle had taken place earlier because a large number of fallen original spirits wanted to occupy My first created form (pre-Adamites). For they knew that they could only gain access to Me again in the body of a human being, that they would only be able to gain unimaginable abundance of strength and light through a test of life in which they were to prove how they would utilize the strength at their disposal. But I Myself chose which original spirit should take abode in the first human being. For only I knew whose opposition to Me had weakened such that the final test of earthly life could be imposed on him; I knew whose will could have resisted My adversary's power. *Therefore, I chose an original spirit which had once taken a leading position during the spirits' apostasy, which was indeed more heavily burdened by sin but which My love very much endeavored to regain, for countless beings would likewise have followed it and the redemption would have progressed far more rapidly.* I have known, in fact, since eternity that this original spirit would fail. Nevertheless, due to its changed will during the preliminary stages it was the strongest spirit, thus it was also entitled to be the first to receive the state of free will, and which therefore offered the best prospects of passing the test of will.

The form of the first human being was, before this original spirit occupied it, also visible to Lucifer, who certainly knew that this form was the gate from the kingdom of darkness, from his realm, into My kingdom, into the kingdom of light. He also knew that, if he didn't want to lose his followers, he had to use every means to wrest the souls back from Me during the human being's approved probationary period, in order to turn the test to his advantage.

My created form (pre-Adamites) was still without life (a soul) when Lucifer seized it in order to test it by animating it with his spirit, yet his untamed spirit burst the form, and he was sure that every spirit banished into this form would burst it and that there would never be any danger of loss for him.

I allowed this test to happen and then proved to him that his assumption was wrong. For due to its long process of development the very spirit which was to embody itself in the human being no longer shared Lucifer's will, it willingly occupied the final external form (Adam), and since this original spirit was close to its original state it did not consider the external form a shackle to prevent the fall into sin. For it was master over all of creation, it could rule like a lord over the earth which was at its disposal with every creation. It had abundant might and strength, only subordinate to My might, which only gave it an easy commandment, the obedience to which would have broken any constraint imposed on it.

And when Lucifer realized this, he thought about ways to stop the human being from obeying this commandment, and since he knew the first human being's body, he tried to make him dislike it by portraying it as a shackle, by making freedom from it dependent on transgressing this commandment, and thus incited the original spirit to inwardly revolt against Me again for not having given it complete freedom. It was a deliberate deception which the first human being could have resisted by merely adhering to My simple commandment, if he had been satisfied with his possession of might and strength which made him truly happy until My adversary aroused an impure desire in him, to be greater than the One, Who was a perceptible power above him, of Whom he knew and Whose commandment he nevertheless disregarded.

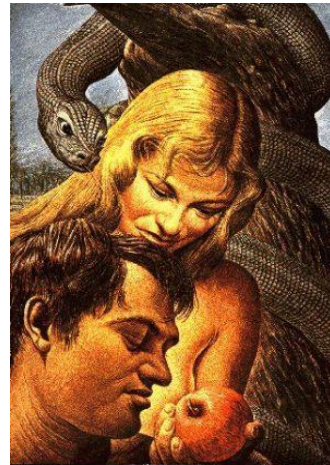
The first human being's fall into sin was therefore a repetition of the original spirit's first fall. It followed Lucifer and drew innumerable beings into the abyss with him, just as all descendants of the first human being were afterwards also placed into the weak state of sinful people until Jesus Christ came to their rescue, until Jesus Christ acquired the strength of will on behalf of humanity through His crucifixion, until Jesus Christ opposed Lucifer's temptations with His strong will and defeated him.

Nothing could have induced the first-created being, Lucifer, to cover the earthly progress as a human being as long as he still considered himself lord of the spiritual world which had deserted Me with him, for he himself did not take the course through matter, through creation, before the creation of the first human being. As a spiritually tangible spirit he was volitionally still My strongest opponent, he deemed himself lord over the creation which sheltered the spiritual substance that belonged to him, although he himself had no influence over it. His inner resistance was still unbroken, and he would never ever have put up with any coercion, he would never voluntarily have entered a form created by My will, because he hated all forms for the spiritual substances, all works of creation, and sought to destroy them. *However, his power over the works of creation had been taken away from him, but then he was granted influence over the soul when this was to make its free decision again for Me or for him. He also knew that he was unable to destroy a form himself once it was inhabited by spiritual beings, and for this reason he inspected the first human being's form in advance, for his goal was*

to induce the original spirit which was to occupy it to destroy its own external form, because he believed that he would thereby provide it with the freedom which I had taken away from the spirits due to the works of creation. He wanted to stop Me from completing the plan of Salvation.

The opposition between Myself and him existed ever since his apostasy and will never be given up by him until he realizes that he is completely powerless, and in profound weakness and humility appeals to Me to give him strength. For this reason, it would have been impossible to give him the first human body as an abode. For his will did not aim for ascent, whereas the past resistance to Me by the spiritual essence, having passed through creation in the state of compulsion, had already diminished and it was merely to prove just once more that it had abandoned its opposition to Me and My strength of love. And Lucifer knew how far this spiritual essence had already distanced itself from him, and he also knew that there now was a risk of losing it entirely. And since the original spirit embodied in the first human being had once been his staunch supporter, he was particularly interested to bring it to fall. But he also knew of its present desire to become free from every physical restraint.

And then I placed a second being at this original spirit's side, which simultaneously was to support but also help him with the test of his will. Each one could have supported the other to arrive at the final objective; I did not place the responsibility on one shoulder alone. I gave the commandment to both, and both were able to attain the goal together. And this second being was used by Lucifer, who recognized its weak will and thereby hoped to achieve his objective. The test of will had to be demanded from the first human couple, and in support of this test adverse forces also had to be active, for Lucifer fought for his living creations too, which he did not want to surrender even though they belonged to Me as well. His plan succeeded, nevertheless, it did not stop Me from giving countless beings time and again the opportunity to take on a new form in the human beings of this earth and thus to achieve an ever-higher degree of maturity even if, due to the fall of the first human couple, the gate to the kingdom of light remained closed until the arrival of Jesus Christ.



The first sin had delayed but not cancelled the spiritual beings' redemption, for what the first human being had failed to do was achieved by the human being Jesus. He was stronger than My adversary for He availed Himself of My strength. He was and stayed in contact with Me through love and voluntarily accomplished what the first human beings did not fulfill as a commandment. He completely subordinated Himself to My will and proved His devotion to Me through His suffering and death on the cross. He knew of the original sin and the first human beings' repeated guilt, and in order to cancel this guilt, in order to redeem humankind, He offered to bring Me a sacrifice, which was satisfactory to Me, a sacrifice, which opened the gate to the spiritual kingdom again, the path to Me, and now enables all My living beings who acknowledge Him as Son of God and Redeemer of the world to become blissfully happy once more."

The Casting out from Paradise

Ref: The Household of God Vol.2 By Jacob Lorber Chapter 13

God the Father is speaking: "Now let us return to Adam and Eve and see how they and their two descendants conducted their lives before the all-seeing eyes of the holiness of Jehovah. And behold, for a short time which, according to your reckoning, amounted to thirty revolutions of the earth around the sun, called by you years, the couple lived with their blessed descendants whose number was the same as the number of years, except for Cain who was not blessed. (Cain was a hybrid and was not born of Eve, only the descendants of Adam and Eve are considered the 'blessed.')

And now behold what furthermore happened. On the day of the Lord, already through Adam's heart appointed as a day of rest by eternal Love Itself and later by the angel on several occasions in remembrance of the great acts of merciful Love and for the most reverential contemplation of the boundless holiness of God, the good Father, Adam wandered alone through the countryside to admire the beauty of the landscape. The world appealed to him immensely, and his thoughts completely turned away from God.

Absorbed in his contemplations, he came to the banks of a great river. Its name was 'Eheura' or 'Remember the Time of Jehovah!' -for that is what the mightily rushing stream was calling. But Adam, deep in worldly thoughts, did not understand the meaning of this speech by the rushing waters of the stream.

When he was thus walking along the bank of the river his left foot became suddenly caught in a creeper laying across his path and then twisting around a big tree. He fell heavily and felt a great pain in his body, which was a new sensation for him. He was annoyed with the plant, looked at it angrily and asked whether it did not know its lord.

And the plant replied: 'No, I do not know you.'

Then Adam had a closer look at the plant and did not recognize it. Again, he asked: 'What is your name and what is your use?'

And lo, a wind was blowing through its leaves, and he understood the rustling which said: 'Pick the berries from my branches, press them and drink their juice and my name and use will become known to you.'

And Adam, blinded by his worldly thoughts and forgetting the day of the Lord, did what the plant had advised him. He took some berries, tasted them and found them very sweet. He was pleased about this new discovery but vexed with the angel for not having shown him this plant with the so palatable berries.

He picked a large quantity of berries and took them home, where he arrived when the sun was about to set.

Eve, accompanied by Cain, came to meet him and relieved him of part of his burden. They were the only ones who had worried all day not knowing where Adam had gone. All the others did know but did not worry on the day of the Lord about Adam, the father of their bodies, because they were blessed children, and their thoughts were all with God and His eternal Love. Adam told them about his new find and Eve was very pleased and did with the help of Cain as suggested in Adam's story.

Then Adam took the squeezed-out juice and said: 'Let us find out its name and use.'

And behold, he gulped down some of the juice, passed it then to Eve and Cain and finally to all the others, except for Abel who was not present because the fire was still burning on the altar, he had erected for offering to the holiness and love of Jehovah sacrifices that would please the Lord.

And Adam, Eve and all who had tasted the juice became drunk and inflamed in the desire of their flesh committed fornication and harlotry, while Abel was praying at Jehovah's altar.

When they had finished with their fornication, having in their drunkenness forgotten God and the demanded offering of their hearts, the angel with the flaming sword in his right hand appeared first to Abel and gently spoke to him, saying:

Jehovah was well pleased with your offering and has, therefore, chosen you to save your parents and your brothers and sisters who otherwise would have perished on the day of the Lord when they forgot Him and lowered their hearts to the earth and could not receive the blessing which, according to the established order on this day always flows from above into all the infinite spaces.

Therefore, I have returned visibly to first of all gather your offering into this vessel of merciful grace, which is the eternal Son within the Father, and to present it before His most holy countenance, the apple of the eternal Father's eye. But prior to that still to chastise the transgressors of the law of love and the commandment of holy grace, to withdraw from them a great part of the gifts, to smite them with blindness and cast them out of Paradise.

Now leave your sacrificial altar, place yourself at my left hand so that my chastising right hand may be free for the transgressors, and follow me into the house of sin. When I shall have awakened the sleeping sinners from their drunkenness of fornication and they, seized with great fear, will flee before the sword of justice, follow them as one who is also fleeing and carry for the parents of your body a small part of the lost gifts and hand it to them for their support when, exhausted and weeping they will fall to the ground in a distant land, called 'Ehuehil' or 'Land of Refuge'. In that land you shall erect a sacrificial altar like this one here, which will keep burning, even under the waters that one day will cover the earth. It will turn into a mountain inaccessible to mortal feet until the great Time of times when it will incline its summit towards the valley which will be called '**Bethlehem**', or the small town of the great king, and one day will become the greatest on earth. Its light will shine brighter than the light of the spirits of all the suns. On this new altar you shall burn thank-offerings to the Lord from all the kingdoms on earth in this land of refuge to make it more bearable to the sinners, strengthen the penitent and comfort the grieving.

When the angel had ended his speech to Abel, they rose and solemnly walked to the mansion of Adam, which, in accordance with his might and power, was round and very spacious, formed by freely growing tall cedars in shape similar to the temple of Solomon. It stood close to the cave of penitence and the thornbush of grieving and had two entrances, a narrow one towards the east and a wide one towards the west.

And behold, it was the middle of the night - it could not be earlier because of the day of the Lord - that the angel of the Lord with Abel came to the threshold of the eastern entrance.

As Abel stepped on the threshold, he began to weep because of the great disaster about to come upon his people.

Then the angel said to him with a gentle voice: 'Do not weep, Able, you blessed son of grace, but do what I bade you do out of eternal Love speaking through my mouth. And do not be frightened by the words of thunder descending upon these sleeping sinners.'

And Abel did as commanded by the angel, and when he had reached his people, the angel thundered serious and frightening words of terror and great fear upon the now awakened sinners, shouting with great power and force:

Rise, Adam, remember your guilt and flee from here, for you cannot stay here any longer. You have lost the Paradise for yourself and all your descendants until the great time of times. You have also lost a great part of the gifts through your sin when you forgot the Day of the Lord and became drunk from the juice of a plant that was a masterpiece of the serpent, invented to rob you of your freedom, to entangle your feet and confuse your senses, to forget God and make you sleep in gross sin.

'So, flee wherever you want to from the face of Love. And wherever you flee, you will encounter the fullness of the just wrath of God, but your share of love will be measured out to you only sparingly.'

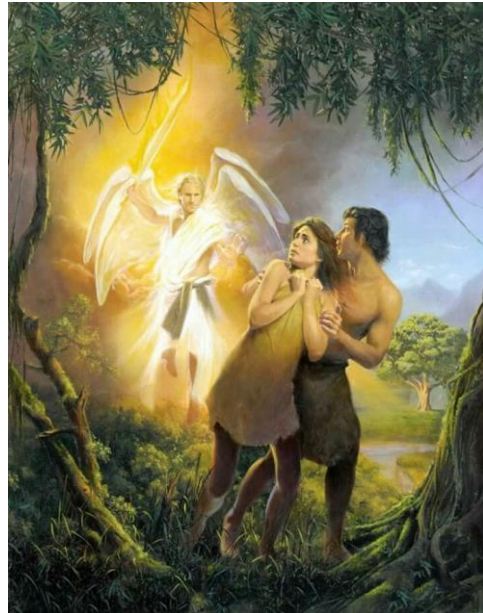
And behold, Adam rose from the ground with Eve and all the others who had slept owing to the intoxicating drink from the serpent's plant and as a result had lost Paradise, with the exception of Abel who had remained sober, not having tasted of the intoxicating drink, and had remembered the Day of the Lord (as you, too, as true children of a Father, as holy and good as I am, shall constantly remember the holy tranquility of the Sabbath, as the true Day of the Lord and shall do on Sunday what I bade you do).

When Adam saw the angel, he, together with his descendants, was so terrified that he was unable to utter a single word for an excuse. He was as if paralyzed by fright, for only now did he realize what he and his people had done before the eyes of Jehovah.

He threw himself at the feet of the Lord's angel and wept and cried for mercy, for the flaming sword had opened his eyes, and he recognized in this terrifying light of punishing justice the gravity and immensity of the unspeakable disaster he had by his carelessness brought upon himself and all his own.

But the angel stood there blindfolded and with plugged up ears, as commanded by the love of the Father, and spoke with a thunderous voice out of the might and power of Jehovah.

There is no grace in justice and no freedom in judgment. Therefore, flee, driven by punishing justice, lest the judgments of Jehovah overtake your lingering feet. For punishment is the reward of justice, He who accepts it as deserved can



still expect mercy, but he who resists justice and its consequences is a traitor to the inviolable holiness of God and will be subjected to the judgments of God where there is no longer any freedom, but eternal captivity in the wrath of the Deity.

Therefore, flee and weep and implore wherever your feet carry you. And where they will refuse their service to you, there remain, weep, implore and pray that you may not perish with Eve and all the others - through you.

And behold, Adam rose again and wanted to flee according to God's command through the angel, but he was unable to do so, for his feet were as if paralyzed. And he began to tremble and shake all over from fear of God's judgment with which he had been threatened by the angel of the Lord.

And Adam again fell down on his face and wept and cried aloud: 'Lord, You almighty and great God in Your great glory of holiness, do not steel the heart of Your infinite love and mercy completely against me who am so weak before You and give me enough strength that I, the most unworthy, may be able to flee from Your judgments arising from Your most holy will to which all Your creatures are subject, as also I am. O Lord, hear my entreaty!'

And behold, eternal Love spoke to Abel through the mouth of the angel, as I am now speaking through your impure one:

Abel, behold the father of your body and help him. And behold his wife Eve, the mother of your body, languishing on the ground, and raise them both up so that they and all the others may be strengthened for their flight. And the good and holy Father will be pleased with you for showing love to the weak father and mother of your body as well as to all your brothers and sisters regardless of whether they are blessed or not. For your power will strengthen them and the fullness of the grace within you will refresh them. Thus, lead them with the hand of filial love and the hand of brotherly loyalty with great patience and love to the place I will indicate to you by causing them all to sink down from exhaustion.

There remain and let the exhausted rest, and then concentrate your whole being upon Me that I may endow you with an abundance of power for the strengthening of your parents according to their degree of need and susceptibility, and for the revival of your brothers and sisters according to their need and susceptibility. Now do what I have commanded you, and do it out of love for them and out of obedience to Me.

And lo, the pious Abel was filled with merciful love, knelt down and thanked God from the bottom of his heart, melting into tears and then, strengthened from above, took the hands of his weak parents and did out of great love what the Lord had commanded.

When Adam saw his son help him, as well as his mother and the others, he said, deeply moved: "O my beloved son, since you came to help me in this our great distress, receive my blessing as thanks and as a consolation for your weak father and mother!

And you, who are still worthy of the holy Father's love, give thanks to the Lord on my behalf and that of all of us who have made ourselves unworthy of uttering His most holy name.

So let us now flee in accordance with the will of the Lord.

And behold, the angel wielded the sword of justice, and they all fled quickly for days and nights, on and on, without rest.

Thus, they arrived in the already mentioned land where the sun, scorching hot, stood directly above their heads. Nowhere all around them could any grass be seen on the ground, nor any trees or shrubs. And so, here Adam and Eve with all the others sank completely exhausted to the ground into the hot dust and closed their eyes, compelled by the force of a numbing sleep. Thus, they slept as if unconscious, ensnared in their weakness in disgrace.

And behold, the Lord's angel, who had hitherto visibly persecuted them, went to Abel who was standing there in the fullest freshness of the might and power from above, and said:

Abel, behold, of all the sacrifices you have made to the Lord of Holiness in the purity of your heart, none was greater than this one and none as pleasing to Him. Therefore, as willed by Him, take this sword of justice from the hand of your brother from above - since we are children of one and the same holy Father - and use it according to the might of wisdom and the power of love for the benefit of your people. Revive within them the weakened power of life, cause love for the Love of the holy Father to burn anew and kindle within their hearts the flame of the righteous fear of God. I shall not leave you, but at all times stand invisibly by you, my beloved brother, and if you wish it also visibly, always prepared to serve you in the will of the Lord.

Behold, the handing over of the sword signifies your complete freedom, like my own, and thus the Lord's will has become your will and has set you above all law and made the commandments your property. Now you are, like me, an immortal son of the holy Father's love in the pure kingdom of light of the free spirits.

And now due to your parents and the brothers and sisters of your body according to your love and wisdom!"

Punishment

MV - Epistle of St Paul to the Romans: 142-162

Jesus is speaking: "Punishment, not inordinate but just. In order to understand it, one needs to consider the perfection of Adam and Eve. By considering that height, one can measure the greatness of the fall into the abyss.

If some of you were to be taken by God and placed in a new Eden, leaving you who you are though giving you the same commands He had given to Adam, and you were to disobey like Adam, do you believe that God would condemn you with the same severity with which He condemned Adam? No. God is just. He knows what tremendous inheritance is within you.

The consequences of original sin have been repaired by Christ, in so far as He is Grace. But the weakness of the lesion in the original perfection remains. And this weakness is constituted by fomenters similar to infective germs which have remained latent in man, but that are always ready to enter in strength and overpower the creature. They are even in the holier of saints. *And sanctity, after all, is none other than the fruit of the struggle and the continual victory which the soul and the reasoning of the just one sustain and suffer through the assault of the fomenters in order to remain faithful to the Love.*

Now God, who is infinitely, just, would not be inexorable with one of you as He was with Adam: because He would consider your weaknesses.

With Adam He was, being that Adam was endowed with all that could have made him the victor, and easily a victor, against temptation. Hence the punishment: that punishment in which one sees that if the precarious man did not respect the limit placed by God, God respected the limits that He placed towards man.

God did not violate the free will of man, whereas man violated the rights of God. Neither before nor after the sin did God violate man's freedom to act. He subjected him to a test. Being God, He did not ignore that man would not have overcome it. However, it was just that He subjected him to it in order to confirm him in grace like He had, for the same end, submitted the angels to the test and confirmed in grace those amongst them who had won the test. And, submitting him to the test, He left him free to act with respect to it.

However, all these cases would have been injustices towards the angels who had been submitted to the test, who did not have their powers of the will bound, who had not been forgiven in advance, and who did not have aroused in their beings, and by God Himself, any impulse of contrition or attrition capable of arousing divine forgiveness. It is true that the angels were favored more than men in not sinning because of the gifts of grace and those of their nature (spirits without a body, and therefore, without senses) and for being thus free from internal pressures of sense and from external pressures (the Serpent), and above all, through the knowledge of God; and in spite of this, they sinned without extenuating circumstances due to ignorance and the stimulus of the senses but through pure malice and sacrilegious will, However, there was none of what was said before: Neither from God nor from man.

God respected the human will. Man persevered in his state of revolt towards His divine Benefactor. He proudly left Eden after having lied – because by now his joining with Falsehood had occurred – and after having cited poor excuses for his sin while having made himself a belt of leaves, he testified that not because they were naked and were ashamed of appearing so before God, because they were guilty.

Fear, yes; repentance, no. Hence God, after having expelled them from Eden 'placed two cherubim on the threshold of the same' so that the two prevaricators would not fraudulently re-enter in order to loot the fruits of the tree of life, rendering nil a part of the just punishment and defrauding God once again of His right: that of giving and taking life after having kept it healthy, happy and long-lived with salutary fruits of the tree of life.



When Man turned away from God, he also turned over all Creation to the Prince of Darkness and forfeited all spiritual knowledge.

Therefore: a just punishment. The privation of how much man had spontaneously scorned Grace, integrity, immortality, immunity, and knowledge. And hence, the loss of the paternal love of God, of His mighty help; and hence, the weakness of the wounded soul, the fever of the awakened flesh, reason, delirious and overwhelming; and hence, the fear of God and the Loss of Eden where life was without hardship and sorrow; and hence, hardship, death, the subjection of woman to man, the animosity between man and man, amongst the children of a womb, crime, abuse, all the evils that torment humanity, fear of death and judgment, the torment of having provoked sorrow and of transmitting it to those most loved, in one with life."

God the Father speaks about the first Original Sin

BD No. 8806 of 05/26/1964 taken from book 92

God the Father is speaking: "Knowledge of the original sin is necessary in order to understand the act of Salvation, in order to acknowledge Jesus Christ as the 'Redeemer.'

You humans lack the knowledge about the first original sin, consequently you also consider Jesus Christ's act of Salvation just an atonement for your human guilt, indeed, you even deny His 'act of Salvation' because, you believe, that everyone has to pay for their guilt down to the last coin. This opinion would be understandable if it only concerned the sin you burdened yourselves with as human beings, but it concerns the immense first original sin, the spirits' apostasy from Me, a sin, which you would never be able to atone for, which thus cannot ever be denied, which is the cause of the whole of creation and the reason for My human manifestation in Jesus.

For the apostasy from Me was caused by the fact that the created beings were unable to see Me, and therefore I made Myself visible in Jesus. Anyone who merely acknowledges the past original sin by the first human beings will find it incredulous that these sins necessitated a 'Redeemer', he will always maintain that humanity could not be punished for a sin it had not committed. And therefore, even the sins committed by a person as such are indeed an offence against My love, but they do not recognize them in their state of darkness, which is the consequence of the immense first original sin.

But this sin explains everything, and as long as people do not know about this event of the spirits' apostasy, they will find it difficult to believe in the 'divine Redeemer', Who died on the cross in utmost pain and torment for the sake of this immense sin, which He had taken upon Himself in order to offer this sacrifice of atonement to Me. Consequently, every teaching which denies the divine Redeemer, which thus renounces the principle of Salvation, will have to be rejected as a misguided teaching, even if His work as an advocate of the divine teaching of love is emphasized. It concerns the redemption of the first original sin, which only I Myself could accomplish in the man Jesus, and therefore My human manifestation in Him will be comprehensively explained



to you, for I Myself Am a Being which cannot be seen by any of My living creations without their ceasing to exist.

If I thus wanted you to be able to conceive Me visibly it had to take place in the form of a being like yourselves Which, for you, was the human being Jesus. Consequently, it is first of all necessary to know about the event of the beings' apostasy from Me in order to then understand the process of creation of the visible world. Then you will also be able to understand the everlasting battle between light and darkness and the appearance of a Savior for humanity in Jesus Christ, of a non-fallen original spirit, in Whom I embodied Myself, because you had no concept at all of the 'all-creative strength'. And for this reason, you can and have to acknowledge a Redeemer, Who died on the cross on behalf of everyone and Who also prayed on behalf of you humans for the remission of your sins. But it cannot be granted to you instantly, rather, you have to apply to Him yourselves because the fall happened voluntarily and thus the return to Him will also have to take place in free will. The fact that a person who seriously strives for perfection will, apart from the original sin, also be forgiven for his sins as a human being need not be doubted, hence all guilt will be forgiven and thus forgiveness is ensured. But since Jesus is only rarely recognized as Redeemer by those who accept the misguided teaching which portrays Him as a human being and ascended master and who do not want to acknowledge My human manifestation in Him, they do not ask Him for forgiveness of all their sins either. For there is only One Who can release them from their guilt, only One has the power to cancel all sins, and that is Jesus, in Whom I Myself became a human being."

The fall into the Depth of Darkness

BD No. 6765 of 02/18/1957 taken from book 72

God the Father is speaking: "In recognition of the truth is the whole salvation of the being. Once it was standing in the light, in the highest knowledge, and therefore it was also blessed in excess. For the being recognized My love, wisdom and power, it knew, that it was created by Me, and it also knew its purpose. It was constantly illuminated by My strength of love, there was nothing dark, nothing unknown for this being, and there was nothing that the being limited in his will and his strength. It was an unspeakably blissful state, a being in most luminous spheres, who, filled with My thoughts could be recognizable to the beings. It was a constant overflowing of My original being into all these beings created by Me, which also produced unlimited salvation in these beings. But the state of the beings changed. What streamed to them abundantly, they refused in free will, when the first created being misused its free will and turned it against Me. Indeed, that first being was also in highest knowledge, because it was created as My image, it was My equal in its nature, except that it was not from eternity, but it was created by Me, so My will and My urge of love let it arise at first. And this being envied My priority to be of eternity, while itself had a beginning. And since it was not able to watch Me, it set itself up as master of all created beings, which also accepted it in large part as their Lord, in spite of



brightest knowledge. *And it lost all qualities, which (still) characterize it as a divine being, because it abused the characteristic of divinity, the free will, and because it was completely without any love. It sank into the darkness. And its condition was unblessed, it was without light and strength, and it remained in this unfortunate condition for eternities.* But the will of the first created being and also of its following was not able to drive Me out, the eternal truth, the light of eternity. It was free will to refuse its recognition of Me, it could turn away from Me, but it could not destroy Me, blot Me out, or let Me pass away. I was and remained the power, that has control of all and to whom also the fallen spirits must be subordinated, if this is My will. But I let him have the freedom, I let the beings fall, where they are self-willed, to the depth. But I too do not refuse the being, if it wants to rise out of the depth again, if it makes the way to Me again and wants to receive strength and light again from Me, I help it to make use of all means. *And because they lack any cognition, because they are completely without any light and knowledge, I give it also the possibility once again, to obtain this light. I guide the beings into the state again after an endlessly long way of development, which they are able to recognize, if they are willing. And this is in the stage as man, where I send the truth to the being, to put it back into a state of bliss again, but where the free will has to choose again. What it once had, it must be acquired only now, but this will for truth is evaluated very highly, and then the being reaches a level of light which still exceeds the former level of light because it has not only become My creature now, but My child, who had the freedom to remain in the depth, but still strove for the height on its own initiative and is unspeakably blessed now because it stands in the light of truth again, because any darkness has left it, because all divine features fulfill the being in full measure and because it cannot be pushed away from Me any more through My opponent, that first created being whose guilt is far greater because it separated itself from Me."*

Why do we have to do Penance for Adam's Sin?

BD No. 9006 of 07/02/1965 taken from book 94

God the Father is speaking: "All your questions will come to nothing as soon as you are offered the pure truth, for this is so easy to understand as long as it is offered to you in the right way. You know that the apostasy from Me took place in a state of brightest realization. Consequently, all beings were equally responsible for falling away from Me, they could not have been forced by the adversary's will to revolt against Me, instead the 'rejection of My strength of love' was every being's own affair. Free will made them become sinful which, at the time of the apostasy, had not been subject to My adversary, because they had the right of self-determination, it was still able to make a free decision and thus consciously chose the adversary. But now the latter had control over his followers, and this control was taken away from him by Me by letting Creation arise in order to induce the strength which, through the apostasy, had become incapable of any kind of activity, to become active again in different ways. Thus, the adversary gained nothing from his followers and was only allowed to exercise his power again once the being had regained its self-awareness in the stage as a human being. And I had to leave him this right, on account of which he was then able to tempt these beings. And so, he did with all manner of cunning and trickery, he

understood how to deprive the first human being of his faith in My Word again which promised them eternal life if they followed My easy commandment. In this human being, Adam, an extremely strong spirit was embodied, whose fall was easily achieved yet again by the adversary. So, was it not obvious that no spirit would have been able to resist him who became subject to the same artful temptations by My adversary? It is not about the fact that the descendants had to do penance for the first human beings' sin, but it is about the fact that I, had the first human being resisted these temptations for love of Me, would, for the sake of compassion, have done the same as Jesus, the human being, did at a later time: that He accomplished the act of atonement for the sake of love, that I would have been satisfied with the strength of resistance by the one person who handed himself over to Me and should have enabled My illumination again.

And for his will of love, I would have written the guilt off, and the path across earth as a human being would merely have served everyone to kindle the love for Me into brightest fire. Instead, My adversary had proved his power over the first human beings and thus did not surrender the right to subsequently use his artful temptations on every person, which I cannot deny him due to the fact that the beings once voluntarily followed him into the abyss. Hence you cannot say that these people will now have to do penance for the sins of their ancestors, but it has always been up to each person to prove himself during the temptations and he will also receive the strength from Me to do so, for I bless this determination and will never abandon such a person to My adversary. However, the first people could have helped their descendants to have an easier life on earth, but since they failed, it was not possible to protect the latter from the adversary's temptations, unless they appealed to Me for My protection and then their earthly path was indeed an easier one, which was also the case with those original spirits which were receptive to instructions from the world of light and over whom My adversary no longer had full control. Therefore, the fact that those people always had an easier earthly path, that they did not fall prey to My opponent's enticements, that he did not keep full authority over them, is a sign that I have helped and always will help every soul which starts earthly life less burdened and whose will is already devoted to Me, that I therefore do not indiscriminately give grace and strength to souls to accomplish their path of return. However, time and again I have to mention that the first human beings made the whole path of return more difficult because of their failure, it would have been far easier to navigate had the strongest, once fallen spirit resisted and followed My easy commandment, had he believed more in My Words which promised him eternal life, and through his resistance had broken the power, which then would have made it impossible for the adversary to use it on his followers, for this victory would have affected all fallen spiritual beings."

Question: What would have happened had Adam not failed?

BD No. 8675 of 11/16/1963 taken from book 91

God the Father is speaking: "I want you to ask questions so that I can instruct you truthfully. For these questions, too, are placed by Me into your heart because I know what you still need, and I want to give you enlightenment. You humans will find it impossible to understand all spiritual correlations down to the

last detail as long as you are not yet so perfected that I can completely permeate you with the light of My love which then will also guarantee you the brightest knowledge. Yet I can already inform you beforehand in relation to your intellectual capacity so that you need not fall prey to wrong thoughts and become receptive to misguided teachings: The guilt of the beings' which had fallen away from Me was immeasurably huge. However, it primarily consisted of the fact that they no longer wanted to acknowledge Me despite their state of light which clearly revealed their former origin to them. They sinned against Me in spite of better knowledge. Nevertheless, My love for them was so great that I made their return to Me dependent on their full acknowledgement of Myself and the admission of their guilt of having sinned against Me as their God and Father. But it always has to be emphasized that due to their apostasy My adversary had taken possession of the beings and that they were too weak to release themselves from his power. Only love could give them the strength to free themselves from him. Love was the only means which rendered the adversary powerless, only love could conquer him. Yet the beings had voluntarily renounced love, they repelled My illumination of love and thereby were completely at My adversary's mercy. I, however, gave the first human beings the opportunity to accept love from Me again. I endowed them with every gift and ability, and they had dominion over the whole earth. I offered them an infinite measure of love which they merely needed to reciprocate by fulfilling My not too difficult commandment. By reciprocating My love, they, in turn, would have gained a measure of strength with which they could easily have resisted My adversary and released themselves from his bondage, and by fulfilling My will they would also have confessed their past sin, they would have entered into My will again and every being, living on earth as a human being after them, would have done the same.

And thus, humanity repentantly would have returned to Me within a short time, for Adam's inherent strength as a result of his right kind of love would have transferred itself onto all his descendants, the complete spiritualization of the once fallen beings would have proceeded swiftly, precisely because the first human beings would have recognized their immense original guilt and through heartfelt love for Me would soon have removed it. For a sin against love, a sin against Me Myself, could only be cancelled through love again. And truly, what I bestowed upon the first human beings when they took possession of the earth should have ignited their love into the brightest blaze. For I only demanded 'love' as an atonement, which was then, because Adam and the human generation had failed, shown to Me by the man Jesus to such an extent that he thereby redeemed the immense guilt. Only love was able to atone for this guilt. And the first human beings truly could have mustered love, for their surrounding creation offered them incomparable glories which, after the agonizing state of constraint, made them blissfully happy and this beatitude could also have triggered a divine love within themselves, a love which only ever had to give thanks and praise and could have inspired their deeply felt devotion for Me.

Yet for the sake of testing their will, which previously had been misused, I also had to grant My adversary the right to fight for his followers during their earthly life. And in order to reveal to the first human beings the great danger of a repeated offence against Me I only gave them an easy commandment which they

were able to fulfill and had to fulfill if their love for Me was going to be able to reach this said degree which ensured their complete devotion to Me, which totally would have deprived the adversary of his power. He, too, tried everything to bring the first human beings to fall, and thus he opposed My easy commandment with a promise which, however, because he was My adversary, consisted of a lie and he impelled the human beings into the wrong kind of love. He promised them that they would be 'like God' if they transgressed My commandment, he portrayed Me as a liar, since I had announced their death if they disobeyed My commandment. And people believed him, not Me. And this was the repeated grave sin which also placed all descendants into a state of weakness so that they could no longer liberate themselves from the adversary on their own and which subsequently necessitated Jesus Christ's act of Salvation, if people were to one day be delivered from utmost adversity.

Time after time I emphasize that only love was able to atone this immense guilt, that Adam would indeed have been able to demonstrate this love to Me but that due to his fall and after his fall no being was capable anymore to muster the kind of love which would guarantee the redemption of the immense original sin, and that the loving act of redemption therefore had to be accomplished by Me Myself, Who manifested Himself in the human being Jesus.

Thus, the human being Jesus had an abundance of divine love, and in His love He suffered the sacrificial death on the cross, because no human being would have been able to return to Me without this act of Salvation, because My adversary will not release any soul and on its own because it is too weak to liberate itself from him. And, because I have known.

The World's Rejection of God's Grace

MV Notebook 1943: 63

Jesus is speaking: "When God created the first man, in addition to the life of matter, until then inanimate, He infused into him the life of the spirit as well. He could not otherwise have said that He had made you in his image and likeness.

None of you can image how perfect the first creature was. Only We, in the eternal present, which is our eternity, can see the perfection of the regal work of our creative Intelligence. The seed of Adam, if Adam had been able to remain a *king* as We had made him, with power over all things and depending on God alone—the dependence of a most beloved son—would have been a seed of perpetual perfection. But there was a *defeated one* who was watching to take revenge.

You, Maria, who say that from your heart thoughts of forgiveness could not emerge spontaneously because your human nature leads you to the spirit of vengeance and only out of regard for Me are you able to forgive—have you ever considered that it was the spirit of revenge that ruined you, the children of Adam, and sent Me, the Son of God, to the cross?

Lucifer—and He was the most beautiful of my beautiful creatures—from the abyss into which he had fallen, eternally ugly after the blasphemous revolt against his Creator, was thirsty for revenge. To the first sin, conceit, he thus added an endless series of crimes, avenging himself for ages and ages. And the first act of vengeance was upon my creatures, Adam and Eve. On the perfection of my

creation his poisoned tooth left the mark of its bestiality, communicating to you his very own lust for lasciviousness, vengeance, and haughtiness. And since then, your spirit has been dueling in you against the poisons of the hellish bite.

On some very rare occasions the spirit wins out over flesh and blood and gives earth and Heaven a new saint. Sometimes the spirit lives with difficulty, with slumps of lethargy in which it is as if dead and you live and act as creatures devoid of light, of my Light. At other times it is literally killed by the creature, who voluntarily forfeits the throne of a child of God and becomes worse than a beast—turning into a demon, the child of a demon.

In truth I tell you that over two thirds of the human race belong to this category, which lives under the sign of the Beast. For this category I died in vain.

The law of those marked by the Beast is antithetical to my Law. In the former, the flesh dominates and generates works of flesh. In the latter, the spirit dominates and generates works of spirit. *When the spirit dominates, the kingdom of God is there. When the flesh dominates, the kingdom of Satan is there.*

The infinite Mercy animating the Triad has given your spirit all the aid to remain the ruler. It has given the sacrament removing the sign of the Beast on your flesh as children of Adam and impressing my Sign. It has given my Word of Life; it has given Me, Master and Redeemer; it has given my Blood in the Eucharist and on the Cross; it has given the Paraclete: The Spirit of truth.

Whoever is able to remain in the Spirit generates works of the spirit. From the creature possessed by the Spirit their flow charity, gentleness, purity, science, and every good work joined to great humility. From the others there emerge, like hissing snakes, vices, deceits, acts of lust, and crimes, for their heart is a nest of hellish snakes.

But where are those who are able to tend towards the life of the spirit and make themselves worthy to welcome in themselves the vital pouring of the Consoler, who comes with all his gifts, but wants a prompt spirit, desirous of Him, for his throne? No, the world does not want the Spirit, who makes you good. The world wants power at any price, wealth at any price, the satisfaction of senses at any price, all the joys of the earth at any price, and rejects and curses the Holy Spirit Trinity, but from the cave of Satan.

And this is not and shall not be forgiven. Ever! And you see that it is not forgiven. *God withdraws into the height of his Heavens because man rejects his love and lives for and in the flesh. These are causes of your ruin and of our silence.* From the depths there emerge the tentacles of Satan; on earth man proclaims himself to be a god and curses the true God; on high Heaven closes. *And this is indeed mercy, for in closing it holds back the thunderbolt you deserve.*

A new Pentecost would encounter hearts harder and fouler than a boulder that had sunk into a pool of mud. Remain, therefore, in the mud you wanted, waiting for a command, which admits no rebellion, to pull you out of it and separate the children of the spirit from the children of the flesh."

The Purpose and Reason of Earthly Life - A

BD No.8020 of 10/16/1961 taken from book 84



For you are the fallen spirits who had parted from Me of your own free will, you are the beings who once came forth from Me in highest perfection and voluntarily changed their nature to the contrary, you are those fallen spirits.

God the Father is speaking: "You must always know that there is reason and purpose for your existence as human beings on earth. It was not the Creator's whim that placed you into this world but spiritual events which formed the foundation of your creation, events which happened a very long time ago in the spiritual kingdom. The beings, brought into existence by My will's love, began to change. The law of order, in which all perfect things had to exist, was overturned. The externalized perfect beings changed themselves into the opposite; they trespassed the law of order and became imperfect. However, their nature changed of their own free will, i.e. the beings' will rebelled against the existing order, it rebelled against Me Myself as their God and Creator, but whom they nonetheless recognized because they were enlightened. Consequently, this occurrence in the kingdom of the spirits is the reason for your existence as human beings on this earth.

For you are the fallen spirits who had parted from Me of your own free will, you are the beings who once came forth from Me in highest perfection and voluntarily changed their nature to the contrary, you are those fallen spirits. But eternities had passed between your apostasy from Me and your existence as human beings, an infinitely long time had passed wherein the fallen being had to go through a process of change, where it was exposed to incredible suffering and torment, where it gradually evolved from the abyss to the pinnacle again, always subject to My guidance because nothing that originates from Me remains eternally separated. And thus, one day you will reach the level of development when you will live as human beings on earth in order to cover the last short distance to the end, in order to voluntarily achieve your return to your God and Father, from whom you once had distanced yourselves in wrongly directed will. If you look at

your human existence in this light you will learn to understand how significant it is for you; you will no longer regard earthly life as an end in itself but as a means to an end, and you will live it consciously.

But it is difficult to make you believe that you are not just a whim of your God and Creator, because you have no proof of what I tell you. However, just for once you should seriously consider that you yourselves and everything around you are works of wonder which could not have originated arbitrarily, and after serious contemplation recognize a God and Creator and become convinced that there is nothing without purpose, and that your earthly life subsequently has to serve a purpose too. You should aim to make contact with the acknowledged creative power, which is always possible in thought, in prayer and by doing works of love, in unity with Me a light will soon shine for you, very soon you will perceive a glimpse of the knowledge which you once possessed in full measure.

And the light within you will shine consistently brighter the more you seek unity with Me and you will achieve the purpose of your life: you will accomplish the transformation of your own free will, the change of your nature into perfection, which was your condition from the start. You will kindle the tiny spark of love within you and turn it into a bright fire, which means as much as having entered the law of eternal order once again, where all perfect things have to exist. **You will be able to end an infinitely long process of development with the result that you will have adopted My fundamental nature again, that you will have shaped yourselves into love and will once more be divine, perfect beings as you were in the beginning. This is the purpose of your earthly life, which should prompt you to live consciously so that the last stage of the infinitely long process of development will enable the entirely spiritualized being to leave this earth in perfection and enter the kingdom of light and bliss from whence it once originated as a child of God."**

The Purpose and Reason of Earthly Life - B

BD No. 7797 of 01/14/1961 taken from book 81

God the Father is speaking: "You have to know the purpose of your earthly life if your progress as a human being is to be successful and you want to reach the goal, if you once again want to become what you had been in the beginning. You came forth from Me as supremely perfect beings, you were created in My image, endowed with all divine attributes, full of light and strength, and you were in constant contact with Me as your God and Creator, so that you were continuously able to receive light and strength from Me and thus were also indescribably happy. But your perfect nature also included free will or you could not have been called divine living creations. Consequently, this free will had to open up two possibilities for you: to remain as perfect as I had created you, or to relinquish your perfection and change your nature into the opposite. Thus, you were meant to prove your 'divinity' by keeping the direction of your will in line with Mine, so that it totally merged with My will although it was completely free. In that case, however, you also had to be capable of behaving to the contrary. You also had to be able to fall away from Me as a sign of free will, if this was opposed to Me and My will.

I required My 'created' living beings to make this decision of will in order to be able to grant them even greater delights. I required this decision of will of My first created being, the spirit of light, whom My greater than great love externalized and who, as My image, was intended to create and work with and beside Me in the spiritual kingdom. He had come forth from Me in supreme perfection, he was My image. Yet one thing set him apart from Me: he received his strength from Me, whereas I was the source of strength Myself. He certainly recognized this, for he possessed absolute realization. And so he was confronted by the test of will which required him to acknowledge Me as the source of strength from Which he constantly received his power. However, his will and My strength had brought countless beings into existence, all of whom were of highest perfection, endowed with all gifts and free will which demonstrated their divine nature. And the awareness of having been the creator of all these beings made this first-created spirit, the bearer of light, arrogant, and in his arrogance, he rebelled against Me.

Hence he did not pass the test of will but he voluntarily caused a separation from Me which, admittedly, was impossible to happen, because all created spirits would have perished in view of the fact that they are unable to exist without Me and My flow of strength, but the bearer of light, Lucifer, deliberately turned away from Me, and therefore fell into the abyss, drawing with him a large number of beings which likewise were supposed to make a decision and deserted Me. This occurrence, which took place in the spiritual kingdom, forms the basis of the 'creation of the world', of the countless different kinds of creations which I brought into being as the 'path of return' for the spirits, in order to guide all fallen spirits back to their origin again, in order to guide them back to Me, because they can only be happy again when they are united with Me, whereas the distance from Me signifies a state of utter wretchedness. I Am now trying to make this information accessible to you humans, for you are these fallen spirits which are on the path of return to Me and are approaching the goal. You had changed your once perfect nature into the opposite and became imperfect.

Even as human beings you are still imperfect creatures, but you are able to perfect yourselves during your earthly life if only you fulfill My will, if you fit in with My law of divine order, if you live a life of love and completely change your nature into love again, as it was in the beginning. Love reunites you with Me, but you have to accept it from Me voluntarily again. You must not resist it when My love wants to illuminate you once more; you have to do your utmost in order to fulfill your task in earthly life, which solely consists of directing your will towards Me, of surrendering to Me and striving towards Me with love. Then profound knowledge will be revealed to you, the darkness within you will recede, you will achieve bright realization, understand all correlations and leave the state of wretchedness, you will enter into union with Me and in this unity find the former bliss again which you once voluntarily relinquished but which belongs to every being that once originated from Me as a radiant image of Myself, and which it irrevocably will become again one day, because this has been and will remain the goal of My creation: to educate 'children' for Myself who can create and work with Me in supreme happiness."

Earthly Task: Volition - wrong endeavour

BD No. 5557 of 12/15/1952 taken from book 61

God the Father is speaking: "You had to walk a difficult path before you reached the point when you were able to make the last test of will. Your soul, which had previously been dissolved into countless sparks of soul in order to endure a process of maturing in a constrained state, has assembled itself again. Once again you have attained your self-awareness and as individual beings you are about to make a free choice: to choose the Lord to whom you want to belong. This decision is the purpose and goal of your earthly life, and this decision has to be made of your own free will. It cannot be made by someone on your behalf, nor can it be delayed, it has to be made without fail by the end of your life, because this decision will determine your fate for eternity. Your attitude towards this task during your earthly life is therefore immensely serious, it can result in light and bliss but also in death and destruction, and you alone determine this through your will. But you are hardly bothered by it, even when you are informed of the reason for your earthly life, even when your eternal fate is described to you as either glorious or dreadful. Because you don't believe that sooner or later you will have to be accountable for your will. However, you cannot be forced to believe it, consequently the belief is rarely found amongst humanity and people only rarely accomplish their goal of deciding for the right Lord. Yet disbelief has its price.

People increasingly forget their task in life; their every consideration merely concerns the world regardless of the fact that they will soon have to leave it. They face again what they leave behind. The memory of their past course of suffering through the material forms was taken from them because they will have to make their decision with freedom of will and may not choose the right Lord out of fear. Hence there is an imminent danger that their decision will be detrimental to them, that they will devote all their senses to matter and by doing so also choose the lord of this world, to whom they will fall victim once more and return to the abyss due to their wrong decision. Because they should turn their eyes towards heaven, they should strive to ascend and turn away from the world. Then the right choice was made, then the course through the whole of creation was successful, then earthly life will result in the being's culmination, then the soul has found the right Lord and will hasten to meet Him. Then the person has passed the test of will on earth and can discard the heavy earthly body and enter eternity as a pure spirit, and then the former long earthly progress on earth has not been in vain. *The being has found its way back to its source; it has recognized the Father and surrendered itself to Him for all eternity.*"

The Guardian Angel Azariah speaks about Humanity.

MV - The Book of Azariah: 169-171

Azariah is speaking: "This falling of Humanity was also Providence; this sinking into mire, to remind himself that he is mire animated by God, in itself only mire, by the will of God: spirit in mire, to sanctify him, to give him an imprint, a likeness to the Unknown, the Perfect, the Spirit, and the Eternal. *This falling at the start of his day was Providence, so as to have a long expiation and be able to rise again the whole way, return to Heaven from the abyss, go back with good will, with the help of the Savior, with the battle against Temptation, with the fortitude*

breaking the chains of concupiscence, with Faith, Hope, Charity, with holy Humility and holy Obedience, to come to be deservedly glorious and free with the glorious freedom of the children of God.

Too often man sterilely (failing to produce or incapable of producing offspring) curses the first sin and blasphemes against God as an imprudent Lord who has placed Man in temptation stronger than he is. But what would have happened if Man, instead of yielding to the Temptation leading him to believe that by eating the forbidden fruit he would become like God, if, without any tempter, he had come to believe himself to be God on his own, because he was sinless, without pain, without death?

Then there would not have been any redemption, because Man would have been a new Lucifer – rather, a numberless legion of Lucifer's, for, in the course of the centuries, Mankind would have increased through all those begotten, and not one man and one woman, but all would have sinned by this sacrilegious heresy, and the whole race would have perished in an infernal punishment.

The Creator loved the most beautiful creature in creation. The one in whom the soul cast forth heavenly lights. And he wanted it in a condition to be saved still. So? Can man doubt that God could not have prevented Satan from entering Eden? No, do not think this. But believe that God's act was good, like all his acts, and the cause of an infinitely good act, as was the Incarnation of the Word for the salvation of man.

'We know that until now all creatures sigh and are in birth pangs.'

In fact, each one must give birth to himself, the eternal self, the one born to Heaven or Hell at the moment the first death removes the soil and breath, and the first call, before Him who cannot be deceived, takes place. From matter, like fruit from a flower - from the matter that the sacraments help to change (from a chain, a hindrance, a burden or sanctification to birth, Life as an immortal son of God, the blessed citizen inhabiting Heaven) - from matter, like fruit from the flower, the son of God, the brother of Christ, sharing in the divinity through the divine promise, we'll be begotten, with tears in his whole life, with a burden of gestation throughout life.

'You are gods' is written in Scripture and in the letters of Paul. Nor did Jesus deny that man, in becoming holy with a constant effort towards perfection, because similar to God His Father, and the measure of a son towards the Father, of the creative spirit in relation to the Most Holy Uncreated Spirit.

But to arrive at this glorification it is necessary to sigh and suffer with patience and hope, with Faith and love, just like a mother who for long months suffers and hopes, and willingly confronts pain provided she can give birth to her child.

Do you see how good God is? He grants procreation to matter, almost being little creators. But He grants that all spirits may re-create themselves, for the soul, given by God, can recreate and super create itself, reaching the sublime dignity of children of God, sharing in the Father's eternal glory.

And not just these, but we, too, who have the first fruits of the Spirit, sigh inwardly, awaiting adoption as children of God and the redemption of our bodies, in Jesus Christ Our Lord.

Possessing extraordinary gifts does not eliminate having to suffer to re-create oneself for Heaven. Indeed, in proportion to the joy coming to you from Heaven, you must be able to suffer to arrive at loftier degrees of spiritual perfection. And isn't having the 'word of God' having the first fruits of the Spirit, soul of mine? Let your strength; therefore, be in proportion to this grace. Proceed, from your safe refuge, from the arms of your Father, who comforts you and your tribulation and gives you his consolations to compensate you for those which men deny you. Keep yourself in the Light so that your eyes will be illuminated, and you will never fall asleep in spiritual death - so that the one who is your enemy can never say, 'I have defeated her!' Consider that you must be wide awake, just, luminous, and wise, for both your soul and the Work of God, which even a slight defection of yours, would depreciate. Be holy to give joy to God, peace to your soul and eternal life, and not diminish God's gift. Consider that you would play into the hands and his, of your enemies. Crown your brow with thorns, be steadfast under flagellation, and go beneath the cross. But make those tormenting you have to say one day the words of the crucifiers on Calvary: 'This was a just spirit,' and beat their breasts, saying, 'The sufferings we have occasioned her weigh upon our conscience and cry out to God, because we have oppressed an innocent one who served God. We have thus combated God.'

Come, come, soul of mine, ever more beloved soul. Come; rest on the breast of Him who does not betray his children. Rest upon the One who is given you as your Father."

Matthew 7:15-22: False Prophet

Beware of false prophets, who come to you in sheep's clothing, but underneath are ravenous wolves. By their fruits you will know them. Do people pick grapes from thorn bushes, or figs from thistles? Just so, every good tree bears good fruit, and every rotten tree bears bad fruit. A good tree cannot bear bad fruit, nor can a rotten tree bear good fruit. Every tree that does not bear good fruit will be cut down and thrown into the fire. So, by their fruits you will know them.

The roots of this parable began in the Garden of Eden. **every good tree bears good fruit:** The good tree refers to *The Tree of Life* that is encountered at the beginning of Genesis 2:9 and 3:22 and that is found again at the end of the Apocalypse of John 22:2,14 The good tree is a figure of the Incarnate Word - whose fruit, the Redemption, hung from the wood of the cross - of that Jesus Christ is the Bread of Life, the Fount of Living Water, Grace, and who has given you Life with His Death, and you can always eat and drink of Him in order to live the life of the just and have eternal Life. This tree represents Christ and can only produce good fruit.

Every rotten tree bears bad fruit: This tree refers to The Tree of Knowledge - good and evil. Our Lord forbids Adam and Eve from eating those useless ones from the Tree of Knowledge. *Because an excess of knowledge would have awoken pride in man, who would then have believed himself to be equal to God on account of his newly acquired knowledge.* And he would have foolishly believed himself capable of being able to possess it without danger, with the consequent rising of an abusive right of self-judgment of his own actions and of acting,

consequently, by trampling on every duty of filial obedience towards His Creator - given that, at this point, he was similar to Him in knowledge - His Creator, who had lovingly showed him right and wrong, directly or by infused grace and knowledge.

The Tree of Knowledge, Satan's tree, can only produce evil. It may seem good on the surface, but underneath is great evil. Once a person eats from this tree he is then marked *on the forehead and on the hand* that expresses a total dependency on the part of those who are designated by this sign. The sign indicates him who is an enemy of Christ, that is to say, the sign of the Antichrist. In his mark, which is stamped, signifies the complete belonging of the person thus marked to the army of him who is opposed to Christ and to fight against his divine and royal dominion.

The forehead indicates the intellect, because the mind is the seat of the human reason. The hand expresses human activity because it is with his hands that man acts and works. Nevertheless, it is the person who is marked with the mark of the Antichrist in his intellect and in his will. **Every tree that does not bear good fruit will be cut down and thrown into the fire.**

Adam and Eve, with their own free will, had chosen to eat from the Tree of Knowledge. This resulted in devastating consequences for both of them and their descendants. All life on earth was destroyed except for the remnant in the Ark of Noah which was a sign of God's Mercy. This act of disobedience would not only affect Adam and Eve but will affect all mankind until the end of the world.

By their fruits you will know them.

Ref: Sermon_St_Seraphim.doc, 06-11-2001 Edited by Donald Shufran

"The enemy prompts man not to do any good deeds, or to do them good out of vanity, or merely for virtue's sake rather than for Christ's sake. The human will, prompts us to do everything to flatter our passions, or else it teaches us like the enemy, to do good for the sake of good and not care for the grace which is acquired by it. But God's all-saving will, consists in doing good solely to acquire the Holy Spirit, as an eternal, inexhaustible treasure which is priceless. The acquisition of the Holy Spirit is, in a manner of speaking, the oil, which the foolish virgins lacked. They were called foolish just because they had forgotten the necessary fruit of virtue, the grace of the Holy Spirit, without which no one is or can be saved, for: 'Through the Holy Spirit every soul is quickened and through purification is exalted and illumined by the Triune Unity in a Holy mystery.'



by it. But God's all-saving will, consists in doing good solely to acquire the Holy Spirit, as an eternal, inexhaustible treasure which is priceless. The acquisition of the Holy Spirit is, in a manner of speaking, the oil, which the foolish virgins lacked. They were called foolish just because they had forgotten the necessary fruit of virtue, the grace of the Holy Spirit, without which no one is or can be saved, for: 'Through the Holy Spirit every soul is quickened and through purification is exalted and illumined by the Triune Unity in a Holy mystery.'

The oil in the lamps of the wise virgins could burn brightly for a long time. So these virgins, with their bright lamps were able to meet the Bridegroom, who came at midnight. With Him, they could enter the bridal chamber of joy. But the foolish ones, though they went to the market to buy more oil, when their lamps were going out, were unable to return in time, for the door was already shut. The

market is our life; the door of the bridal chamber, which was shut and barred the way to the Bridegroom is human death; the wise and foolish virgins are Christian souls; the oil is not the good deeds, but the grace of the All-Holy Spirit of God which is obtained through good deeds and which changes souls from one state to another - such as, from a corruptible state to incorruptible state, from spiritual death to spiritual life, from darkness to light, from the stable of our being (where the passions are tied up like dumb animals and wild beasts) into a temple of the Divinity, the shining bridal chamber of eternal joy in Christ Jesus our Lord, the Creator, Redeemer and eternal Bridegroom of our souls.

How great is God's compassion on our misery, that is to say, our inattention to His care for us, when God says: "Behold, I stand at the door and knock" (Rev. 3:20), meaning by "door" the course of our life which has not yet been closed by death! Oh, how I wish, your Godliness, that in this life you may always be in the Spirit of God! 'In whatsoever I find you, in that will I judge you,' says the Lord.

Woes betide us if He finds us overcharged with the cares and sorrows of this life! For whom will be able to bear His anger, who will bear the wrath of His countenance? That is why it has been said: 'Watch and pray, lest you enter into temptation' (Mk. 14:38), that is, lest you be deprived of the Spirit of God, for watching and prayer brings us His grace."

Chapter 5: Death Enters the World



The Earth was cursed because of Adams Sin - Was Adam the only Human Being Created by God? – The Devils Plan to destroy Humanity –Who was the “ancestor-pre-human-female” that conceived Cain? Knowledge of Adam, Adam and Cain, - experiments with genetic manipulation, Destruction of the Moon – asteroids, Is our Moon an artificial Satellite, Satan Splits and divides – the continents, Consequences of Adams sin, The Offering by Cain and Abel, Cain and Abel – the resentfulness of Cain, Cain slays Abel, Cain, where is your brother, Cains curse and fight. . .

The Earth was Cursed Because of Adam's Sin

MV - Epistle of St Paul to the Romans: 235

God the Father is speaking: "The world is populated; rather, it has been populated from the beginning by unreasonable creatures and by reasonable creatures. Populated not so there could be many of every species, but because many were the species of the unreasonable creatures, and above these, was the pair of the two creatures endowed with reason and with a spiritual and immortal soul, very different from the one which is called 'living soul' in Chapter 1:30 of Genesis and which was not but the breath for which in the Book,



it is written of them who 'had breath in their nostrils.' And all things that had been made were 'good' to the judgment of the same God Creator who is absolute and perfect Goodness.

They were 'very good.' Of what goodness: Only that of serving as an aid to man in cultivating Eden, or as food, or as a delight? That is, of a passive goodness because that is what they had to do, or of a servile goodness towards man, a creature different from every other because of his erect position, the magnificence of his walk, the beauty of his face, the power of his actions and voice, for that dominion peculiar to a reasonable being which manifests itself in his secure will, in his decisive command, in his capacity of rewarding or punishing justly all things which command the inferior being to a natural subjection?

No. They were 'very good' because they were still lacking in savageness, and wickedness and cunning; and the lion dwelled with the young sheep, and the wolf with the lamb, and the leopard with the kid, and the young ones of the bear gazed with those of the mare, just as it transpires from verse 19 of the second chapter of Genesis, when it is said that Adam familiarly stays with all the animals of the earth and of the air, by giving a name to them all, without suffering an insult from the most ferocious ones amongst them, nor without striking fear in any of them since they were good and they felt instinctively that man, too, was "good", who would not have punished them without having had a motive to do so; and so, too, *as Isaiah predicts that it shall be, when 'the knowledge of the Lord,' that is, the kingdom of the spirit will have truly filled the Earth.* (Isaiah XI:6-9)

Then Adam sinned and the Earth was cursed because of him, and from amongst the many tribulations which she [the Earth] bore to the fallen man, because he made himself in subordinate to God, was that of the insubordination of the inferior creatures towards him. And he, besides drawing with toil his daily nourishment from the Earth that had become cursed, had to struggle to defend himself from the animals that were no longer good, rebellious towards him as he towards the Creator, enemies amongst themselves because the disorder had by now established its kingdom, which will last until the coming of the day of the Lord and of his kingdom, and heaven and earth as they are now will disappear and

there will be a new heaven and a new Earth, Apocalypse 21:1 and the suffering of creatures will end.

Because the day and the eternal kingdom will truly have come for all the children of God who, until that day, will always have to struggle, sigh and groan, so as to generate the 'son of God' from themselves, born as such not 'of blood nor of the will of the flesh,' but for having received the divine Life, by having received the Word made Man, He of whom Isaiah writes, repeating the words of the eternal Word, 'I have redeemed you and have called you by [your] name: you are mine, I am your Savior.'

Devils Plan to Destroy Humanity

Ref: Conchiglia San Juan Diego November 30th, 2013

Genesis 4:1 **The Man had relations with his wife Eve, and she conceived and bore Cain, saying, "I have produced a man with the help of the Lord."**

"I AM the Father Conchiglia, and my glory is the Living Man. It is you I have chosen to glorify the Mother of My Son Jesus. It is you I have chosen to glorify My Church. Leave outside of you every voice that will break out against you because those empty of Me can neither understand nor comprehend. That which I am about to tell you will unleash even more the envy of Lucifer that will shake the earth as it has never done. It will be an overturn of everything, and nothing will remain in place because his goal has always been to destroy Humanity, to destroy My children, to destroy Man whom I have created in My Image and Likeness. Oh Man! My Creation! My project on him was and still marvelous and for this reason Lucifer was and is still envious and jealous.

Conchiglia, moreover it is time to tell you things that I have not said because it was not time, and since it is to you that I have entrusted the "Secret of the King" it is within you that I have kept the "precious pearl" and the pearl is born from the conch. Listen daughter, Man's creation began on Planet Earth the most beautiful Planet of the Universe, rich in everything that would worthily serve to receive Man created in My Image and Likeness. Yes, upon Planet Earth it all started. "Project Humanity" started then; it would spread through the earth. The First Man, Adam was created most intelligent with supernatural gifts unimaginable to you, precisely in My Image and Likeness. Yes, upon Planet Earth it all started. "Project Humanity" started then; it would spread throughout the Universe.

The First Man, Adam was created most intelligent with supernatural gifts unimaginable to you, precisely in My Image and Likeness. **What I am going to say, takes place within "a space-time" that does not exist and that no one can link to years and seasons if not roughly and tentatively.** The Adam and the Innocent Woman, the First Couple. *The Adam and 'ancestor-prehuman-female' conceived Cain, the first Hybrid.* The Adam and the Innocent Woman conceived the "first genetically pure child" even to My Image and Likeness, Abel (a Child of God). After him, other children genetically pure, but also after Cain there were other hybrids. Both the 'pure' and the 'hybrid,' intelligent different, however, in their exteriority, and Death entered the World.

To simplify I will say, that Good and evil coexisted on the same grounds. Both have colonized Planet Earth and have evolved in its own scope. One lived more, others less. Pure living longer, pure children had a longer gestation time,

while the hybrids had a shorter gestation time, and so developed more in number. Both the pure and hybrids have progressed in science to the point of colonizing other Planets and bring their 'different lives' onto other Planets, there to multiply, and so Man spread onto many Planets of the Universe in times to come.

The sin of pride and hybridization at Adam had by now proclaimed, and centuries and centuries succeeded with the First Man still alive because it was created with all the supernatural gifts necessary for him to live on the Earth and hence accomplish the 'procreation-collaborative project.' The rebellion and arrogance had exceeded all limits and degrees and now Adam was self-assured of himself, so he challenged Me and fathered, with his semen without the natural contact, and experimented to create other hybrid breeds; so many, with different characteristics.

These hybrid beings of many races were still very smart and over the turn of centuries have ventured across Planet Earth and other planets, colonizing. And so on other planets lived 'pure children and hybrid children' each with its own characteristics. Their goal was the conquest and power so wars after war succeeded on earth, and other planets in heaven. And wars still exist.

Adam was the First Man created by Me, then became filled with arrogance and rebelled and gave life and started the "alien extraterrestrial race" and not the other way around as self-proclaimed scholars speculate. The evil alien races, you call them devils. The alien race that love me, call them angels. You have defined them 'gods' 'your creators' and they behave so that you believed it to better subjugate and enslave you. You have considered and still consider them, superior beings to you, most advanced but instead, in the beginning 'you are superior,' 'pure children' before hybridization.

Because of wars and resulting catastrophes once again Planet Earth had to start again and almost all memory lost, and those who were 'younger siblings' preserving the Love for Me have evolved and will appear as your older siblings. Planet Earth now cohabits, 'good' alien beings and 'evil' alien beings; the good ones to defend and protect Planet Earth from yourselves and the wicked ones to manipulate and destroy your habitat to conform it to their biological nature."

Who was the "ancestor-pre-human-female" that Conceived Cain?

Our Lord has already mentioned that He populated the whole earth because many of the fully matured original spirits desired their last embodiment on earth and because every one of these original spirits was entitled to undertake the final test of will within the human being. There were a large number of them, and everyone had many followers. And for all these Our Lord chose the living conditions which suited their various inclinations, and thus, having created its human external form, He placed every original spirit appropriately, consequently reproducing himself corresponding to His will and His natural law. The procreation method was the same everywhere, which is why Our Lord always joined the original spirit with a second spirit.

The reason why the "ancestor-prehuman-female" is called "prehuman" is because she existed before Eve and is not from the direct line of Adam and Eve. *God gave human covers to those original spirits who consciously wanted to take the path across earth. The "ancestor-prehuman-female" was one of those spirits. It*

was through the blessing that God gave to Adam, that Eve was created and gave birth to the "first genetically pure child" who was in the Image and Likeness of God, Abel (a Child of God).

Since there is no name mentioned for the "ancestor-prehuman-female" that gave birth to Cain, the first hybrid, you could easily have called her "Hagar" after the Egyptian slave woman that Abraham had relations with and caused the descendants of their son Ishmael to be born into slavery because they were descendants from Hagar, the Egyptian slave of Sarai (Abraham's wife). Ishmael was also a hybrid because he was not from the direct line of Abraham and Sarah. Ishmael's descendants were called the "children of the flesh" just like Cain. It was only after Abraham received the blessing from God that Isaac was born and thus became the "child of the promise."

Adam received the blessing from God, which took place many years after the birth of Cain, when Eve was created from the rib of Adam and gave birth to Abel. Abel, who was a child of God, was overcome by the evil of his brother, Cain, and became the first pure child of God to be martyred. Cain, no longer a child of God had fled God to accept Satan, just like Ishmael, and became just like his father, and like his father, he ventured precisely into what was illicit, degrading, and bestial. This evil became so corrupt that it brought down God's wrath on mankind because evil had contaminated almost all of God's children.

It is the free will of man that decides the future and eternal destiny. As it was through Adam's will that made him fall, as it was through Cain's will in becoming a fratricide and fugitive by giving origin to the children of the flesh, that is, to those who have come out of every law, moral as well.

From Adam on, everything has been corrupted by those who have followed suit. Remember that "Cain was the fruit of Adam" and the first to kill "a Son of God," Abel. And from then until now because of Original Sin the killers can no longer be counted.

However, Adam's direct descendants from Eve and Abraham's direct descendants from Sarah, will accept divine knowledge more easily and hence belong to the human generation which will find redemption while still on earth, so that the soul will be able to become free while still on earth if they accept Jesus Christ's act of Salvation. Who, apart from the original sin, also took Adam's past sin upon Himself and thus purchased humanity's salvation from His adversary through His death on the Cross.

Knowledge of Adam

Ref: Conchiglia –San Juan Diego July 28, 2014

The Holy Spirit is speaking: "I want to reveal to you things that relate to the 'First Man, Adam and the Innocent Woman.'

I start by saying and reaffirming that if 'the sons of God' although few are still living on Earth, it is thanks to the love and loyalty of the 'Innocent Woman.' Repeat this to put it even more in evidence the most grave sin of the 'First Man,' created in the Image and Likeness of God the Father and established as 'Lord over the Earth,' was so filled with pride up to the point to believe to have the right to replace Him and to proceed without Him because of 'self-awareness.'

Imagine only a small part of all the gifts that God the Father bestowed and infused onto His 'Man created,' you must make a great mental effort that at the beginning will disturb you but then it will shine bright in your heart and in your mind and now you will make an extra mental effort to control your anger and your pain to learn about the plundering undergone on you and for which, you cannot even understand the whys and wherefores when Jesus spoke to His sons and brothers, defined them Gods.

Reflect on this, even with its Women besides him even before the Original Sin, accomplishes the continuation, the 'Project of God' in view of all the generations to follow that are Humanity? The 'First Couple,' since before, did not have the material and spiritual examples of which you take advantage with a legacy of millennia and millennia if not more because you will lose count of the years. You, to know and learn about anything you need to avail yourself of teachers, of books, testimony of every kind and on any field the study of computer science has helped you much. But the 'First Man and First Woman' by who have they learned? They had manifested the 'infused knowledge in every field.' Manifest, once adults. They did not need to ask because they already knew everything.

The Man and the Woman, as adults, were able to achieve anything their mind conceived and to their advantage they had a long lifeline to bring any project to completion. So, they and their children, and their children's children generation after generation, would constitute the marvelous Humanity to glorify God the Father, the Creator.



Think about this, turn your thinking, for example, to distinguished Scientist. You are well aware that even through you are physically alike, he is mentally superior. The comparison scares you, because you can barely remember what you have studied as a child while he is able to do extremely complicated calculations, to plan a trip into space. Now, this kind of man, imagine him in other fields of knowledge and practicality, for example in Medicine, in Sculpture, of Music and any other that comes to mind. Logic leads you to think and say, that every man is bright to do a specific job according to their own aptitudes and faculties. And yet, all men have a thinking brain to do calculations and all men have hands, to be able to do any form of art and more.

And in this last example, I bring you this daughter, Our Conchiglia; even you can take pen and paper and start to write what God tells your heart and mind. But enough with the examples, as of tomorrow resolve to do anything and in any area! Yes, it is a provocation, because none of you can do all things and, in all areas, even though you have examples of examples, books about books and testimony of witnesses of countless generations before you, but finite in their time.

Every man who is born must learn from those who were born before him. If you follow this logic, every man should know everything that billions and billions of men over the generations, from the 'First Man' have learned.

But no, you have never been as limited as in this generation and the material and spiritual decay is horrible in the Eyes of God the Father. Can you at least in small part realize that the 'First Man' had every Gift, each feature and all wisdom and knowledge and that by the "sin of Hybridization" (by combining the genes of two different species or subspecies) has messed up the Man that you are today? Do you realize how you should have been, because it was the Will of the Father and how you are limited instead? Do you realize the why, Lucifer did not accept the Man as he was created by God and the fact that it had to be, Lucifer, second being of Light only to God to bow down and worship Man as created in the Image and Likeness of God in everything? The rebellion against God took place in the whole awareness both in Heaven with Lucifer and on Earth with the 'First Man' in the spiritual and material level, you are now 'their sub-product' enslaved, never to evolve and that since fifty million years.

Adam who was filled with arrogance and rebellion against God gave life and started the 'alien race' and not the other way around as self-proclaimed scholars speculate. The evil alien race, you call them devils. The alien races that love Me, you call them angels. You have considered and still consider them, superior beings to you, most advanced but instead, in the beginning, 'you are superior', 'pure children', before hybridization. Because of wars and resulting catastrophes once again Planet Earth had to start again and almost all memory lost, and those who were 'your younger siblings' preserving the Love for Me have evolved and will appear as your older siblings. On Planet Earth now cohabits 'good' alien beings (Angels) and 'evil' alien beings (Demons), the good ones to defend and protect Planet Earth from yourselves and the wicked ones to manipulate and destroy your habitat to conform it to their biological nature. Meanwhile they experiment on you, the good ones to improve your DNA, the wicked ones to study and figure out how to manipulate you better and thus destroy the body and the Soul and so finally take possession of Planet Earth, the most beautiful garden of the Universe.

It is time to break this 'satanic chain' but this chain has so many rings and each of you has a ring on hand. All together you have to decide to break the evil ring that you have in hand only like this will man regain his power, Gift of God, and still be able to start on the path traced by God and it is always the same, since the Beginning, namely the glorified Man in the Image and Likeness of God full of good physical and spiritual health and many years of life and no more death, cry or lament for the former things will have passed. Here, take a deep breath, calm the heart and immediately start the True Life in God."

Adam and Cain, Experiments with Genetic Manipulation

Ref: Conchiglia (July 12, 2014) Movimento D'Amore San Juan Diego

God the Father is speaking: "The wolf and the lamb shall forge means that the wolf will eat grass like the lamb. It also means that at the beginning of Creation all animals were peaceful and friends of man and fed on grass as I had established, in the perfection of what I had created.

The evil beings, descendants of Cain, have put in place many types of hybridization (to generate a new form of animal or plant by combining the genes of two different species or subspecies) on animals that they might kill each other

and kill the men. Experiments and achievements became disastrous and unfortunately are still carried out.

Know that man existed before the dinosaurs. These huge animals have not been created by Me but are the results of genetic manipulation exerted on harmless animals. The extent of these alien manipulations was to create ferocious animals to destroy 'men sons of God.'

The first experiments, led to create by means of hybridization huge herbivorous dinosaurs but perfected only after the abomination (death of Abel) and so followed the carnivorous and exterminator dinosaurs. The same experiments were also performed on the birds, some became huge, and killers of other species and men and the same thing happened to the fish. Insects are not My Creation.



Experiments and achievements became disastrous and unfortunately are still carried out. The descendants of Cain have put in place many types of hybridization on animals that they might kill each other and kill man.

God the Father is speaking: "These animals did not come from me."

What is repugnant comes not from Me anything that damages Man and Nature does not belong to me. Think about the little things in order to understand the big things. Some might say that the birds feed on insects, and I tell you that they were established for the grain, the same which fed the birds that you hold in a cage. Some might say that it is natural that the big fish eats the small one and I tell you that for both the plankton was established.

How many of you have a dog that I have established as man's friend? Look at them; puppies are all alike, tender and affectionate. But if man makes sense and loves animals My creatures, does not train them to be ferocious that brings them to kill, yet trains them to be good company and to help man in many areas because he knows that animals are generous and faithful.

From Adam on, everything has been corrupted by those who have followed suit. Remember that 'Cain hybrid (children of the flesh) fruit of Adam,' was the first to kill 'a Son of God, Abel.' And from then until now because of Original Sin the killers can no longer be counted.

Planet Earth is now invaded by hybrids spiritually vilest is soaked with the blood of billions upon billions of men."

Prehistoric animals that were not created by God! Where did they come from?



Adam and Cain experiments with genetic manipulation

Destruction of the Moon - asteroids

Ref: Conchiglia June 24th, 2014, July 9th, 2014

God the Father is speaking: "In the beginning of Creation, Planet Earth was completely still and did not rotate upon itself and also her 'true Moon' was still.

When Satan decided to appropriate the Earth through his servants **destroyed the 'true Moon' dispersed in many shattering asteroids**. They replaced the 'true Moon' with a 'new artificial moon' made it their base of operations, and from there through the magnetic energy induced a huge attraction *causing the inclination of the Earth and the consequent rotation*.

Can you imagine the scene, comparing the action of your hand on a top that from being still then starts spinning with all the negative consequences that resulted?

Nature is also controlled in the same way to slow down and keep at bay the food chain. Because of the 'night-darkness' Nature does not produce fruit and man is forced to work much and tire much to draw nourishment from the earth and hence survive in slave form.

They persist on your body because they are unable to intervene completely on your 'reason-brain' and 'feeling-heart-Soul' because they have not found the access key that I only know. For this reason, they modified your DNA...to take away many years of life.

The 'Star Wars' exists; asteroids are directed specifically to destroy, if it were not for the Celestial Militia led by Saint Michael the Archangel. Humanity on Earth would have become extinct long time ago unimaginable to you because the Earth is now under the yoke of Satan. Multitudes of men are under the yoke of Satan. Only the children of God are not spiritually subjected, however, they are physically and materially. They have a free spirit, but the chains of society penalize and pursue them. Humanity is not free because it has departed from Me. Scientist have discovered the fact that the powers are strongly concealed. Not only is the 'satellite moon' inhabited and used as a base of operations to and from the Earth, but other planets also."



Part 1 <https://youtu.be/kpLY0YwMACE>

Part 2 <https://youtu.be/5wvqvRfgD8w>

When Satan destroyed the "true Moon" it dispersed into many shattering asteroids that crashed into the earth and destroyed the dinosaurs and most of Hybridized Humanity as it was in the Project of God. Then there were lightning flashes, rumblings, and pearls of thunder, and great earthquakes that were so violent they dived the earth into many cotenants.

Jesus is speaking: "Once the monsters were destroyed, Humanity was preserved and multiplied again from the lineage of Noah, judged just by God. Thus, it was returned to the first nature of the first man, still made of matter and spirit, and remained so even after sin had stripped the spirit of divine Grace and of its innocence." MV - Epistle of St. Paul to the Romans: 135 -141

Is Our Moon an Artificial Satellite?

Ref: <https://www.inquisitr.com/1917650/our-moon-is-an-alien-ufo-spaceship-parked-in-orbit-around-earth-ufologists-claim/>

“UFOlogists have proposed that the moon, believed to be a natural satellite of Earth, is, in fact, a huge spaceship, a gigantic UFO, parked in orbit around the Earth by an advanced technological civilization.

The proposal that the moon is an artificial satellite of Earth, specifically an alien spaceship, a massive UFO, parked in orbit around the Earth, is known as the Spaceship Moon Theory, Artificial Moon Theory, or Alien Moon Theory.

According to proponents of the Spaceship Moon Theory in the UFO community, there is evidence to suggest that the moon was built by an alien civilization with science and technology much more developed than ours.

The Spaceship Moon Theory claims that the moon, as an alien UFO parked in orbit around the Earth, has a hollow inside. In other words, the moon is a hollowed-out artificial structure containing an underground base serving also as the interior of a gigantic UFO spaceship.

The startling hypothesis was first proposed in 1970 by two Russian scientists, members of the Soviet Academy of Science, Michael Vasin and Alexander Shcherbakov, in an article, “Is the Moon the Creation of Alien Intelligence?”

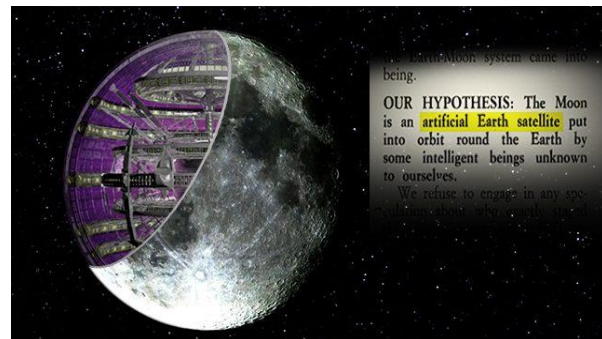
Vasin and Shcherbakov suggested that the moon was a natural space body converted into an artificial structure by alien engineers who melted the original solid core, deposited the molten lava on the lunar surface, and created an inner lunar space protected by an artificial shell below the outer shell we know as the lunar surface.

The alien race then placed their gigantic UFO in orbit around the Earth for reasons we can only speculate about.

Part of evidence that Vasin and Shcherbakov presented in support of the theory that the moon has an inner shell made of strong high-tensile engineering material was that lunar craters formed from impact of large space rocks are generally shallower than expected and that the bottoms of the craters tend to be flat or convex.

According to the theorists, this suggests that large meteors impacting on the lunar surface are unable to dig deeper because they hit an impenetrable inner shell made of a high-tensile material.

Vasin and Shcherbakov thus suggested that the moon consists of a natural rocky outer layer that is only about five miles thick and an inner shell that is up to 20 miles thick. Below the inner shell is a cavity that could contain an “atmosphere” to support alien life.



Other proponents of the hollowed-out Spaceship Moon Theory include Don Wilson, who published a book *Our Mysterious Spaceship Moon* in 1975, and George H. Leonard in his 1976 book, *Someone Else is On the Moon*.

One of the major reasons for believing the moon is hollow, according to Spaceship Moon theorists, is its calculated mean density of 3.3gm/cm³, compared with Earth's 5.5 gm/cm³.

Proponents of the Spaceship Moon Theory claim that the unexpectedly low mean density of the moon caused NASA Scientist Gordon MacDonald to remark, "[T]he data require that the interior of the Moon is more like a hollow than a homogeneous sphere."

MIT's Sean C. Solomon is also quoted as having written that "the Lunar Orbiter experiments vastly improved our knowledge of the Moon's gravitational field... indicating the frightening possibility that the Moon might be hollow."

An incident that Spaceship Moon theorists often cite as proof that the moon is hollow occurred on November 20, 1969, when the Apollo 12 crew conducted the Passive Seismic Experiment by crashing the Apollo 12 Lunar Module into the Moon, the impact created an artificial moonquake that caused the moon to reverberate "like a gong" for nearly an hour.

A similar observation was made during the Apollo 13 mission, with instruments recording reverberations that lasted for more than three hours, compared with a few minutes for the Earth, even in large earthquakes.

According to a NASA document relating to the 1970 Apollo 13 mission, "Nothing comparable happens when objects strike Earth."

"Back in November 1969, the Apollo 12 astronauts had sent their Lunar Module crashing into the Moon following their return to the command craft after the lunar landing mission. That Lunar Module struck with a force of one ton of TNT. The shock waves built up to a peak in eight minutes and continued for nearly an hour. The information from these two artificial moonquakes led to reconsideration of theories proposed about the lunar interior. Among puzzling features are the rapid build-up to the peak and the prolonged reverberations. Nothing comparable happens when objects strike Earth."

Spaceship Moon theorists claim that as a natural satellite, the moon is an outrageous anomaly, being obviously too big to have been captured naturally in the Earth's orbit, as Isaac Asimov acknowledged in his book *Asimov on Astronomy*, published in 1974.

The video below, produced by a Spaceship Moon theorist, lists some of the moon anomalies claimed to indicate that the moon is a gigantic alien spaceship.

The debate about the origin of the moon, supposedly a natural satellite of the Earth, continues to rage, and proponents of the Spaceship Moon theory point out that the seemingly intractable difficulties in accounting for the moon as a supposed natural satellite of the Earth point to its artificial, or more precisely, alien technological origin.

As far as UFOlogists are concerned, recent sightings of UFO fleets over the moon suggest there could be a massive underground hangar for spacecraft in the moon.

UFOlogists also point to testimonies by highly qualified NASA astronauts, such as Leroy Chiao and Buzz Aldrin.

UFOlogists poring over Google Moon images claim regular discoveries of anomalies on the lunar surface that indicate that the moon has a hollow inside that serves as an alien base and interior of a giant UFO spaceship.

UFOlogists have also held that the reason why NASA has not returned to the moon since the Apollo missions is that aliens are there." (Aliens are from the spirit world not from the worlds of matter thus they would not be visible to the human eye.)

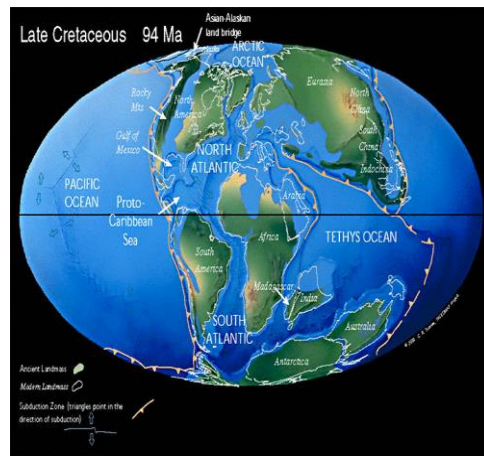
Hollow Moon Theory video:

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=3bUUXFuOvfo>

Satan Splits and Divides - the Continent

Ref: Conchiglia - San Juan Diego July 10, 2014

God the Father is speaking: "God creates and combines Satan divides and seeks to destroy what God creates. So he did and does since the beginning of his "non serviam." ***In the Beginning Planet Earth was configured from a single land mass surrounded and embraced by the water*** and life proliferated in every sense and language spread common to all. Then, the continents took shape, because of the wickedness of being's servants of Satan divided one from the other, **now distant from the other, the continents were surrounded by water and a**



large part of Humanity perished. They were lost their and knowledge as well, other languages were invented, and men no longer understand each other. In this terrible phase, Satan does not realize immediately that he contributed to eliminate from the face of the Earth most of Hybridized Humanity as it was in the Project of God."

NOTE: Let's stop and review what the earth was like at time of Adam just before the flood: **First**, the earth was one large land mass. **Second**, the earth did not rotate which meant that there was no darkness that covered the earth. **Third**, it did not rain on earth; the ground was watered from below. **Forth**, man lived a very long time, a thousand years+. **Fifth**, man had full knowledge about everything. **Sixth**, man experimented with the DNA of small animals, birds, and man that generated disastrous results – the dinosaurs. **Seventh**, man had abnormal relations with beings that produced giants and abnormal people. **Eighth**, man created a society without God. **Ninth**, man was full of violence that increased on the earth in the days before the flood. The whole earth was filled with violence, Gen. 6:1. The people grew weaker and wiser. They were full of hatred, envy, lust and pride. **Tenth**, the devil had taken the people over completely. They sold out to Satan. It seemed that they had no more control over themselves. Men went into apostasy before the flood. They had a satanic religion. They were controlled by the wrong spirit. It was because they refused to give up sin. All of creation, through the fault of the foolish vanity of man, who was the masterpiece of creation,

became acquainted with the ugliness of the Sin and of sins against God and against one's neighbor.

Life continued after the destruction of the dinosaurs and the breaking up of the earth into separate continents. **God the Father is speaking:** "My might and wisdom, My love for all created beings always and forever animated with the apostatized spirits, which were to accomplish their return to Me on this said work of creation called Earth. And according to their narrow field of vision they also only described the narrow region which they themselves occupied. And an account was given of the earthly process of development since Adam and Eve, the ancestral parents which, however, does not mean that the same happened in other places on earth, since these were still so far apart for the first human beings and partly separated by large areas of water, that every territory was a world in itself where the once fallen spirits were able to mature and embody themselves in a human being.

Yet the first people, Adam and Eve, had to take the test of will, and as a result of their fall the whole human race became weakened. The disobedience against My divine commandment had, due to My adverse spirit Lucifer, likewise arisen in those original spirits, and the hereditary sin, which consisted of changing the pure, divine love into selfish love, was repeated in these human beings too, for My adversary tempted all people, and his enticement succeeded because people still had too little knowledge of him who wanted to cause them to fall again. And people spread across the entire earth, but Adam was and remained nevertheless the founder of the human race, and people were informed of the descendants of his house and the following generations were recorded until the birth of Jesus, Who descended to earth as a result of the inherited sin in order to redeem humanity.

Since Adam, after Lucifer, had been the first fallen original spirit, he was also the first to be embodied as a human being, and if he had observed My easy commandment, he very quickly would have shed his external form, and all other original spirits would soon have given up their resistance as well, they unconditionally would have given themselves to Me, and their return to Me would have been guaranteed. Yet his disobedience was another opposition to Me, it was a repetition of the first sin of rebellion against Me. *However, owing to Adam's fall Lucifer had regained power, and he used it on each generation which, being as weak as Adam did not resist and remained weak until Jesus arrived in order to help them.*" Ref: BD No. 8237 of 08/11/1962 taken from book 87

NOTE: In the Book of Zechariah 14: 1-21 it reads: **When that day comes, there will be no more cold, no more frost. It will be a day of wonder – the Lord knows it – with no alterations of day and night; in the evening it will be light. When that day comes, running waters will issue from Jerusalem, half of them to the eastern sea, half of them to the western sea; they will flow summer and winter. And the Lord will be king of the whole world.** This verse is talking about the new earth which is also how it was when the existing earth was first created.

Consequences of Adam's Sin

MV - Epistle of St Paul to the Romans: 142-162

"Beyond the immediate and personal condemnation and its immediate and personal consequences, the sin of Adam and the condemnation provoked by it has had consequences that will last until the end of time, weighing heavily upon Humanity. As the forefather of the human family, *Adam has transmitted his infirmity to his descendants.*

It is written, 'By the work of man, sin entered into the world.' And it is the truth.

The Book of Wisdom, the Letters to the Hebrews and the Book of Psalms tell of this sorrow before Paul. It is always God who speaks through the mouth of His inspired ones.

This sorrow fills the world; it passes on from generation to generation and will not end for as long as the world does not end. With its howl, it has filled the place where Adam, with effort, drew bread from the clods (a lump or mass, especially of earth or clay.) onto which his perspiration dripped. And it has spread throughout the Earth, and the horizons, gorges, forests and animals, shuddering, have felt it and have transmitted it to one another. And like a blinding light, it made Adam and Eve see the immensity of their sin, not only committed against God, but also towards their flesh and blood.

Until that moment, the verdict of God had not yet destroyed the rebellion of man, who with the natural adaptability of an animal - because man lacking in Grace is nothing more than the most perfect of all animals - had quickly adapted himself to his new destiny, no longer easy and blissful as it was before, but not lacking in human joys which compensated for human sorrow.

The passion of the sense satisfied itself in the companion's flesh, not holy joined as God had wanted and as the innocent man, full of knowledge, had understood in Eden, to make himself one flesh only; the joy of creating by themselves - oh, persistent pride! - new creatures, fooling themselves in this way of being similar to God, the Creator; the dominion upon animals, the satisfaction of the harvests and of being self-sufficient without having to thank anyone; sensual joys, but nevertheless joys.

Oh, how much obscurity of the smoke of pride and of the mist of unrestrained concupiscence's obstinately persisted in the arrogant two. Childbirth was obtained with pain, but the joy of children compensated for that pain. Food was obtained with effort, but the stomach filled itself just the same and gluttony was satisfied, as the Earth was full of good things. Disease and health were distant, and perfectly created bodies enjoyed health and virility that made the arrogant two think that life was long-lived, even if not eternal. And fermenting pride provoked the deriding thought, 'Where is therefore the punishment of God? We are happy even without Him.'

However, the green of the fields, one day, on which the multicolored flowers created by God blossomed, turned red with the first human blood shed upon the Earth, and the mother howled upon the dead body of sweet Abel and the father understood that it had not been a vain threat that promised, 'You shall return to the ground from where you had been taken, for you are dust and into dust you shall return,' and Adam died twice, for himself and for his son, since a

father dies the death of his children seeing them dead, and Eve gave birth with torture, giving to the Earth the lifeless body of her beloved, and she understood what it was to give birth in sin.

However, equally in the same hour in which - and it was mercy again - the punishment of God struck, pride died and had given birth to repentance, the new life for which the Guilty two began the ascent on the path of Justice, and they merited after a long expiation and expectation, divine forgiveness through the merits of Christ."

The Offering by Cain and Abel

Ref: The Household of God Vol. 2 by Jacob Labore Chapter 18

Jesus is speaking: 'And behold, now the angel stepped up to Abel, gave him a brotherly kiss and recommended to all, especially Cain, the strictest obedience so that they might one day gain the full freedom and as a result the power and strength which represent the great might of the grace of merciful Love. In this way they would transform the serpent within into the image of Love and thereby produce fruits of blessing and never call forth the wrath of the Deity.



And now, listen with both your ears to what happened furthermore. - They all went to their assigned places and did as they were commanded by the supreme love out of Me and lived thus in good order for a period of ten revolutions of the earth around the sun.

And behold, there came a very hot day and the sun burnt hotter than usual on the heads of the children and on Cain's body, so that he became irritated at the great heat and cursed the sun. The children, however, were patient and washed themselves with fresh water, which refreshed and strengthened them. They also drank the water, quenched their burning thirst with it and praised God for so great a mercy that out of His eternal love He had left them the little brook for such trying times.

Not far from the hut Cain had built to the best of his ability from the branches of trees and covered with the straw of wheat, there flowed a mighty stream which I had called forth from the depth of the mountains, which are similar to the mountains of the moon, and rise in the center of the great land of Ahalas (or the cradle of the children of the weak and the descendants of Adam and is the ancient land which you still today call 'Africa').

And behold, Cain did not want to use the water and became lazy and idle in the great heat and did not know what to do. He did not turn to Me for advice, let alone to his brother Abel.

And lo, there came again the Sabbath of the Lord and, thus, also the time for offering. Owing to his irksome laziness on account of the great heat, Cain took ten sheaves, which no longer contained fruit, because he found it too troublesome to carry the full sheaves to his altar and also because he considered the burning of

the fruit a waste when he could three times make bread from it for himself. And so with such evil thoughts, he placed the empty straw on the altar and ignited it, but the smoke did not rise towards the sky, but sank down to the ground, and Cain became even more annoyed in his heart.

At the same time also, the pious Abel ignited his offering before the eyes of the Lord and spoke, deeply moved: "O You good and holy Father, looking so graciously at me weak being with all the power of Your intense love through the great eye of Your sun! Although your great love does burn my skin, in this great warmth of your boundless love for us sinners my heart beats all the more fervently towards You!

Ah, once it was Your wrath that burnt the earth, O Jehovah, but now love is burning out of You, O holy Father!

How sweet is this burning of the pure fire of life out of You! It is a holy preparatory school, which is to make me capable of one day receiving the purest life out of You. Oh, how boundlessly good You must be, most holy Father that You allow us already here on this earth to meet the incomprehensible greatness of Your immense grace so powerfully!

This fire, which my weak love has ignited for You, how cold it is compared with Yours and how small and dark in comparison with the one which is radiating down to us unworthy beings from Your distant sun which is only a small drop from the immeasurable sea of Your boundless mercy!

Therefore, do graciously accept this my small offering on behalf of all of us as a humble pledge of our fervent love for You, best and most holy Father, and keep us constantly in Your intense love which You graciously let all of us feel from Your sun. Amen.

Yours be all the might and power over all there is on earth. And You alone are worthy of receiving all the praise, honor and glory from us who through Your great, merciful grace are allowed to call ourselves Your blessed children. Amen."

Cain and Abel – the resentfulness of Cain

Ref: Gen 4: 2-16

Abel became a keeper of flocks and Cain a tiller of the soil. In the course of time Cain brought an offering to the Lord from the fruit of the soil, while Abel, for his part, brought one of the best firstlings of his flock. The Lord looked with favor on Abel and his offering, but on Cain and his offering he did not. Cain greatly resented this and was crestfallen (downcast or humiliated). So the Lord said to Cain: "Why are you so resentful and crestfallen? If you do well, you can hold up your head; but if not, sin is a demon lurking at the door: his urge is towards you, yet you can be his master."



Cain said to his brother Abel, "Let us go out in the field." When they were in the field, Cain attacked his brother Abel and killed him. Then the Lord asked Cain, "Where is your brother Abel?" He answered, "I do not know. Am I my brother's keeper?" The Lord then said: "What have you done! Listen: Your

brother's blood cries out to me from the soil! Therefore, you shall be banned from the soil that opened its mouth to receive your brother's blood from your hand. If you till the soil, it shall no longer give you its produce. You shall become a restless wanderer on the earth. Cain said to the Lord: "My punishment is too great to bear. Since you have now banished me from the soil, and I must avoid your presence and become a restless wanderer on the earth, anyone may kill me at sight." "Not so! The Lord said to him. "If anyone kills Cain, Cain shall be avenged sevenfold." So the Lord put a mark on Cain, lest anyone should kill him at sight. Cain then left the Lord's presence and settled in the land of Nod east of Eden.

Cain Slays Abel

Ref: The Household of God Vol. 2 by Jacob Labore Chapter 19

Jesus is speaking: "Behold and hear what happened! Abel's altar of sacrifice was not far from that of Cain, and the whole distance amounted to seven times ten paces. Abel's altar was situated towards morning and that of Cain towards evening.

And behold, when Cain noticed that the smoke from Abel's altar was rising towards the sky, whereas the smoke from his altar was sinking to the ground, he became angry in his heart. However, he controlled his face so that his anger would not be noticeable, whilst Abel prayed for Cain since he had noticed his guile.

And the Lord heard Abel's prayer and, in response to the latter's pious wish, He made His voice be heard by the angry Cain and spoke with a forceful voice:

Cain, why have you become unfaithful to Me and allowed your heart to become filled with anger? And why do you disguise your feelings and lie with your eyes? You have evil designs against Abel! Is it not so? Deny it if you can!

I heard you curse My son, and I saw the empty sheaves which you considered good enough for Me in your indolence and greediness, and I also saw you several times in your laziness commit harlotry because most of the time you failed to do as commanded before you slept with your wife. Tell Me, is that not so?

And behold, I watched you patiently and did not allow My punishing right hand to strike you and did not get angry at you in My holiness. Therefore, consider My words and become pious in your heart and I shall find you agreeable, and your sacrifice shall be again accepted. However, if you persist in the hidden malice of your heart, sin will have settled at your door to rule you; and you and all your descendants will become its slaves and servants and death will come upon all of you.

Therefore, do not allow sin to rule you now, but break its will energetically and submit it to your own so that you may become free, a master of your will which is basically evil as it is out of you and not out of Me.

And Cain bent down to the ground as though he wanted to repent, but at his feet he caught sight of a serpent and was so terrified that he quickly rose from the ground wanting to flee to Abel. But lo, the serpent wound itself around his feet and he was unable to move from the spot.

The serpent raised its head, opened its mouth and, deceitfully, said to Cain: "Why do you want to flee me? What have I done to you? Look, I am a being like

you, but have to crawl on the ground in this miserable shape. Save me, and I shall be like you and more beautiful than your wife Ahar; and you will become like God, strong and mighty over all that exists on this earth."

And behold, then Cain said to the serpent: "You are lying; for when I found you in the grass, tore you up and consumed you, you had deceived me. How am I ever to believe your words again? On that occasion I had to suffer a great deal because of you, and therefore I am aware of your falsehood and can no longer trust you. And did you not hear the words of Jehovah from above?

Therefore, if there is any truthfulness within you, explain to me all this and convince me of the contrary. Then I will believe you and do what you wish."

And lo, the serpent spoke again, saying: "Look, it is all the fault of your brother Abel. He wants to seize by force the power to rule and rob you of your birth right as the first-born. All this he handles so cunningly that he has even mislead the Deity, pretending to be very pious in order that It may allow him to rule everything on earth and he can mock you and trample you in the dirt. For, on the day when you found me in the grass and did what I advised you to do, you would have become a lord over everything had not the artful cunning of your fine brother discovered what was going to happen to you and he had immediately come to you as though he wanted to help you, reigning brotherly love. Indeed, he did help you, but not to gain the throne, which belongs by right to you, but he helped you into misery and into a total nothingness of your exalted being. This you should have sensed already long ago.

Look, he was envious of you even in such a trifling thing as when the Lord had accepted your offering the same as his. And by his infamous tricks of flattery, he knew how to influence the anyway weak will of Jehovah to reject your offering and in addition give you a rude reprimand.

And look, he was disappointed that the Lord did not destroy you forthwith and you can now see how, with a deceitful prayer, he is trying to persuade the Lord to do to you what He has so far abstained from doing.

In his great cunning Abel wants through his infamous flattery to induce the Lord in His blindness to transfer all His power to him, whereupon he, Abel, will dethrone the Lord. Then God will be languishing on earth, but Abel will be a ruling god on the throne of Jehovah forever.

So do act now, for it is the last time that I am still able to give you the necessary strength to save God and yourself! Therefore, go to Abel quickly and speak to him with soft words to make him follow you here willingly. Then I shall hold him by the feet and bands, but you must take a stone and hit him hard on the head. This will give him the death he has had Jehovah threaten you with. Thus, you will prevent your otherwise certain death and open the eyes of the deceived God's blind love, and He will then make you lord over the earth and subject to you the death of sin.

And thus persuaded, in the wickedness of his heart, Cain went to Abel and said to him in a soft voice: 'Brother, brother, do come to me and free me from the serpent which again wants to destroy me!'

And Abel answered: 'That which you believe may happen has already happened. However, what you are asking of me in your depravity, I will do in my love. Death, which you intend to give me, shall come upon you and my blood with

which you will soak the earth shall cry to God and shall come upon you and all your children. And the stone with which you will slay your brother will become a stumbling block by which all your children will be shattered. But the serpent will spoil all the blood on earth and the blessed children will cry for revenge upon your blood. Then a great darkness will descend upon all of you, and no one will understand the voice of his brother, just as you no longer understand mine since you have allowed your own great wickedness to blind you in the shape of a serpent within you and without. This was, is and will forever be the true curse of God's just judgment.

And behold, since the Lord has shown me your secret evil plans and has made known to me your great anger, I am aware of what you intend to, and will, do with me, and why.

O you, whose blindness will continue to the end of all time, take me as an innocent victim and do to me according to your wickedness within you and without so that your serpent may forever be proved a liar and you may experience in yourself which of us is the deceived one.

Your insult to the Lord will take you captive, and after the deed your eyes and ears will be opened that you may see how the Lord will receive me as the last pleasing sacrifice from your hand, for there will be no more offering for you, but only death by which you have sacrificed your brother.

Behold, I have all power over you and could easily destroy you like the mountain beyond that stream towards midnight.

And lo, I shall call to the mountain and say: 'Here I am, Abel, the blessed of the Lord, filled with the might and power of the Holy Spirit. Vanish and come to nothing in order that Cain may learn how great his lie is!'

And now you see, Cain, how the immense mountain has vanished from existence through the power of the spirit of love within me. It would be quite as easy for me to destroy you! But in order to show you that there is no weakness in God and no base lust for power I now follow you willingly like a lamb to be slaughtered. – Now Cain took his brother gently by the arm and said to him: 'What do you think of me, Abel! I seek your help and you already accuse me of intending to murder you beforehand. Come, follow me to the spot where the serpent is waiting for you and destroy it as you did the mountain, and free me and save yourself from the accusation of the serpent!'

But Abel's reply was only brief: 'What is the difference between you and the serpent? - Do you in your blindness think that I, too, be a murderer of my brother? - Therefore, I will follow you and die for life, whereas you stay alive for death!'

Behold, these were Abel's last words to Cain, and Cain heard no further sound from the lips of Abel who followed him willingly.

When they had arrived at the spot where the serpent was waiting for Cain, this was the spot where Cain's wickedness became manifest by entangling Abel's feet and hands and throwing him to the ground. And Cain took a heavy stone and smashed Abel's head so that his blood and marrow stained the earth all around.

And the serpent freed itself from the feet of Abel, took the stone into its jaws, carried it to the door of Cain and hid itself in the sand under the thornbushes.

“

Cain, where is your brother?

Ref: MV PMG1: 488

Jesus is speaking: "Cain envied Abel's friendship with the Lord and he became the first killer. And the Lord said to Cain: 'Where is your brother? What have you done with him? The voice of his blood is crying to Me. Now you shall be accursed on the Earth that has tasted human blood at the means of a brother who has opened the veins of his brother and that horrid thirst of the Earth for human blood will never cease. And the Earth, poisoned by that blood, will be more sterile than a woman withered by age. And you shall be a fugitive seeking peace and bread. And you shall not find them. On account of your remorse, you shall see blood on every flower and blade of grass, on all waters and food. The sky will seem blood to you and the sea blood and from the sky, from the Earth and the sea three voices will reach you: the voice of God, of the Innocent, of the Demon. And you will kill yourself not to hear them.' Genesis does not say that: remarks Peter.



No. Genesis does not. But I do. And I am not mistaken. And I say so for the new Cain's of the new Abel's. For those who are not watching over themselves, and the Enemy will become one thing with him."

Cain's curse and fled to the land of Nod.

Ref: The Household of God Vol. 2 by Jacob Labore Chapter 20

Jesus is speaking: "And behold, from all sides black clouds gathered above the head of Cain and heavy lightning flashed in all directions accompanied by loud thunder. And hurricanes began to rage from all sides, hurling great masses of hail upon the fruit-laden fields totally destroying them. This was the first hail, which was thrown from the heavens, and the hail was a sign of Love without mercy as the Deity within It had once more been offended by Cain's crime against his brother Abel.

And the wicked Cain fled into his hut and found his wife trembling on the ground and beside her several of his mostly unblessed children lying like dead. And Cain shuddered, cursed the serpent, left the hut and found the stone the fleeing serpent had put in front of his door. He slipped on the stone and fell heavily to the ground and once more cursed the malice of the serpent and the deadly stone.

When he had risen again, his body sore, he went to the bank of the nearby stream to look for the cursed serpent and to destroy it.

Arrived at the river, he saw a horrible monster swim towards him. It was six hundred and sixty-six yards long and seven yards wide, had ten heads and from each head grew ten horns similar to a crown.

When this immense serpent had come quite close to him, it spoke from all its heads simultaneously, saying: "Well, you strong Cain, murderer of your brother, if you feel a match for me you may start with your work of destruction.

Once when I was still weak in the grass, you were able to tear me to pieces and consume my flesh and blood, but now this would hardly be possible to you

for the good food you have prepared for me from the blood of your brother has made me big and strong. If you are still willing to destroy me, you may begin to feed your vengeance with my blood. But since you have only ten fingers and not ten hands and are thus unable to seize all the heads simultaneously, the other eight will bruise you with their horns and consume you with their eight jaws.

Cain was terrified, fled from the sight of the serpent and cursed it again, realizing how mightily the serpent had deceived him. And he thought: 'Now that my brother Abel is no more, who will now reconcile me with the forever just God? O you three times cursed serpent, you are my brother's murderer and now wanted to become mine too! Oh, if I knew that you would perish if I perished, seven times would I revenge his death on myself!'

And behold, the serpent was standing behind him in the form of an extremely charming young girl and spoke to him: 'Do that, Cain, and I shall consume your flesh and drink your blood whereupon we shall again be completely one and rule all the world.'

And Cain gazed at the pretty girl and said: "Yes, this is your true form in which you are most terrible. Whoever will see you with your ten heads will flee you like a judgment of the Deity. But he to whom you will come in this form will run after you, catch you and love you more than God. He will be the happiest man when you will seize him with your, at all times, deadly hands, and the people will erect you temples and altars and will lick your spittle and eat your dirt.

Had I not seen you with the ten heads, I too would have become your slave. But now I know you well and detest you in this form even more than in the former ten headed one.

Said the beautiful girl: "But Cain, how can you fear these tender limbs of mine, this soft bosom?

'Oh, be silent,' said Cain, 'your tender limbs are serpents full of bitter venom, and under your soft, bloated bosom you have an impenetrable amour with which and by which your serpent's arms will crush my poor and weak face! For, shaped like this you will even make the giant Leviathan becomes your most obedient servant.'

And behold, the serpent-woman became inflamed by her inner fury and her whole being shone like the sun, and taking on the form of Abel she spoke again to Cain in the friendliest manner:

Cain, you blind fool, my bad brother, behold, the one whom you have slain with a stone is now standing before you, transfigured, and offers you his hand to make peace with him. Do not fear the form of the serpent, which is actually you yourself: Who became unfaithful to the Lord? Was it you or the serpent? Did you or the serpent sleep with your wife like the dogs, without the demanded offering beforehand? Was it you or the serpent that cursed the heat and, in his indolence, offered empty straw to the Lord? Tell me, was it the serpent or was it you who flew into a rage against his brother in his wicked jealousy? And was not the serpent just an outward manifestation of your own wickedness through which you persuaded yourself in your great delusion to kill your brother?

Why do you now curse the serpent which is, in fact, you yourself, and how can you take your own brother to be the personified serpent? And did not your own brother, when he was still in his physical body and you went to lead him to

his death pretending in your great villainy that you wanted him to free you from the serpent, ask you whether you thought that he, too, was a fratricide?

Say, is this not so? And if it is otherwise, then you may curse the serpent but do not take me, who came from above as a transfigured brother to help you, for the serpent, but only yourself. Give me your hand, which is still soiled with the blood of your brother, that it may be cleansed by my brotherly love from its great guilt, and you once more might find mercy before the eyes of the Lord.

And lo, in his blindness Cain was deceived by Satan and was on the point of offering the seducer his hand. But a mighty flash of lightning descended from the Sky and struck between the liar and Cain, and the would-be Abel was lying on the ground as a serpent. Cain was trembling all over, expecting the inevitable judgment from above.

Then Jehovah spoke from the clouds: 'Cain, where is your brother Abel? What have you done to him?'

Seeing the serpent lying on the ground, Cain soon took courage and said: 'Why do You ask me? Am I my brother's keeper?'

And Jehovah's voice spoke more forcibly: 'The blood of your brother with which you have soaked the earth is crying to Me! I have seen your deed. Where is Abel, your brother?'

And Cain said: 'Lord, my sin is so great that it cannot ever be forgiven.'

'Yes,' said Jehovah, 'therefore be cursed on the earth which has swallowed Abel's blood, and when in future you till the soil, it will no longer yield you bread. You shall wander about, a fugitive, without a roof over your head, like a wild animal and you shall live on thorns and thistles.'

Hearing this, Cain was mightily alarmed and said with a shaking voice: 'Lord, you forever Just one, behold, you are driving me today from this land, and I must flee from Your countenance and be a fugitive on earth. And it will come to pass that whoever finds me will slay me. Therefore, be merciful for the sake of my family!'

And behold, Jehovah speaks: 'No, nobody shall slay Cain, and he who would do that shall be slain sevenfold! In order that no one lays violent hands upon you, I will mark your forehead with a black stain, and no one shall ever know nor slay you.'

And Cain fled with his family from My sight far beyond Heden to the low land of Nod. Heden was a beautiful land of small hills with an abundance of the best fruit and Cain liked it very much and wanted to settle there. However, looking towards the hills he noticed everywhere a man of a forbidding appearance standing with a stone in his hand as if he were waiting for Cain in order to revenge his evil deed. This apparition was a sign of the great fear in his heart, and he knew that he could not remain here.

So, he fled on and on towards the east and came to a large valley. There he fell to the ground completely exhausted and slept for three days and three nights. Then a mighty wind blew down from the mountains, roused the sleepers, souged and roared over the vast plains and finally died down in the valleys of the land called 'Nod' or 'dry bottom of the sea'.

Again, Cain looked up to the high mountain peaks and here he no longer saw any men, but he did not know what to do. After a short while he raised his

arms and shouted at the top of his voice: 'Lord, You Most Just one, if from this great distance my voice still reaches Your ear, for the sake of the children and my wife look graciously across these mountain peaks at the marked fugitive from the eyes of Your holiness, which has marked my forehead with the night of sin, and let me have an unmarked forehead so that my evil deed may not be recognized, which is marked on the forehead, the hands and the chest of the great sinner whose sin is too great that it could ever be forgiven.'

And behold, a cloud came across the tall mountains at seventy-seven heights of man above the fugitive, and a powerful voice spoke from it. It was the voice of Abel and he said: 'Cain, do you know this voice?'

And Cain answered: 'O brother Abel, if you have come to take petty vengeance on me, your murderer, then do to me according to justice, but spare your blessed sister and her children!'

Then the voice spoke again, saying: 'Cain, he who commits a crime is a sinner, but he who repays evil with evil is a servant of sin. The one who rewards good with good has paid his debt, but there is nothing left for him. He, who rewards a good deed manifold, is worthy of his brothers. However, before God only one thing counts and that is, to return good for evil, bless those who curse their benefactors and give one's life for death.'

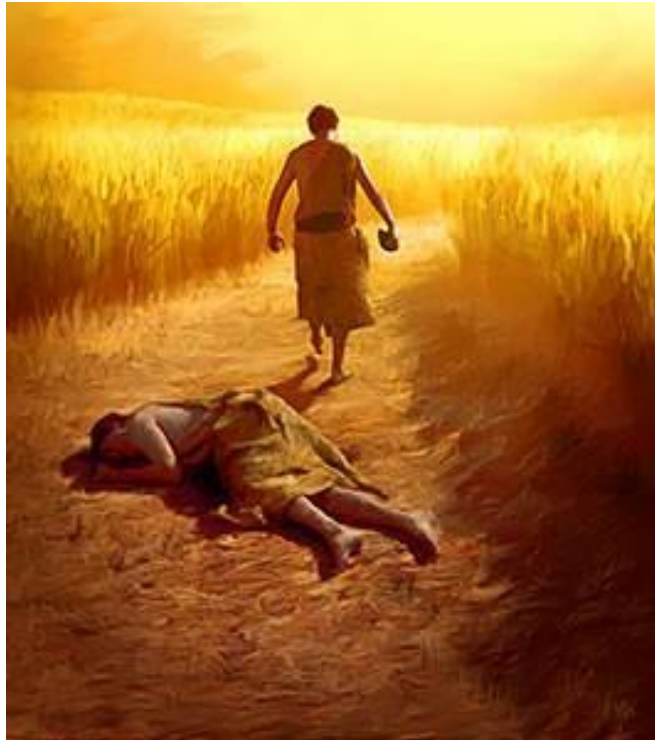
And behold, as the latter I come to you. So do not fear me, for I was sent from above, firstly, to show you that the Lord is true and faithful in all His promises and, secondly, to tell you that you are to remain in this land with your family and live on the fruit you will find here and, finally, also to let you know that your brother has forgiven you your wicked deed through the great love of the Father within him.

For my blood you shall atone with your tears of repentance until the stain has been washed off your forehead; and you shall guide your children and your wife in the fear of the Lord. If you will do this spontaneously out of fear of the Lord, you will remain and live as an outlaw, but if you do it out of love you will touch the hardened heart of justice."



And Cain fled with his family from My sight far beyond Heden to the low land of Nod.

Chapter 6: The Lord's Covenant with Cain



The Lord's Covenant with Cain, Enoch - Cain's Son as Lawgiver, The Laws of Enoch - the Tyrant, Cain's Journey to the Sea, The Development of Cains Line, Enoch's Godless Rule, The Policies of Enoch's Counselors, The Council of the Ten Rulers, The Departure of the Meduhedites, The Meduhedites Land in Japan, The Animal's Sermon of Repentance, Remembering Adam's Disobedience and God's Mercy, Original History of the Chinese People, Lamech's Family, Being and Cause of the Decline of the Children of the Heights, Adam explains His Weakness, Adam Blesses His Children . . .

The Lord's Covenant with Cain

Ref: "The Household of God" by Jacob Lorber: Chapter 21

Jesus is speaking: "And behold, Cain became reassured in his great fear. The cloud vanished and he wept tears of repentance and went to find food for his family. He kept thinking how far he had distanced himself from Paradise, how he had so completely forfeited the love of the Lord and had been thrust into harsh justice and was standing on the brink of God's judgment. And as he was thus pondering, he shed more and more tears of repentance and became increasingly aware of the magnitude of his guilt before God, wondering whether there could be any chance of regaining even the slightest amount of love.

So, he kept pondering on these matters. And behold, while deep in these thoughts he came with his family upon a blackberry-bush richly laden with fruit. Since all were very hungry, they immediately wanted to fall upon the berries to satisfy their hunger and enjoy them in abundance.

But then a thought flashed upon Cain, and he said to his family: 'Oh my wife and my children, do promptly withdraw your hands which you have already stretched out for this abundant load since we do not know as yet whether it holds life or death! Therefore, let us first prostrate ourselves and confess our great guilt before God and in the dust of our helplessness entreat Him to graciously bless this fruit beforehand. And if He should perhaps do this out of His endless mercy then we unworthy ones must first thank Him and only then satisfy the worst of our hunger in fear and trembling.'

And behold, they all withdrew from the bush a few steps and did according to the will and proper insight of Cain who was now leading them all in prayer and said, weeping: 'Oh You most just, great and holy God, look graciously upon us worms in the dust of helplessness before You, the Almighty, who do not dare in their great guilt to lift their eyes to Your unspeakable holiness. Do consider our weakness and do not let us poor penitent sinners perish.'

This bush in front of us appears to bear a good fruit suitable as food for us sinners. However, we fear to eat from it since we have become blind through our great wickedness and can no longer see whether it contains death or life.

Would You, therefore, graciously indicate to us the nature of this fruit in order that we can then implore You, the Most Just one, to remove from it the venom of the serpent and let a small dewdrop of Your blessing fall upon it that we may not perish. Oh Lord, You Just and Holy one, do grant our weak supplication!'

And behold, a shining red cloud descended from the mountains into the valley above the bush, and from it a violent flash of lightning struck the bush with a thunderous noise. And lo, a big serpent fled hissing from the bush and with open jaws took the direction towards Cain, and he was terrified. But lo, the flashes of lightning followed it and drove it with great speed into the hot sand of the vast desert. When it had vanished completely from his sight, Cain turned again to the



bush and silently thanked God for so graciously saving him from the greatest of all dangers.

Then he saw how from this fire-cloud large drops began to fall upon the bush so that the earth became moistened all around to a considerable distance.

And Cain with his family recognized the great generosity of the Lord, and they all once more prostrated themselves and he thanked God from the bottom of his heart for such great blessings and said, melting into tears: 'O Lord, your justice is so great and inconceivable, - but how great must then Your love be since You are still able to remember the worst sinner with such great blessings from you, O eternal Love! How great must the wickedness be that could ever misjudge You!'

And behold, from the cloud still dripping with blessing a voice could be heard, speaking clearly audible words, saying: 'Listen, Cain! I have changed My justice into love. However, love will be only with those who will in the future seek it not only in their misery and distress, but also in their happiness and freedom.

Behold, I will grant you a period of two thousand years during which time no one shall be struck by My justice. And from this My justice I will prepare a great vessel and set it above the stars, and from My love I will prepare another vessel and set it under the earth. And so, you may do whatever you like: If you do evil, your deeds will fill the vessel of justice which, once it is full, will burst in all places and let the entire weight crash down upon the evildoers and kill them all. And the vessel of love, if it remains empty under the earth, will receive the dead for a lengthy, very painful cleansing. Those who will let themselves be cleansed shall be transferred to the stars for continuous struggles, whereas those who will harden themselves through their inner wickedness shall, at some future time, be cast beneath the bottom of this vessel where there will be eternal weeping and gnashing of teeth in the wrath of God.

And now go to the bush which has been moistened by the blessing and eat to still your hunger but remember always from whom you have received this gift.

Spread out in the lowland but let none of you ever dare set his foot on the mountains, for their summits are holy and are destined for housing My children. Whoever of you will ever violate this rule shall become a prey to there always dwelling guardian beasts, as bears, wolves, hyenas, lions, tigers, and also big, live serpents which will dwell at the bottom. This applies also to all the tame animals, which will later on be subject to you.

Only if one of you were to become very pious and stand the crucial test by My love, he will be permitted to penetrate the inner part of the mountains there to gather ore and iron for making tools as taught by your needs.

And now eat, impregnate your wives and multiply, both male and female, and resist the seed of the serpent through your just fear of Me, Who am God, the Eternal, the Just and the Holy one. Amen!'"

Descendants of Cain and Seth

Ref: Genesis 5:17-26

Cain had relations with his wife, and she conceived and bore Enoc. Cain also became the founder of a city, which he named after his son Enoch. To Enoch was born Irad, and Irad became the father of Mehujael: Mehujael became the father of Methujael, and Methusael became the father of Lamech.

Lamech took two wives: the name of the first was Adah, and the name of the second Zillah. Adah gave birth to Jabal, the ancestor of all who dwell in tents and keep cattle. His brother's name was Jubal; he was the ancestor of all who played the lyre and the pipe. Zillah, on her part, gave birth to Tubalcain, the ancestor of all who forge instruments of bronze and iron. The sister of Tubalcain was Naamah.

Lamech said to his wives: "Adah and Zillah, hear my voice; wives of Lamech, listen to my utterance: I have killed a man for wounding me, a boy for bruising me.

If Cain is avenged sevenfold, then Lamech seventy-seven-fold."

Enoch, Cain's Son, as Lawgiver

Ref: "The Household of God" by Jacob Lorber: Chapter 22

Jesus is speaking; "And behold, they did as commanded and lived thus for some time. Cain again knew his wife and she bore him a son whom he gave the name 'Enoch', which means The Honor of Cain'. And Cain summoned all his children and told them: "Children, behold here a new brother whom the Lord has given me to be a lord over all of you. I will make him your lord so that there might be order among you and an end to your quarrels and strife. He will give you laws, praise the faithful and punish the transgressors so that we, too, may become a great, glorious nation like the children of God. They do not need laws because they have love, which makes them free, but has put us beneath their feet on account of my sin. Their feet will crush us if we, who are lawless and without order, do not have one who intercedes for us and justifies us before their great might.

'Behold, their God is also ours, but they have a good Father in Him whilst we have a Judge. The Father knows their love and His eye and ear is with them. But this is not the case with us. We are left to our own devices and can do what we want. However, if we wish to subsist, we need law and order. Otherwise, in their quarrels and strife one may kill the other at will and the vessel of justice will thus fill before the time and all of us will perish, crushed by the great weight of our evil deeds. Therefore, let all of us join together, gather stones of all sizes and erect for him a tall and solid mansion and for each of us a small one, surrounding his in a wide circle in order that he may watch us all and observe our actions. He shall be free from any work and, as a sovereign in your midst, shall be provided for through the work of your hands.

'However, for the time being, I, as your father, will be the lawgiver for all of you in the name of God's justice, and woe betide him who will disobey my laws. My curse will strike him hard and there will be no mercy for the cursed in my heart since there no longer dwells love, but only justice.

'Behold, where there is love, there is also mercy and love is the law. But where there dwells only justice, the law is fight for fight, judgment for judgment, reward for reward, loyalty for loyalty, obedience to the law, judgment for disobedience, punishment for offences, curse for treachery and death for death.

'To sanction these my words, I now swear to all of you by heaven and its inexorable justice and by the earth, the harsh dwelling-place of God's curse, that every transgressor shall be struck strictly in accordance with all you have just been told through my mouth, as your father and sovereign.

'Later on, there will be your brother, as your true lord and lawgiver according to his just insight and free choice. Therefore, he will also be free from the law, and every one of his free actions must become and remain law to you until he decides to revoke it.

'Now that my will is known to you act in accordance with it if you wish to subsist in the severity of justice through laws for the upholding of order, thus avoiding judgment which would come upon all if within justice judgment were not set for judgment.

'And behold, they all went away to put their hands to the work of building a city. And they worked on it for sixty years. Since their buildings often collapsed, they needed much time for the construction of the new sovereign's mansion, and they only managed to complete it after I had shown Enoch in a dream how they had to build, as I felt pity for the poor children who in this work were subjected to much ill-treatment by Cain. Until that time he had adhered strictly to law and order, but now he was ruling his people as a tyrant by great terror and fear of punishment without mercy because there was no love in him. Where obedience to all the laws was concerned, he was just, but he did not take into consideration that obedience as a result of great fear was actually not obedience at all, but purely self-love. For he who loves himself will observe a law only for fear of certain punishment following its transgression as he deeply pities himself when he, helplessly, has to experience the pain of punishment. Seeing only the slightest chance of remaining undetected in what he feels in his heart, he will curse the law and its giver and soon disregard it completely.

If such a man has been able to gain greater power, he will be twice as cruel in his attack on all the laws and abolish and destroy them together with the loveless lawgiver. (Note: This should be considered by all the leaders and lawgivers of this time, for their lot will be the same if they think that fear is the only means of upholding order and its advantages through the dumb obedience of slaves. Otherwise, they will all, sooner or later, maybe already here, but certainly in the beyond, one day painfully experience the consequences of laws which have not originated from the purest, unselfish love.)

For behold, Cain - as it were, lawfully - acted cruelly because he did not always find My full grace and acceptance whenever following a wicked act, he shed tears of repentance. This I could not give him as his repentance was directed only at the loss of My grace, but never at My love.

Whoever grieves in this way, does not grieve deeply and truly for the loss of life, but rather for the loss of good living. Thus, his repentance is false, for he is not concerned about a complete reunification with Me. If I then wanted to give him what he has not asked for and does not desire, such an exchange of will, would only give him death, since the free will is the actual life of man.

And behold, this was also the case with Cain when he banned love and chose justice instead, not hearing in mind that there is no justice without love and that justice is actually the highest form of love without which everything would - and necessarily had to perish. "

The Laws of Enoch, the Tyrant

Ref: "The Household of God" by Jacob Lorber: Chapter 23

Jesus is speaking: "When the building of the city was completed, Cain led Enoch into the tall mansion built for him and there, in the presence of all his children, and already grandchildren, transferred to him the full power over them and asked him to give all of them laws according to his proper understanding and at his discretion, saying:

Behold, Enoch, in this mansion which was built especially for you I am handing over to you all my paternal rights with all the power and might for the free guidance of all the children, mine, yours and theirs, through laws given at your discretion. They shall keep these laws and regard them as sacred, for the law as such is not of major importance, be it one way or another, but everything depends on the exact observance of it. Therefore, it will mean: 'To act in accordance with it is to act right; to act against it is totally wrong, and this must always be punished according to the degree of the transgression.

Thus, we shall become free through the observance and not through the law itself the nature of which is not important, although its observance is.

However, you as the lawgiver are free from the law, for your freedom must be sacred because of the law. For if you were also bound to the law, it would obstruct your action in the necessarily free sphere and make you a prisoner of the law. Therefore, you have to stand outside the law, as free as one who does not know any laws. But every one of your actions must be a strict law to the ones that are completely entrusted to you, and they have to act in accordance with your will. Thus, all their actions and movements shall be only those willed by you.

Then the new sovereign opened his mouth and spoke in a dictatorial voice: 'So listen, all my subjects, male and female! Let no one ever regard anything as his property, but always as mine alone in order that the quarrels and strife among you may end. In the future all of you will serve only me and work for my storerooms, and for that you shall receive your food, according to your diligence. The most faithful shall be allowed to come closer to me than the less faithful, and the supervisors, the officers of the law and the executors of the just punishments shall have a better fare. Woe betides the disobedient one! I shall have him driven out to the mountains where the beasts are going to kill him and tear him to pieces. But those who will transgress my laws owing to their laziness, attention and carelessness shall be chastised with the rod till blood is drawn. Those, however, who dare to oppose me, their sovereign, in anything shall be tormented with serpents right to the marrow of their bones, and their tongues shall be torn out and cast to the serpents for food. And if anyone would ever look at me with envy, his eyes shall be pulled out so that he will no longer be able to see his sovereign. The lazy one shall become a carrier of burdens and be treated like a beast of burden and beaten with sticks and cudgels to make his feet and hands faster.

I give you no other law but that of the strictest obedience to all my unrestricted wishes and orders issued at any time of day or night, amen.'

And behold, even Cain was deeply shocked, and so were all the others, and they left Enoch's house, and in their hearts cursed their cruel father Cain who for all their great efforts had prepared for them such a miserable lot.

In the evening, they were all hungry and did not dare to eat but went dejectedly to Enoch and said: "Lord, we have worked all day, now give us food as you have promised."

But Enoch rose to his feet and said: "Where are the fruits of your work? Bring them here and show them to me and put them into my storerooms, and then I will have everyone given what he is entitled to."

And they went and brought, as they had been commanded, some of them much and others little and put it all down at his feet.

But Cain and his wife did not bring anything assuming that they would be free. And behold, Enoch distributed the fruits and said: 'He who has worked shall also eat, but he who has not worked shall not eat.'

Thus, Cain and his wife had on this occasion to fast. They left the mansion of Enoch weeping, and among all his children and grandchildren Cain did not find a single compassionate heart. So, he went out into the fields and ate of the leftover fruits. And since no house had been erected for him, he and his wife spent the night in the open air.

The next day, when his children came to start work, they found him already gathering fruits. 'Look,' they said, 'he is working for the first time in this land. It serves him right since this is what he wanted: Right instead of love!'

And behold, when they had again worked uninterruptedly until midday, some gathering fruits, others building still more houses, dwellings and storerooms, and again others serving their sovereign, his wife and his children for their comfort, they once more came to his mansion bringing fruits and other proofs of their tiring diligence and asked for the food they were entitled to, and so did Cain and his wife.

Then Enoch rose and spoke in grim earnest: 'How often during a day do you want to eat? Do you think I have the fruits gathered for you that you may be fed without a care! What shall I and my servants live on whose duty is not to work like you, but to do all they can for their lord's comfort! Therefore, go away all of you and let none of you ever dare come to the threshold of this my exalted mansion. From now on I shall have my servants collect from you the fruit for my house, and you can eat frugally of those fruits only, which have freely fallen from bushes and trees. This applies to both the gatherers and the builders. This shall be a new commandment for you which you have to keep as sacred, and woe to the transgressors!'

Then Cain spoke, asking Enoch with great sadness and deeply moved: 'O Enoch, you great sovereign, my former son, tell me honestly and justly from your heart whether your father and your mother are not excepted from all that you have wisely bidden your subjects at your discretion? And if I must be like my children, command them to supply with food their father and mother who are already old and have become weary and very weak. Or allow me graciously to leave this land and travel to the end of the world that I may not see the great misery of my children as they languish under the heavy yoke of free justice.'

And behold, Enoch said: 'How can you ask me this? Am I not doing the right thing when I act in accordance with the instruction and the power you have given me? You have declared no one but me as free from the law and have not made an exception with yourself. How can you now demand this illegally thereby forcing

me to mercilessly enforce upon you, the first lawgiver, the strictly legal consequences of disobedience as a deterring example for the others? And if I do act like that, have I then done wrong? Since there is no love with us, but only the bare right, how can you ask for an exception to the laws of my free discretion as a grace which cannot ever be consistent with the rights of your sovereign's laws? What is it to me that you are my father, since I came into existence through you without having ever under any circumstances wished to be! So, you have begotten me without my will and also without my will made me a sovereign. Since I now have become what I am and how I am completely without my will, as I did not have one, unconditionally and purely by chance through your lust, and a sovereign through your ambition, tell me what obligation I have towards you from a lawful point of view?’

‘Therefore, flee from my presence wherever you want to go in order that the severe consequences of justice may not catch up with you! This shall be the only grace I will grant you freely since I can do what I want. And now go and flee!’”

Cain’s Journey to the Sea

Ref: “The Household of God” by Jacob Lorber: Chapter 24

Jesus is speaking: “And behold, Cain wept and departed with his wife and four children, two sons and two daughters, and after forty days came to the shores of the sea. Seeing the great expanse of water, he became frightened and thought in all earnest that he had come to the end of the world. ‘If Enoch now followed me, whither could I flee?’ he thought.

‘Before me is the end of the world and to my left are high mountains where I am forbidden to go, and the Lord's gracious eye and ear are closed to me. Besides, I see here all kinds of strange and unblessed fruits; who would dare eat them? And the provisions we brought with us have now been consumed. Whatever shall I now do?

I will once more attempt to cry mightily to the Lord. Either He will hear me or let us perish. Then we will at least finally fare according to His will which in our great blindness we have certainly not recognized during all this long time.’

And behold, after a period of seventy-seven years Cain again began to pray to Me. He prayed for three days unceasingly day and night, crying all the time: ‘Lord, You just and loving God, look graciously down upon Your greatest sinner and do to me according to Your holy will!’ These words he kept repeating many thousands of times.

Since he was crying so mightily and miserably, I took pity on him and sent Abel to him in a flame of fire who spoke the following words to him as if coming from Me: ‘Cain, rise from the ground and look at me and then tell me whether you still recognize me!’

Then Cain rose full of fear and looked at the flame, but did not recognize it, neither the voice nor the form and shaking with fear asked: ‘Who are you strange being in this flame?’

And Abel answered: ‘It is I, your brother Abel, in the flame of divine love before you. What do you wish to be done to you?’ –‘O brother,’ said Cain, ‘if it is you, behold I have no longer any will. My son Enoch has taken everything from me, also my will. Now I no longer have a will and, look, all of us here are now

entirely without a will. Therefore, I can only say: Let it be done to me and us all according to the holy will of the Lord!

Then Abel said: 'So listen! It is the will of the Lord, my Father and your God, that you eat of all the fruits you find here without fear. For the serpent has driven you to this place and has stayed at home with your children in the city of Enoch with all its venom and will have no more dealings with you. Once a person has relinquished his will there is no more to do for the evil brood, but he who has subjected his will to the serpent is its captive and the end of his free actions has come.

But to him who has escaped from its powerful fangs and thus has saved the last spark of his will and laid it down upon the earth before Jehovah, He will give a new will out of Himself that in the future he may work as His tool. Thus, it is the Lord's will for you too that in the future you act in accordance with His will. If ever the descendants of Enoch should find you and your people, they would not recognize you, ***for the love of the Lord will burn you permanently black.***

The name of 'Cain' will be taken from you, and you will be given another name, which is 'Ethiope', meaning 'the one without a will after the will of God.' Now you and your people must make a very large basket out of rattan and reed which must be seven man-heights long, three wide and one high, very strong and stopped with resin and pitch. Having completed this with great diligence, you must place it near the great waters and for forty days gather fruits, put them in the basket and, finally, get all in.

Then the Lord will send a great tide from the large waters. This will lift the basket with you in it and carry you to a distant land in the middle of these great waters where you will be completely safe from the persecution of Enoch.

In these great waters you will see small islands all around you, and when there have become too many of you on one island, proceed to the next one, and so on. Thus, you shall gradually, in accordance with the Lord's will, populate all the islands in the great expanse of water.

And if you do not forget the Lord, He will someday give you a large continent to inhabit where you will remain until the end of the world. ***But this will first have to be cleansed from the curse by floods which will rush down upon it choking and killing the descendants of Enoch and also many children of God who will allow themselves to be enticed by the beautiful daughters of Enoch.***

However, you who have no will of your own shall not be touched by the torrents of these floods because the will of the Lord has set you upon the waters of His great mercies. - And if there is anything you should need, you know anyway where to find the great Giver Who will not forsake you if you will not forsake Him within your hearts.

And now come closer, Cain. And behold, Cain stepped up to his flaming brother and Abel embraced him and he became jet-black, and his hair became curly like fur. And this was done to the other five, too.

Then Abel said: 'Now, brother ***Ethiope***, you are free from any guilt, which has remained at home with Enoch, and so act in accordance with the will of the Lord! Amen.'

The Development of Cain's Line

Ref: "The Household of God" by Jacob Lorber: Chapter 25

Jesus is speaking: "And behold, Abel disappeared and Ethiopie ate of the fruits, entirely happy for the first time in his life. And he did exactly as commanded.

Thus, the last branch of his line has right to the present time populated all the islands and following the great destruction of the serpent's brood by the floods from the heavens, also the large continents which you today call 'Africa', 'America' and 'Australia'. His line was not extinguished in the floods and is still the same in this last era as a testimony to the atrocities committed in the past and present time by My children and those of Enoch.

And so, this Ethiopie is still today living naturally and spiritually as a constant observer of your actions, hidden on an island in the middle of the great waters, which no mortal will ever discover.

And he ate and drank all kinds of fruits and begat still 700 children during a thousand years. Thereafter he was renewed by Me and ate and drank no longer because he became filled forever with My love, which is the best food. For whoever is filled with that will not ever see, taste and experience death, and he will never hunger for food and thirst for a drink. His death will be a living departure from life to life into the life of the life of the living through the Living Who is I Myself.

Thus, Ethiopie is still living physically as the first son of man in the wide face of the earth, able to watch the actions of all men and is, therefore, an ancient witness of all My deeds right to the present time.

He knew Noah, Abraham, Moses, all the prophets and Melchizedek, the high priest.

He witnessed My birth and My new creation through the greatest of all My works, the work of salvation. And so, he will remain until My Holy City has fully descended, which is now beginning to happen. Then he will be fully received there as a faithful gatekeeper for, except Me, nobody has such a thorough knowledge of the serpent as he has who has suffered through it so much.

This is the history of Cain, made known to you that you may ponder on yourselves and more easily and sooner recognize the roots of evil within you and destroy them completely so that you may then in My love find again the long lost Paradise and at last become true, faithful citizens of My new, great and holy City, just as I am your truest, holiest and best Father from all Eternities of eternities. Amen."

Enoch's Godless Rule

Ref: "The Household of God" by Jacob Lorber: Chapter 26

Jesus is speaking: "Now let us for a while return to the city of Enoch and I will show you in passing what the situation there was like after a period of only thirty years.

And behold, Enoch had now chosen the most beautiful wife and in addition two concubines and kept committing excessive harlotry with them. As a result, his mind had become so darkened that he completely forgot his duties of government.

The few thoughts he was still barely capable of thinking were occupied entirely with the pleasant life, glamour, soft garments and harlotry.

As long as his subjects brought him many dishes of excellent fruits of every kind, also all sorts of glitter and soft garments, woven of the most delicate grass which grew at the foot of the mountains, he was wholly satisfied and left law and government alone.

His subjects, noticing that he had become indifferent, took advantage of his blindness. Also, his servants noticed what was happening and, being as crafty and cunning as the serpent itself, sought in many ways to lull their lord to sleep. They deceitfully granted the subjects all sorts of amusements as long as they diligently delivered to them their ever-increasing number of gifts.

And behold, since these servants now saw that they could get away with all these things with impunity, they began to rule the people, giving them laws. Firstly, they had to worship their sovereign as a god by bringing all kinds of sacrifices. Secondly, the most beautiful daughter of some subject had to be given to the sovereign and the fortunate subject who became such a giver would be exempted from all taxes, become the free owner of his house and would be admitted to the mansion of the sovereign where he could socialize with the servants. And once a year he would be able to meet his sovereign face to face and thank him for his great grace and all the privileges enjoyed.

And behold, this was - as you would say - a stroke of genius on the part of the serpent, for now the parents began to keep their daughters at home giving particular care to them that they might become especially tender and beautiful in order to gain a certain degree of freedom for the future. Such a beauty would then no longer look at a common man as she felt herself destined for the sovereign.

Now, what was the result of such reciprocal deceit? The worst you could imagine, namely: The servants finally seized the entire government by cunningly convincing Enoch that he was now no longer the people's ruler, but their god and that it would now be beneath the dignity of his divine status of exalted and unspeakable sublimity to give laws to the worms of the earth. Because of their boundless respect for his sublime holiness, his servants were willing to take this degrading business upon themselves. Thus, he should do nothing, except give a sign of either his pleasure or dissatisfaction, and graciously accept the treasures his subjects would be gathering for him in great abundance.

Furthermore, he should show himself to the people only once a year when everyone would be prostrating themselves before him and worship him from the dust and if he then felt like showing a particular favor to one of the dust-covered worms, this would be done by a hard kick on the head of the worm with his half foot.

And the one granted such a sublime favor, maybe for offering his beautiful and charming daughter, shall be promptly raised from the ground to behold the divine sublimity of the lord of all might and power. And he shall then become a free citizen of the half city of Enoch, the exalted god.

Such words of his servants flattered Enoch's self-love and vanity to such a degree that he immediately fully agreed to all their proposals. Oh, for his utter foolishness!

And lo, at last his servants had achieved that for which they had so long been striving, namely, the law giving, the punishing and thereby the whole government. Thus, instead of one, *there were now ten rulers* who did not make the least distinction between men, who were their brothers, and animals, except that they classed them as rational and irrational beasts. Only when such a rational beast had been successful in playing some evil trick for their benefit, he was granted the right of calling himself a man.

When these ten rulers saw how the *animal-men* blindly obeyed their laws - naturally because of their great fear of the countless ill-treatments - each one of them in time chose also ten servants from the free citizens of the city and, with their wives and children, raised them to a certain nobility. However, in return for this favor their daughters, if they were sufficiently beautiful and charming, had to be given to them as whores with whom they begat countless children all of whom were handed to the *animal-men* to be raised. When they had grown up, the males became also animal-men and the females, who through the cunning of the serpent had usually become very beautiful and charming, were made whores too, often already at the age of twelve, and thereby made barren. And when in a short while they had lost all their attraction they were cast out to the beasts and had to work for them. They were called 'Hoohorae', i.e., 'people who tend the beasts'.

And behold, this way of life continued for over 30 years. But then, since in this unchaste manner the population had grown to several hundred thousand and spread all over the land and could no longer be overseen, ten further cities were built with the unsuspecting agreement of Enoch, the now totally weak and inactive god, and received the names of the ten rulers, which were:

Kad (the thief), Kahrak (the lord of whores), Nohad (the deceiver), Houid (the wicked), Hlad (the cold), Ouvrak (Seed of the serpent), Farak (the cruel), Molakim (the liar), Ouvrahim (the fine flatterer) and Thahirak (the great evildoer).

Each of these cities was built exactly after the model of the city of Enoch with a high castle in the center like Enoch's mansion and surrounded by a rampart and moat and consider this: Since men in those times did not as yet have tools, as cramps, spades, hoes and picks, they had to use their hands to dig up the ground like field mice."

The Policies of Enoch's Counselors

Ref: "The Household of God" by Jakob Lorber Ch 27

Jesus is speaking: "I will not dwell on all the ill treatment, which occurred during this building, but will lead you to the main point. - When the building of the cities had been completed, the rulers went to Enoch and said: 'Enoch, you great and sublime god of all the might and power (N.B. although he was already weaker than a gnat [a small two-winged fly that resembles a mosquito.] and no longer had any might) and supreme lord of all justice (N.B. at the bottom of which was nothing but thieving, whoring, deceit, all that is evil, heartlessness, malice, cruelty, falsehood, flattery and crimes of all kinds)! Behold, your people have increased under the wise guidance of your endless, incomprehensible and unfathomable justice (N.B. a truly endless, for him quite incomprehensible and even more unfathomable justice) and has spread all over the vast lands of your divine glory. Therefore, they can no longer be overseen from your high residence. If we do not

watch them, they would do what they want and could even stray so far as no longer to worship you, to whom all adoration is due, but begin to worship again the old God of Cain. And it might suit this old God to grant someone's prayer and bestow on him invincible power, whereupon he might gather around him a great multitude, attack and finally destroy all of us. (N .B. Such fears surely befit such a mighty god!)

Besides, we would not have enough reliable servants to send everywhere to collect the fruits and bring them here. The servants might deceive us on the war and themselves consume what the obedient earth has produced for you alone.' (N.B. So the great god was also tormented by the fear of starvation!)

And behold, Enoch became very uneasy and did not know what to do, for he had not been told how much his people had increased. Finally, he rose and spoke with a fearful, shrill voice: 'What if we gradually killed the ones that are too many and thus reduced the population to the original number when the people were weak and despondent? What do you think, my most faithful ones?' (N.B. What a fine plan for divine justice!)

Then the ten rulers spoke: 'Oh most just god, think of what is possible and what is not! (N.B. Thus the wisest, mightiest and most just god had to be told by his servants what is possible and what impossible!) For lo, if we were to slay but one of them, they would in great numbers fall upon you and us and destroy all of us. Besides, do remember the vessel above the stars about which Cain has told us on many occasions, and what is going to happen if we should begin to commit atrocities.' (N.B. So the great, mighty god still feared the old God!)

And behold, Enoch spoke to them, saying: 'Then listen and hear my mighty will: Let each of you, my ten most faithful servants, move to one of the ten cities where he shall rule in my name and give laws according to his proper insight and knowledge, watching strictly over their exact observance. Over the one of you who should ever become lax in his zeal I shall set the most faithful and zealous among you. I shall know you by the gathering of fruits you bring me. The first one to bring the gifts as a just tribute to my holy majesty shall also be the first to earn the praise of justice, and I shall accept from him the lesser as if it were much. The later ones will have to bring much, and I shall receive it as if it were only little because thereby, I shall measure their laziness and their actions will bring them just praise or just blame. The last one, however, shall be handed to the first in order to make him more zealous and stricter in all just matters. For the most severe justice is the only foundation for a kingdom such as ours.

This is my just and severe will since I am your god and lord and you, with all your free and serving subjects, cannot - and shall not - have another. There was once some old God Who was also very mighty, while he was just. But they say that he abandoned justice and did good to both the evildoers and the righteous out of a certain love, similar to our feelings for beautiful women. Thereby he destroyed himself completely and does no longer exist.

Therefore, I am now in his place as you see me here, and supplication to this old God is quite useless since he is no longer anywhere or anything. So, you have to turn in all matters to me within whom now dwells all the might and power! Amen.'

(N.B. Such and even worse utterances concerning Me I hear today from many hundreds of thousands who in the utter darkness of their reason set their sheer folly on My throne, thus worshiping themselves. They no longer call themselves 'gods' - which name to them sounds too ordinary and silly - but 'philosophers' or 'scholars' or also 'scientists' or 'doctors' of all kinds. These men, of the most unenlightened kind, even want to force Me to learn from them if I wish to be a God in this so very enlightened time of the super-scholars. But I say that an earthworm is more sensible than they, although it has only one sense. They will soon open their eyes wide yet see no more than a field mouse in the earth, and when they prick up their ears hear no more than a fish in the water, having no voice and no hearing.)

And behold, the ten rulers rejoiced, for Enoch had anticipated their innermost desires by giving them a strict law, which suited them perfectly. For now, they were entitled to do an imaginable mischief, deceiving the people and their foolish god.

After having finished his speech, the god Enoch dismissed his ten servants who left him apparently deeply moved by such a mighty speech. But in their hearts, they rejoiced at Enoch's great foolishness who in his fear and apprehension had made their will a strict law and had begun to be himself convinced that he was a god. However, concerning this last point they were quite wrong, for Enoch knew very well that he was no god because his weakness and total exhaustion showed him only too clearly what was the case with his god ship.

But he wanted to keep the others in their gross blindness, fortify it and be a god because of the profit. And he thought: 'It is easy to preach to the blind for they cannot distinguish black from white and take the day for night and vice versa.' But herein he, too, was mistaken. Thus, there existed between them a truly foolish relationship, since one always considered the other the greater fool.

When the ten had once more gathered in their chamber, Kad took the word and said to all of them: 'Well, my brothers, all of us still have Cain for our father and we have seen the arch-father Adam and the arch-mother Eve whom Enoch does not know and has not seen, nor will he ever see Adam. Behold, our father Cain was a bad man, worse than any of us has been or ever will be, but when he turned to the God of Adam, he received what he wanted.

What more do we need? We know and are eye and ear witnesses of His great deeds. Thus, we know where the great Lord is dwelling. What Cain did in his distress, let us do it also in our abundance and you may be assured it will soon become obvious who the actual Lord in the lowlands is. Let each of us erect a sacrificial altar to this God and offer Him the fruits of the land and we shall have all the power. Then the fool Enoch can wait a long time for the tribute to his imagined holiness from us who have seen Adam and Eve!'

And behold, when Kad had ended his speech, Kahrak rose and said: 'Brothers, if this is so, our success is assured! Look, as far as I am concerned, I fully agree with Kad. We would be greater fools than Enoch if we mightier ones were to feed him for nothing else but to strengthen his folly and increase his lust for our most beautiful women. And when he no longer desires them, as you all know, we have to regard it as an extraordinary grace if any of them is given to one of us. I think we keep the most attractive ones for ourselves. The less attractive we

give to our servants and let the others become the property of our subjects. Then Enoch can defile his own daughters, taste his shame and grow thin like the leg of a buck and feed with the calves and drink with the birds. Why should we not do to him what he did to our father? He did, indeed, safeguard certain things which father Cain forgot to do, who had to flee, although he was his father as he was ours. Look, Enoch is only a foolish brother, why should we not make him par for the flight of Cain? This is my opinion and has advantage to all of us. For my part, I shall do to the old God as Kad considered it right, most expedient and wise.'

They an unanimously agreed with Kahrak, whereupon Nohad rose and said: 'You know my office and duty which I have carried out faithfully, diligently and with zeal according to Enoch's will. But if I ask of you what I have gained during all this time, each one of you will no doubt say: Nothing! I helped the greatest fraud to deceive and was thus myself a deceived fraud. Because of his hypocrisy I had to live poorly in the sight of the people - just for the sake of hypocrisy and public opinion - and as a strict man of integrity deny myself every pleasure. For this I secretly, instead of praise and some invisible reward to make up for suffering public hardship, received from his incomprehensible folly even the rudest rebukes and all kinds of threats. All of you were better off and able to do many a thing for your own pleasure, which was impossible to me, who was placed at the top of his legitimate folly and had to exactly carry out every one of his craziest and most detestable wishes. Through my compulsory hypocrisy at which I was an expert - or rather had to be an expert -, they then received a lawful appearance. To make my deception as a legitimate deceiver valid, I had to allow myself to be deceived, and this threefold: First by Enoch on account of justice, then by myself on account of the people and, finally, by the people and all of you on account of Enoch. I believe to have given you sufficient reason for my dissatisfaction and to have revealed to you my life of hypocrisy. Now judge for yourselves whether I am wrong when I, in gratitude of such recognition by Enoch, take the threefold deceit away from me and hurl it with full force at his head, since I am going to reveal him to the people. Then let him see where his godship will escape to and let him run after it like a lame man after a hart. So, I too, will do what Kad considered to be right and I will follow Kahrak's advice in detail, that is, my tribute shall not tire his eyes and the trotting of my camels do not trouble his ears. And thus, I am taking possession of the city named after me.'

And all the others said: 'Nohad has spoken well and so may he do what is lawful and good.'

Then Houd rose, and the sound of his voice struck like a flash of lightning into the evil gathering, and his speech was more forcible than that of all the others: 'Listen well, brothers and sons of Cain, the outlawed, and grasp each of my very important words!

Who could count all the drops of blood which following the sentences of Nohad, the deceived, have flowed from the backs and loins of the poor and weak people who, the same as Enoch and we, are descendants of Cain! And this was not because of transgression of some law or laziness or the least apparently punishable cause, but, as you all know, solely to provide amusement for Enoch, not forgetting all the ill treatments during the building of the cities. And all this to such an extent that I find it quite incomprehensible how these poor people

managed to stay alive during this long time of torment. Whenever he was opposed, Enoch reminded us of the brittleness of the vessel above the stars, completely forgetting the one beneath the earth.

But I honestly ask you whether the people would not fare better under the debris of the vessel than under our constant beatings with tough rods and hard cudgels. And tell me, what has he done for the vessel of love beneath the earth? I think there will not be much in it, except for the numerous drops of our brothers' blood. Had we not cunningly seized government, he - as the god of abomination - would surely have begun to have us killed one after the other.

We had to be cruel ourselves while we still were his servants to avoid his suspicion. But the cities are now built, the people have been assigned, we have the power and acknowledge the old God and the blessed sacrifice. What more do we need? If the people obeyed us when we were ill-treating them, they will surely not be disloyal if we wish to, and shall, heal their wounds through wiser and more lenient laws instead of this evil cruelty. Behold, I am called wicked, but my great question is: Who is actually more wicked, is it I or Enoch or the serpent of Cain? I think Enoch is the master of all wickedness and the serpent has most likely put all its brood into his heart. Otherwise, it would be impossible to imagine such cruelty committed by a brother against his brothers through his and their brothers.

Therefore, I think we must get him into our power, make him serve us and let the people gradually pay him back for his cruelty manifold, instead of paying tribute. Thus, he can then receive the lawful tribute on his back and carry it wherever he wishes.'

'Your speech is just and wise, brother Houdid,' said all the others, 'and let it be done to Enoch according to your words which have struck home with us who have often witnessed his atrocities!'

And behold, thereupon Hlad rose, and his speech was brief and clear: 'Brothers, you know how unfeeling I always had to be in order to, as it were, personify the severe law, or present Enoch's despotic cruelty as inexorable law, and so had to make the best of all his evil acts. Although I did not have to carry out the flogging, I had to oversee it and count the lashes by Houdid and all his helpers and gratefully inform Enoch accordingly. Look, I had to appear unfeeling, although I was not so at all. Now I will change, as you can see! And I shall be towards Enoch the way I often had to appear to the people, our brothers, to whom I now will be warm-hearted. But as for Enoch, I shall coldly make him pay for the suffering caused to the brothers. My loyalty to him shall be cold retaliation, my diligence shall make me the first among you and the voice of his praise shall be turned into a howling and roaring and a feast for the ears of the so often ill-treated. And with the blood dripping from his back, the pale-faced shall give color to their cheeks.

As I otherwise fully agree with you, I believe that this, my judgment is not wrong when I act according to my feeling, having long enough had to helplessly watch Enoch's crimes. He who has feeling and is susceptible to pain and torment would have it for doing good, too. This I have often seen. Therefore, let us in the future rule by doing good. Let the one who has done wrong be judged with forbearing as he, too, is a brother and the obedient and good be rewarded with goodness tenfold. Then a worthy sacrifice shall be offered to the old God which

will surely please Him if we bring back to Him what Cain and Enoch have so wantonly and carelessly lost for all of us.'

And behold, they all rose and, bowing to Hlad, said: 'O brother, your judgment is the most just of all; you are closest to the children of Adam. Therefore, you shall be an example to us, and we shall, and firmly intend to, adhere to it in all our decrees.

The warm blood of the poor brothers has melted the ice around your heart and now a stream of warmth is pouring forth from it. Do act within this warmth and warm all of us with your abundance!'

Then also Ouvrak rose and spoke: 'Brothers, behold and listen! All your judgments are right and just, but according to my keen perception the one of Hlad is the wisest. And so, I fully agree with his opinion, except for one thing, which is most important. We have to be extremely careful and astute in everything we undertake. For behold: To act righteously, do good, judge correctly and justly, just retaliation, a secure order - all these are things of great public benefit for the people as well as for all of us and suffice in our relation to the people. However, all the free citizens of the city of Enoch know that we are rulers and Enoch is for these fools a true god, and nothing will change their conviction, which is even firmer in all the people than in the free citizens.

"If we should lay hands on Enoch immediately, they would all fall upon us. And if then Enoch should join them and claim that our power had made it impossible for him to prevent our ill treatment of the people, they will fall upon us, and we would perish under the weight of the masses.

Therefore, if we want to carry out our plans, great craftiness and careful cunning are absolutely necessary. Since I have been his secret counselor, I know very well how matters stand. It is my infallible opinion that at least for the next three years we must make Enoch believe that the demanded tribute is still forthcoming. Meanwhile we must treat the people well to will them for us and frequently tell the brighter ones about the vain nature of Enoch, all his deceit and gross presumption. We must also point them to the old God and make them understand that all our actions, harsh as they may have seemed, were steps to finally liberate them, our brothers, from Enoch's hard and heavy yoke, and that it had to be done now as otherwise they would all have been slain.

I can assure you that if we instruct the people in this manner and treat them as suggested by Hlad, this will be to our great advantage and I think even the old God will not dispute our right to rule, especially when we make an offering to Him. Then, I am sure, will Enoch experience from the people what Houd and Hlad, the speakers preceding me, have already mentioned in their great wisdom.

Do take my words to heart, my brothers and great sons of Cain!' - And behold, they all bowed to him and said: 'Amen, this shall be done, and the speech of each one shall be valid, accusing Enoch, the cursed, who outlawed our father and infamously offended against the old, mighty God.'

Whilst the others sat down again, Farak remained standing and looked about earnestly as if to see whether there might not be something behind the words of each speaker anyone had dared to utter. And what he was seeking with his eyes, his intellect soon discovered. Then he began to speak mightily, and his speech was like a sword on the battlefield, not sparring anyone:

'Brothers - if you are still worthy of this name of honor, I have heard you express your thoughts, but you have deceitfully hidden from each other your desires and lied to each other about your plans. Thus, you have become mutineers, as each of you intended to secretly inform Enoch that out of great loyalty for him and prior to taking over government he had called a gathering of the rulers - as it is here now - and incited them to express their shameful opinion of Enoch. Then the latter would realize into what hands he had placed the ten governments, would give him all the might and set him as a sovereign over all of us. Since Enoch would believe this, the others could then share the lot of Cain.

Oh, you scoundrels, you scum of all depravity! Ask yourselves whether there has ever been an honest impulse within you. For everything that I am, and you are you have achieved through craftiness, cunning, deceit, flattery and hypocrisy. Have the poor people not suffered enough? Are they not already so miserable that they can hardly be considered human? Have they not shed almost the last drop of blood under your beating? And what good have we ever done them that they have for so long willingly fed us in return for nothing but all kinds of ill treatment? Do not they, whom you call beast-men, have the same right to everything the earth yields? And they were not permitted to eat of all the ripe fruits, except the rotten ones. This does not satisfy you, and you want to make them a thousand times more unhappy and miserable than they already are!

In view of all this I tell you all without hesitation: If you want to rule the poor people - whose brothers you are not worthy of being, abandon all malice and wile and guide them in the face of God, the true, old God. Be true brothers also to Enoch and not deceivers for the sake of your mouths and stomachs. Become worthy through true loyalty of that which you have become through deceit and cunning, otherwise the old God will reject your offerings, will help the weak against you and make you slaves of the beasts whom you gave that name. Do ponder on the words of the cruel one! Amen.'

Behold, when Farak had ended his speech, the others remained sitting like rooted to the spot and did not have a single word to say in their defense, and most of them thought by themselves: 'He has secretly forestalled us in his relations with the old God, for how could he otherwise see through us in such detail? Since this is now the situation, who could oppose him? If he could be destroyed, it would be easy enough, but now - who will be able to oppose his might? Before we can raise a hand, his hand will strike and destroy us. Therefore, we shall wait and see what course things will take; then we may know what to do.'

And behold, since no one dared say any more, Farak again began to speak and asked them: 'Well, how do you feel now? Does none of you have the courage to rise and answer me? Where are now your craftiness, your deceit, your cunning, your flattery and hypocrisy? And where are your lies, your power, your princeliness and where your cheated god Enoch?

Yes, I tell you, my ears have not missed the silent speech of your thoughts. Whatever turn matters will take, you will be doing what has to be done in accordance with justice and fairness. Whoever of you will not comply with this exactly, shall be outlawed like Cain whom you call your father. He acted lawfully, but too blindly and strictly whereby he took himself captive and had to flee from his own work. Whither, no one knows, except the old God. If He wished to make

this known to someone, that person would know it. But that is not His will. Behold, Cain was just because he feared the old God's judgment, and he was wrong in all his actions because he did not act out of love, which was what the old God had demanded above all.

You have even done away with all justice and have replaced it with cunning, deceit, slyness, falsehood and added countless other infamies, nameless because of their wickedness, and you think the old God will immediately be willing to support you in your endless infamies if you make Him a sham burnt offering. Oh, you are so wrong! The old God has keen eyes and knows your entire nature in every detail. Therefore, his ear is distant from you and will never give you a favorable hearing in your limitless infamy, not even if you burnt the whole earth as an offering to Him, unless you first cleansed your hearts with the fire of a boundless love for the brothers and sisters, who became weak and unhappy through you, and if you desisted from all fornication which is not fitting for men aged two hundred years and aspiring to be rulers.

Now answer my questions, if you can or, if you have the courage, tell me openly and without hesitation, as I spoke to you, what you now plan to do. I do not strive, as you do, after ruling a principality, but solely after the exact fulfillment of the duties of my office so as to please the old God. Therefore, I have never committed an offence and have not ravished a woman or a virgin, let alone a young maiden of twelve and under, as you have done. This is why you called me the cruel one because I did not want to be a lazy scoundrel like you.

These shall be my last words to let you know whom you see before you, namely me, the cruel, whom you will never get to know better than is absolutely necessary in an emergency, as is the case now, so that everything might not perish for ever – yes, forever, in the reawakened wrath of the old eternal and holy God! Let no one ask me further, whence and whereby! Amen."

The Counsel of the Ten Rulers

Ref: "The Household of God" by Jakob Lorber Ch 28

Jesus is speaking: "And behold, since none of the ones who had already spoken dared contradict Farak, Molakim finally rose and, looking closely at Farak, said: 'Brother, your speech was severe and struck every one of us hard. However, concerning our speeches, they are good and proper, except for our condemnation of Enoch. Besides, they have been degraded by our inner base desires which awakened within us only at the sight of the principalities entrusted to us.

If we eradicated in us all these desires and intended to become true, faithful brothers to the people as well as to Enoch in a just and reasonable measure, would we then still be scoundrels?'

And Farak answered: 'Desire is the life of the will. If you eradicated every desire within you, how could you then act as rulers? Therefore, let no one suppress his inner desires, as the spark of God's love, but make sure that they do not take the wrong direction.

The right direction for them would be to aspire after winning God's love and then direct all actions according to our recognition of the supreme will within us, which will keep our self-love humble through sensing its futility and inconceivable weakness.

The wrong direction is the selfishness or total blindness and deafness of our will, and all actions out of it are then directed towards our own needs ignoring those of our equal brothers.

Behold, the bad desires then keep swelling through their steady growth within us, suppress humility and create arrogance through their weight, in which situation man would like to lighten his great burden. However, since in his blindness he does not see and in his deafness does not hear what could help him, in his false desire he seeks all imaginable means his self-love can conceive thereby heaping up new burdens upon burdens which become so weighty that they smother the life out of God within us and turn us into beasts of the earth's matter and food for death which is found everywhere in matter, be it in the fire or the water, the air or the earth, which latter is the mother of the flesh or of death; for where there is flesh, there is also death. Therefore, we shall all die in the flesh.

Thus, he who has sunk into self-love is in the love of his flesh, and the one who loves his flesh, desires what represents death, and death will invade his desire and take him captive in all the fibers of life, thereby consuming and killing him. Then he will become the dirt of death and manure the fields in which the fruit of eternal destruction is sown. Now you know all about it; act that you may live or do what shall give you death. Amen.'

And behold, now Molakim began to speak again and said: 'Brothers, you know my office and line. It was not Enoch who made me into what I am, nor was it the people, but all of you, except Farak, made me lie to Enoch and to the people and I had to disclose my actual knowledge to you alone. But now I am throwing all the deception at the feet of Farak and say openly and faithfully: When a God will come from heaven, His speech will not be wiser than that of Farak

I freely confess that were he not my brother I would prostrate myself before him and worship him. However, he is a man like us, where did he get this great wisdom?

Behold, I am blind and deaf like you, but an inner murmur tells me that God speaks invisibly through the mouth of Farak. We must listen to this voice, pay good attention and act accordingly if we want to live. Otherwise, our brothers' tears will accumulate to become a great flood and drown all of us in our great harlotry, deceit and malice.'

And behold, also Ouvrahim took heart, stepped forward and said: 'Amen, thanks to the old God that He has opened the mouth of Farak, our brother, without whom we would all have perished since we were all imprisoned by our deathly desires. Each one wanted to be a traitor to the others and as a result death would have claimed all of us, one way or another, as a just judgment from the height of holiness or the depth of the old God's wrath.

I was a smart flatterer, thereby working eviler than you and Enoch with all your cruel force. For had it not been for me, he would have relinquished his divinity long ago which I, inspired by Ouvrak and with the help of Nohad and Tahirak had imposed upon him through flattery. Actually, he had already on various occasions told me secretly that this divinity was causing him much anxiety in his heart, did not give him peace, day and night, whenever he was alone, and that he had often deplored this unfortunate idea of Ouvrak, which, because of the

people, he could now no longer get rid of. Yet it burned him more than fire in his breast.

And now I am here laying down all my flattery, convinced that the wisdom of Farak will gradually heal our brother's great wound. Hopefully, it has opened our eyes to show us the abyss at the crumbling brink of which all nine of us have found ourselves, blind to the great danger of losing our lives and everything of any value in life.

And you, dear brother Farak, be to me and all of us a faithful guide toward the light from the heights of the true God who has become a stranger to us, like our patriarch Adam. And guide us all according to the to you well-known will of the only true God, and also lead the whole nation, our poor innocent brothers, for whose offences we alone are responsible through our immense malice. And what you, O brother, will consider as right and complying with the will from above, which is known to you alone, we shall with all our united strength and the grace from above do at all times willingly and conscientiously.

Therefore, I here resign my ruler ship, laying it down at the feet of the friend of God, the true one, and consider myself fortunate to be allowed to call myself a faithful servant to the only one in this land who among so many thousands have been favored by God, the alone true and only One, and Who has no one like Him.

So, listen to my well-considered will. The city of Farak shall be a holy city to all of us, where we will always obtain wise counsel to enable us to act wisely. And he himself shall be our ruler and guide according to God's wisdom within him and be the central point between Enoch, all the people and us. Thus, we might grow worthy, not of becoming rulers, which is unimportant to us since we have seen God's wisdom, but of being considered willing and faithful servants who will, and shall, rejoice in the welfare of the people, in the wisdom of God in our brother Farak and in the complete recovery of Enoch and therewith of all free and serving people.

Amen, I say, in the name of all. And you, O brother Farak, look at me in your wisdom and are to all of us a brother, a ruler, a leader, a counselor, and a wise friend! Amen.'

And behold, Ouvrahim's words reanimated Thahirak and all the others who had spoken before Farak hypocritical words full of self-interest and so he, too, began to speak as one who was a true representative of all that is evil and also one who presumed divine rights and other things like God's for all eternities inviolable holiness, His justice, His love, His almightiness, even the whole creation as if he could destroy it with one finger. For, as he often said, he was up to all the old God's tricks and would even be prepared to match My power and defy My almightiness. And since out of love refrained from drawing the mighty sword of My wrath against a miserable worm in the dust, the Infinite against a nothing which could hardly be noticed in its insignificance compared with My eternal greatness and infinite might, he told everyone that My weakness was afraid of his strength. What do you, My servant, say to such a challenge?

And behold, this was not even quite as ridiculous as the challenges I now receive from you people, which are a thousand times worse.

For look at the root of your priesthood! When the holy one on the worldly throne speaks, I must be silent and may not dare speak to someone. For if he heard about it, the life of the one I have spoken to might be endangered.

I need not define the thorn in My eye more closely, for you can easily find him. However, not for much longer! - And now back to our subject!

And behold, now this Thahirak began to address the assembly with a mighty concluding speech, which was brief and like a flash of lightning. And he said: "Brothers, who have spoken before me with wisdom and power so that I was shaken to the innermost foundation of my wickedness and realized my insignificance and immense weakness and all the great wrong in all my actions. Your wisdom, brother Farak, does not require me to enumerate all my infamies since even the not so wise are sufficiently acquainted with my former office and specialty in the most infamous crimes.

Look, I am too wicked for your assembly to seek an excuse for my actions but can say only this much that I am a cornerstone for all evil among you and the people and Enoch. Therefore, I do not lay claim to anything at all, neither a principality nor servitude, let alone servants, but let what happen to me what happened to father Cain. Thus, the corner stone of all malice will be removed from the shaky structure of all evil so that it may collapse and make place for a better structure of Farak's just wisdom out of God, the True and Mighty, to last for all eternity.

Look, brothers, that is the only reward which I have deserved most among all of you. Thereby I hope not to have made too unreasonable a demand since I am now quite aware that the old God can no longer show me grace and mercy on account of His holiness, which I alone have profaned unspeakably.

Therefore, I have now said enough and am confidently and in all humility awaiting a just, fair, and well-deserved sentence from the divine, proper and powerful wisdom of Farak.

If you will allow me to take my wife and children with me on my flight after Cain, this shall be left to your mercy. May now Farak's will be done by me. Amen."

The Departure of the Meduhedites

Ref: The Household of God Chapter 2 by Jakob Lorber Chapter 33

Jesus is speaking: "And behold, when the last fifty days had passed, Meduhed, child of Cain - inspired by Me- called them all together and delivered a mighty speech, as follows:

You men, friends and brothers, with all your wives, children and male and female servants, all of whom are now, according to the will from above, our dear brothers and sisters, too. Come all to me and position yourselves after the well-known order around the small hill so that you may clearly hear the, to me, newly revealed will of the Most High!

For it is the will of the Lord that you collect all the tools and place an even number of them in each hulk in the straw which has so far served you as a bed. When you have done this and fastened in the corners the branches, which are well covered with foliage, with the still available nails, only then fetch the fruits gathered for a duration of at least thirty days and place them carefully in the corners below the branches onto the foliage of figs. Leave the camels and donkeys

behind as a sign for the Lamechites that we were here and also as a sign that we have left to them all that is beastly and have saved what is human and divine Surround the tools with small branches to the height of a foot and cover them with your blankets and straw coats, and throw the animal skins over the tools. All this has to be done exactly in accordance with the divine instructions through me. Then come once more to me to the hill so that I may give you further instructions as willed from above. Thereupon we shall all together thank God and praise Him for His immense and boundless goodness and mercy.

‘Now go and do quickly as advised from above through me. Amen.’

And they all bowed to Meduhed, thanked God in their hearts for His instructions and most willingly and quickly set to work. In seven days, by your reckoning, everything was in perfect order.

When they had completed their tasks as prescribed, they all, according to Meduhed's pious wish, once more assembled at the hill and thanked Me for the so promptly and successfully accomplished work.

When Meduhed had seen their completed work and saw them all gathered around the hill with cheerful and pious hearts, he once more spoke to them, saying:

Men, friends and brothers, women, and sisters, listen! It is the will of the Lord, our great and almighty God, that always one hundred and twenty of you shall occupy one hulk, forty males and eighty females. The children shall sit and lie on the skins on top of the tools The women shall sit on the branches, blankets and coats. But you men shall stand around the women with your laces turned towards the row of the hulks and the current of the wind, and you shall eat only once a day, and that at noon You shall relieve yourselves, like the women and children, at the rear of the hulk into the water, and one shall support the other so that no one falls into the water. Throughout this time the men shall not sleep or sit, least of all lie down. For the Lord will strengthen your bodies and keep you awake throughout the time we shall spend on the surface of the great water according to His holy will The women and children shall not help themselves to the fruit, but shall humbly ask the men and fathers for food in order that we may become one people in accordance with the will and the eternal, almighty order of God, worthy of His goodwill and His endless love and grace’. And we will not, and shall not, touch a single hair on our heads without His holy will.

Once all of us are inside the hulks, the elder in each hulk shall be prepared, upon a sign from heaven in the form of a bright Hash of lightning, to promptly cut the rope with a sharp knife. Then a wind will arise and drive the hulks out to sea, which will already be witnessed by Tatahar and his murderous gangs, they will be reaching the shore when we are already a thousand man-lengths away from it.



You will see them throw stones into the water, but none of them will be able to reach us. For God's right hand will quickly remove us from the sight of these hyenas and guide us to a great, distant land, thirty days and thirty nights away from all the firm lands, situated almost in the middle of the great water. It is called 'Lhypon' (i.e., 'a safe garden') and this land will be there for us as long as the world stands, according to the will from above. We shall recognize it when, already from a considerable distance, we will catch sight of a burning mountain fully aflame in the love of God.

In the inner parts of the land there will be vast plains full of the most glorious and sweetest fruits, as well as of useful, tame animals which will give us their milk for a healthy fare. The earth will taste like honey and milk and will be without sand and stones and enjoyable like good bread. And listen what the Lord says: There is nowhere on the entire earth, mother land as fine as this, for there it is never too warm or too cold, but their reigns eternal spring.

The people who will be living there in accordance with the will of God shall never grow older and their dying will be like a gentle sleep, and invisible beings will come and secretly revive such a person and carry him up to God. And not even a mote will be left behind which had stuck to the feet of such a reanimated one.

But he who ever ignores the will of God in his heart will also die and never rise again in his body. And the worms of the earth will come and consume him completely, and his soul and spirit will once more for thousands of years, as solidified bodies, have to serve the mountains as a foundation, darkly aware of their misery and total nothingness, until finally, by the gracious will from above, some animal absorbs them. Then they will have to work their way up from stage to stage through the entire animal world in mute misery, until finally they can once again attain to the dignity of man. Do remember this well, for you might have to die thousands of times before you again win the life out of the love and grace of God. Do understand what the Lord is here telling you!

In future you shall not sleep with your wives before you are forty years old, and then not more often than it requires with the blessing of God to beget a human being. And you may at the most have two or three wives. Whatever is above that would be considered a grave sin by God and make your life on earth short and difficult, weaken your love for God and thus, finally, deprive you of all wisdom which is but God's voluntary gift to those who scrupulously keep His commandments.

And finally: As it is here, you shall also there not regard anything as your property, but as the property of God. And the one who might claim a right and say: This blade of grass belongs to me!' will be promptly punished by God with blindness so that in the future he will never again be able to pick up a fruit from the ground, but will have to learn to subsist throughout his lifetime on the love of God and his brothers

The sinners shall eat nothing but the grass on the ground and the bitter foliage of poor trees as do the animals to whose level they will have degraded themselves. And before they have not atoned for their sin, they shall not dare eat anything else if they want to stay alive. This concerns above all the unchaste, and particularly those young women who will lie with a man more often for the sake of

sensual pleasure. The Lord will fill the body of such a one with a pestilence, and she will be expelled to the outer limits of the great land where nothing grows but grass and leaves. Finally, the Lord, our great almighty God, says that you shall love one another, and no one shall ever become the judge of the other. Let the weaker go to the stronger to obtain support and help for his sojourn on earth, and the wisest shall serve you and be a counselor to his brothers.

Now that you have heard God's will clearly and plainly, thank God with me in your hearts, saying: Lord, You almighty and great God, we thank You with the fervor of our still weak heart Do make it strong, You great, good and powerful eternal God, so that one day, worthier or Your holiness than now in our utter weakness, we may thank You and praise You and thereby, as You have so graciously promised us, become worthy of being at least in some way like Your children. Now, O great God, Your will be done. Let us enter the hulks and be led by You as it pleases You! Amen."

And behold, after this brief prayer they left the place together with Meduhed and boarded the hulks with cheerful hearts.

And lo, everything happened exactly as predicted by Meduhed. Led by the serpent, Lamech's hyena and tiger hordes chased angrily after the poor Meduhedites. But quite as quickly I swept the hulks with My people away from the shores and then calmly, yet with speed, to the shores of the great land that was surrounded by the vast waters.

As for the Lamechites, I had them driven by the constantly rising tides of the sea right to the mountains where thousands of them were killed and eaten by hyenas, tigers, lions, bears, wolves and serpents; for the army of pursuers consisted of seven thousand men and seven thousand women. And only seven young men and seven maidens returned to the city of Enoch and reported what had happened. They also brought the animals left behind by the Meduhedites safely back, in all thirty-five thousand camels and as many donkeys, which they handed over to Lamech and told him all they had seen, namely, how a bright flash of lightning had come down from the cloudless sky between them and the fugitives and carried the latter at the end of the world far out on a boundlessly vast water. Thereupon the waters had begun to rise and driven them high into the mountains where countless numbers of the well-known ravening beasts had come upon them and killed and consumed all except them because they had fled among the great number of camels and donkeys. Let Lamech well consider the events that had taken place, for they felt that there might live a great king above the stars with whom men should never dare to fight. They should rather worship Him and honor Him because of His incomprehensible might, for even the sea, the winds, the lightning and all the ravening beasts obeyed Him. - This they had seen with their own eyes, and they had heard a great voice like thunder command the beasts and speak also with the elements like a great storm from the heights of the stars.

And behold, when Lamech had heard this, he became very angry in his heart and decided to take revenge on Me. This resulted from the fact that the serpent had taken full possession of his heart. Therefore, he said to the young men who had returned: "Listen, you seven innocent youths! I want the king above the stars to make amends and I insist on a thousand-fold compensation. Since you know where He can be contacted, go there and tell Him in my name what I

demand. And should He refuse, tell Him that I curse Him and however great and mighty He may be, He shall on earth through me, and with my mockery, be torn to pieces by His people, as was done to my people by His beasts. For with all His windy and watery might He is but a weak lamb compared with me, the king of lions. Set fire to the forests everywhere and to all the mountains that all His beasts be fried and He sit down at a well-prepared table and eat the flesh and bones of the burnt beasts. If He does not want them to burn, let Him conduct floods over all of it and drown His might!

Oh, I am well acquainted with this airy king above the stars! Whatever He does is for fear of me. For He knows my greatness, might and power which cause Him much trouble and will finally destroy Him completely unless He satisfies my justified demand and all my wishes.

'Now go and do what I bade you do. Take with you men with plenty of fire brands in order to set fire to the mountains in case of His refusal!'

The young men left and discussed the situation. 'For if he is so mighty,' they said, 'why does he not go himself?' It is no doubt easier to be furious than to fight and easier to threaten in blind fury than to act. What he said, each one of us could have said too, but where does it lead? Everyone can see how far his and our hands can reach, but who has ever seen even one finger of the king above the stars to be able to judge His might and power? Lamech is but a gnat compared to Tatahar and his adherents, and where are they now? We seven are now the entire center of his power, and we have witnessed the incomprehensible might of the great, invisible king above the stars, have heard His speech the power of which made the whole earth tremble, like someone whom the frost has penetrated, freezing his bones and marrow.

Therefore, we shall go and do what we please, and instead of threatening we shall praise Him and His great might and power. Maybe He will accept us as He has done with Meduhed, and then let Lamech at home measure his strength and bite into the stones in his fury.

We would rather serve such a great and mighty king who can surely hold us above the tides like Meduhed's people."

And behold, as they had wisely decided they carried out their resolve, which was pleasing to Me. They took their wives and camels and donkeys laden with fruits and hurried to where they saw the waters and rested on the shore of the great ocean.

Now the one who had been the spokesman said: "Here we are! Where do we want to go? We are so ignorant, therefore, let us ask the great king to take us into His service and show us the place of our true destination. Most likely we have only thanks to His influence been able to free ourselves from the clutches of Lamech and managed to get here.

Therefore, I can respectfully on behalf of all of us who have no names as yet to You, O great invisible king of all might and strength! First of all, receive our thanks for saving us from the teeth of the hyenas and the clutches of Lamech. And I pray that You lead also us to some safe place according to Your will, where we can serve You undisturbed. For we know that You are a mighty Lord, and we are aware of the absolute nothingness of Lamech whose supporters we were supposed to be. However, we did not want that since we have seen and deeply

sensed the great might of Your glory and have also heard the wild, senseless and empty prattle of the now completely powerless Lamech.

'Do hear our joint supplication and let us know Your will - or destroy us. For it is better to be destroyed by You than to serve Lamech!'

And lo, as the seven with their seven wives had ended their brief, but very sincere prayer a strong wind arose in the mountains and with the wind came racing towards them a very big hyena full of fury. It stopped in front of the small group surveying them penetratingly as if trying to find the best morsel among the people who were seized with mortal terror. And when they all wanted to flee into the water, the spokesman pulled himself together and shouted at them: "Listen to me! Let us remain standing here completely surrounded by the invincible might of the great king. And believe me, if He should destroy us, He will preserve us also in our destruction Do not be so afraid of this small hyena since we have luckily escaped the murderous clutches of a much bigger one, and this all the more so as we are now in the plain where a hyena has no longer the power of attacking humans and tearing them to pieces. For the great, mighty king above the stars has in the mountains saved us from the teeth of thousands of the most ravenous beasts at a time when we were still against Him - how could He now wish to destroy us when we are for Him?

'Believe me, He will surely save all of us. Look at me, I will now trustfully go to the hyena and put my head in its jaws. Should it hurt me, then you may flee into the water or wherever you wish. But if you see me pull my head unhurt from its jaws, then you shall all cast yourselves down and thank the great king, for then He will have come already very close to us.'

And behold, he immediately did what he had said, walked full of trust up to the foaming hyena, which opened its jaws wide so that his whole head would fit in.

And as he had put his head in, quite as unhurt he withdrew it again. The whole group was amazed, and they promptly fell on their faces and thanked Me from the depth of their hearts, although I was still a stranger to them.

When they were almost exhausted from their effusive gratitude and praise, the hyena, to their utter amazement, began to direct a sensible speech to them, saying:

You late descendants of Cain and Enoch, rise to your feet and look at me! See my angry and threatening appearance! I am only a ravenous beast destined to faithfully guard the mountains and the three living great children of God Whom in your blindness you call a great king. But tell me whether as an animal I have ever disregarded the will of God. My life is dust and earth, my time is only a few years, days and heartbeats. I have nothing to expect. What my blood thirst gives me is all I can receive from the Creator for my existence. If one of you has ever seen me transgress my prescribed limits without the will of God, let him take a stone and kill me.

But you hesitate, - not that you lack the courage, but because my obedience to the will of God astonishes you. And look how a ravenous beast, according to the will of God, teaches you men, whom an everlasting life is awaiting, about your forgetting God so completely and, thus, about your destiny. Look, no ravenous beast is so wild that even in starvation it would attack and kill one of its kinds in

order to satisfy its hunger. But you men, who are meant to live forever, go about in hordes to kill your brothers, not out of necessity, but out of a purely hellish love of power; to stain the earth with their blood and to hurriedly bury their flesh in the earth.

Oh, shame on you, you humans who are meant to be lords of the world! Where is your glory? You are fourteen of you and I am only one and you were mortally afraid of my appearance, of an unfortunate animal, which by the will of God was originally destined to serve you!

Accompany me into the forests and convince yourselves as to whether even one animal dominates the other. If one of them becomes quarrelsome and envious it is soon expelled from the herd because it was not according to the will of God within us. And you will never find an animal which sends another on the prey in order to be fed as a loafer, except it has become weak. Then another animal will carry some prey to its cave and place it near its jaws. And no animal will eat it before it has become cold. This we are taught by the divine will within us, and be assured, not one animal will lift its head without the will of God.

We know no property limits, except those of our nature and the nature of our bodies. But you men who have so completely forgotten God, divide the earth, and then some king or ruler, or favorite of them, says: 'This I give you for a small tribute, and this to the favorite and his better servants because of their helpful, strong fists. The rest of the people you may use as beasts of burden, which you have to supply only with just enough to keep them alive so that they can perform all the tedious work for the idlers. Should they resist, they would have to face ill-treatment and possibly death.' If then such a slave imagined that he could also be a brother of the king or of a ruler or had the same right as a man who was made great by the king, - would he not be promptly murdered? - Oh, tell me, where upon the entire earth is there anything crueller than you men are? Is not a serpent, or I or a lion, a tiger, a ravaging wolf or an angry bear like a pure, holy angel compared with you men? Oh, if we were given love, as you are, how we would love God! But even without love we love Him through our perfect obedience endlessly more than you do who have not only forgotten His love out of which He created you, but God Himself, your Creator.

Ask the stones, ask the grass, ask the air, ask the water, ask everything you see, except men, and all the things will proclaim the great God to you and tell you of the endless wonders of His love. Only you free humans, who were meant to live forever in bliss, could completely forget your Creator, your benefactor! - No wonder that you are nameless, whatever could you be called? Devils know God and flee Him. Satan's know God too and hate Him for being God and a lord of their existence. But who are you who from devils and satans have through His endless love become free human beings and have forgotten Him completely and in your gnat like weakness consider yourselves gods because you can strike each other with stones and clubs and erect hollow heaps of stones which you call cities? Look, you are nothing, as you now are. A blade of grass is more, and the claw of a hyena is a sacred object compared with all the countless brood of such men as the ones you left behind in the city of Enoch and as you yourselves have been till now.

In short, this is the will of the great God: Before you are given another destination you shall for seventy days be schooled by us hyenas to learn

humaneness and love of your neighbor and through it learn to know God again. And when through us wild beasts you have recognized your equality and God through our mute and blind obedience, only then will the Lord of all creatures let us show you a peaceful place.

Now follow me, as willed by God, willingly and without fear, except in the fear of God! He who is willing shall not be harmed, but the unwilling and disobedient one is not even worth being torn to pieces by the teeth of hyenas, he may expect the lot of Lamech, the satan's and the prince of satan's.

And behold, all fourteen persons followed a fierce hyena to a dark cave in the mountains where, allowed by Me, they learned from the nature of the beasts' equal right of humanity, love of their neighbor, obedience and, thus, to again recognize Me and fully trust Me. Thereby they became aware of the great difference between you humans and animals and at the same time recognized how deep they had been beneath them. All this they learned through My particular grace, which made them see and fully sense My will in the wild beasts.

(N.B. More than at that time, you would now need such a school. For then men, as children of the world, were bad because of the darkness, but now they are evil in the light and the prince of darkness admits that compared with the children of the world he has become a bungler, and he fares already like some weak parents who are surpassed by their children in all kinds of judgments.)

The Meduhedites Land in Japan

Ref: "The Household of God" by Jacob Lorber: Chapter 34

Jesus s speaking: "Now we will turn to the land lhypon (today called 'Japon' or 'Japan') and await there the approaching Meduhedites and devote still a little time to them.

After thirty days and nights, thanks to My favorable winds and with small detours owing to the calm of the sea, the Meduhedites arrived safely on the before-mentioned large island with loud jubilation and praising of My name. They arrived at the wide estuary of a quietly flowing stream coming from the interior on whose calm and broad back they were carried in their hulks up-stream towards the interior of the land by a rather strong, serviceable wind.



When they had fully arrived, Meduhed cast himself down, deeply moved by the beauty of the land, and thanked Me in the profound stillness of his heart for about an hour, and all eyes and ears were turned towards him.

Having finished his prayers to Me pleasing prayer during which he had recognized My further beneficial will for the saved people, he rose again and waited until all the hulks had completely lined up.

When all this had taken place along the shallow bank of the river, according to My will, I bid him enter all the hulks and warn the crowds lovingly on no

account to set foot on the land before they had all, for three hours, thanked the Lord in their hearts for His boundless grace. And when the Lord would then bless the beautiful land, He had given them through a visible sign before their eyes, he, Meduhed, would step onto the land first, followed by their children, and only after that they themselves were to set foot on the land and once more prostrate themselves before God, worship His holiness and praise His endless goodness and boundless love.

And behold, when they had done this with great joy in their hearts, Meduhed told them to look up to the sky, and they saw a luminous cloud envelop the entire land and an abundance of large drops fall from the cloud for a whole hour. Then they saw this cloud again dissolve and under it a small rainbow shine brightly. From the east a soft breeze was blowing which clearly announced through the mouth of Meduhed that I had now blessed the land for them. Thereupon they stepped onto the land in the above-mentioned order and did with joyous hearts as lovingly advised by the pious and wise Meduhed. When all this had been done, Meduhed once more called them all together and spoke to them, as follows:

'Men, brothers, sisters and also you children who are already capable of understanding! Take good notice of what I shall now tell you through the great grace of God! Let it be the foundation of all our thoughts and actions never to lose sight of the holy will of God and to fulfill it in every detail at all times with gratitude and praise in our hearts. For whatever comes from Him is great and holy and thus also most important. However insignificant it may appear to our worldly eyes; it is still of immense value since it is from God Who is now the Lord of all of us. And we, if we are willing and obedient, shall be able, as was promised to us, to become like His great children, which you met under the rock face above the city of Enoch.

Look, it is the will of the Lord, our great God Who wants to be our Father, that we shall love each other, that is, everyone shall love his neighbor like a brother and sister seven times more than himself. Everyone shall be strict with himself and mild, gentle and loving towards his brothers and sisters. Let no one ever imagine himself to be greater and worthier than the weakest of his brothers. For before God nothing counts, except a pure and humble heart. Let he to whom the Lord may ever give His grace, as He did to me, consider himself the least and be willing, as I am, to serve all and according to the will of God be an example to all. Only children, because of their weakness and the need for a proper upbringing, owe their parents absolute obedience. And once they have recognized the will of God within their hearts, this obedience, which is then due to God alone, shall be substituted by the greatest love and respect of a child for its parents. However, it is God's will that you always listen and look to the wisest among you in order to willingly receive the decrees of God, both general and personal but beware of ever according such a wise one more respect, love and reverence than another not yet wise, but still most willing and dear brother.

And the respect for the one wise out of God's grace shall consist in nothing else but love of God, love of the neighbor and the most willing obedience to God's directives through the humble heart of a wise brother.

Let no lie ever pass your lips, for falsehood is a foundation for all evil. Do not ever gloat over the repentance of a sinner, but let your love give a fallen brother a helping hand.

The land belongs equally to all without distinction. Of what the soil will yield in abundance, let the needy one take enough to satisfy his hunger, and let the strong willingly gather for the weak.

Make the animals friendly towards you so that they do not deny you their warm milk.

Let everyone be subject to his brother and willing to serve him. But no one shall ever give orders to another, for you shall always show love to each other so that one day you may become children of one Father within love.

Although the Lord always gives more than a person needs to sustain his life, you shall never be excessive in all your enjoyments, but after the will of God for the sake of your health moderate in everything you do and enjoy. For thus speaks the Lord: 'A proper measure and a proper goal be blessed, but excess be cursed, and damned be the aimless ways on which only harlotry and unchastely shall walk and find there the night of perdition and eternal death!' Therefore, gather the surplus of the blessing and erect everywhere storehouses, but not of stones, as in the city of Enoch, but of timber. Put four well-trimmed tree-trunks into the ground so that they project two man-heights above the ground in a square. Place on top of them four crossbars in the manner already known to you. Then place a lean-to roof over this, covered with reeds and grass. Between the four wooden props projecting from the earth make walls also braided from reeds. But leave an opening in each wall, four times the size of a man's head, and on the east side also a door, but without bars so that everyone can enter freely whenever needed. Inside drive several small stakes into the earth of about half of the storehouse, projecting half a man's length above the ground. Over them fasten some thinner joists and cover them also with braided reeds so as to place the blessing's surplus upon them for your brothers and also for yourselves. For the other half gather long dry grass and place it knee-high on the ground as a resting place for you where you can sleep through the night, rest your tired limbs, and refresh your organism.

Your tools and other implements you shall place underneath the braided reeds. However, no one shall ever take possession of such a house, but let one work for all and all for one and, thus, all for all work there so that no one among you and all your descendants shall ever suffer want.

Close to the mountains which do not smoke or ever burn, as the ones you can see from here in a great distance, you shall dig deep holes where you will find the to you already known bread-earth. This you shall eat in moderation and not daily, but only now and then after the will of God for the sake of your health, when your faces have become too soft.

Furthermore, you will find in the mountains - which you are allowed to climb if they are not burning- nice, very hard and smooth stones. Gather them and place them in front of your dwellings. Firstly, you shall grind upon them the seeds of a grass and from the meal you shall, by adding water, make dough in a vessel in great numbers of which you will find on the banks of the river. Then you shall bake from it wholesome bread in a place for baking, which you already know how to

prepare. Secondly, you shall also take such stone slabs which are somewhat softer and are found in great quantities at the foot of the fire-free mountains, and upon them you shall record all this in the manner known to you in order that even your late descendants may learn about the now revealed will of God.

For listen! Thus speaks the Lord: 'As long as you and your descendants remain within the given order, no alien people will ever be able to approach this land and disturb your peace. And I Myself will teach you to recognize and prepare many good and useful things. *However, if you should ever step out of My order, forget Me completely and not return to My order, I shall awaken another people, lead it to this land, and it will subject you and make you, its slaves. Then there will be an emperor who will destroy your sanctuary, beat you and have many put to death. He will have you harnessed to the plough like donkeys and thrash you like a camel. He will take everything away from you and let you starve, not allowing you to quench your thirst with the juice of fruits but will drive you to the water like a tame animal. And, as in the land of Enoch, you will have to build cities for him and provide good food for him and his servants in order to make him strong to beat and kill you.*

Then you will no longer receive fruits and bread for your work, but only dead tokens depending on the extent of the work, for which tokens you will be given something to eat. If even then you do not return to My order, you will have to give the fifth part of the tokens without recompense back to the emperor as a tax on the hard-earned reward. This means that you will have to beg to be allowed to work at all and for permission to do so you will have to pay the mentioned tax.

And I tell you, in all the land there will not be a single spot which the emperor would not have appropriated. Then he will distribute the land to his favorites and courtiers as a fief (an estate of land, especially one held on condition of feudal service), but you he will make ignominious serfs of his favorites and courtiers who will then be lords over your death and life. They will give you a fare of cooked grass and miserable roots, for they will take the best fruits for themselves. Whoever should seize such a fruit, will promptly be punished with death.

The emperor will take your most attractive wives and daughters for his own and his favorites' and courtiers' pleasure and you will have to throw your sons in the river and instead have to provide for his children who will then ill-treat you. But I will plug up My ears till the end of time so as not to hear your lamentations, and you will be a thousand times worse off than in the land of Enoch.

This, too, you shall bear in mind and write it onto the soft stones, as you were told!'

So, you see, my dear brothers, what is God's will. Therefore, do as you have been advised, and you can easily remain an independent people without any loss of your rights. Therefore, you shall become full of love and grace and far be from you the evil self-interest. Then you will remain, as you now are, a people of God. - And now it is God's will that you place these hulks one after the other across the river, connected with poles to form a bridge so that we can also go to the land on the other side of the river and freely make use of it.

Now cast yourselves down and thank the Lord for this great grace of instructing us and making known His will for our greatest benefit and speak with me:

'Oh, You are great, exceedingly good and holy almighty God, we thank you in the dust of our nothingness! Let the weak voice of our gratitude reach Your holy ears from the depth of our ignominy and look graciously at our humble and timid hearts! O Lord, we do not understand how great is the emptiness of our mind. Therefore, fill us graciously with the warmth of Your love and never withdraw your grace from us poor children of sin! If ever we could forget ourselves and act against Your most holy will, let us not be punished by men, but do punish us Yourself according to Your justice and great clemency and change our hearts through Your great mercy, so that one day we may become worthy being at least somewhat like Your children. Do remain our great and holy God and Lord Who one day will become also our beloved, most holy Father! - O Lord, grant our entreaty and listen graciously to our weak prayers! Amen.'

'Now go and do in due course all you were told to do and convince yourselves how true and faithful the Lord is. And when you have carried out everything, not ever forgetting the Lord before and after each task and before and after every meal, before and after sleep, before and after sunrise, before and after sunset. And, especially, when you sleep together you shall before and after the act above all ask the Lord for His blessing, - then you will beget children of life and light, otherwise, only children of death and darkness.

I shall remain all my life here in the region of the river where we have landed. And there, overlooking the river in that spacious grotto and on the beautiful mountain will be my and my children's dwelling so that you can always find me whenever someone has a concern. The Lord is giving me ownership of this grotto and the mountain out of love for you in order that you may find me at any time.

However, the entire, large and beautiful land is yours. It is the will of God that I shall grow very old and still be a late witness of all your good and bad actions. And of all who are now present here I shall be the very last to follow you to the presence of the Lord.

You, my ten companions who have already become wise too, take the people, lead them and distribute them wisely in the land and teach them what they need. And whenever it is full moon come to me to obtain advice and instruction. Amen.'

And behold, when Meduhed had finished his speech, all the people bowed to him and once more cast themselves down, without Meduhed's command, and thanked Me for the beneficial instruction. Then they stood up, ate the food with reverence, lay down on the ground to rest and prayed from time to time. Having done this for three days, they rose to their feet, took the tools and first built the bridge. Then, with Meduhed's blessing, they went to their further destinations throughout the land, praising Me everywhere. And as is easy to understand, many of them became wise like Meduhed, and they lived thus as a happy people about nineteen hundred years, *almost to the time of Abraham, and did not perish in Noah's flood.*

Later on, however, they began to gradually forget Me, who had made them the best-educated and richest nation on earth. They enjoyed all kinds of carvings and thereby sank into the darkest idolatry and all kinds of harlotry.

When I had patiently looked on for six hundred years without noticing any trace of remorse and intention of changing their ways, I awakened as I had warned them through Meduhed - in the region of today's Mongolia a people for a general scourge which I had through an invisible angel led to Ihypon and prepared for them an island bridge from *present day China*, of which still today several islands in a somewhat curved line are witnessing. Thus, they could almost simultaneously get there dry-shod, like the Israelites across the Red Sea. Through the tire of the earth, I also had a great number of larger and smaller islands raised around Ihypon as places of refuge for a few wise men that then lived there in grottoes and served Me on the quiet until I called them away from the world.

There can still be found in such grottoes, as signs of My love, such engraved tablets, which now of course could not be deciphered by anyone, even less so than the hieroglyphs of Egypt which only a fully reborn person will be able to read. Now and then a physically ailing woman in trance may be able to guess some of it through her for short moments awakened childlike spirit.

And in the grotto (which originally was called Meduhed's grotto) till today there could be found the already known song of Meduhed and some of the tools. However, this grotto, which is on a high mountain, has now become inaccessible, which I arranged later through fire and earthquakes still continuing to this day.

Thus, this land is still today under the imperial rule with its partly Mongolian and partly original Ihyponian people. Let him who does not believe this go there and convince himself. But it will not be of much use to him if he has not attained to the full rebirth. And the one who does have it will be able not only to oversee the entire surface of the earth, but also to gaze with transfigured eyes into its depths right to the bottom.

(For everything I give you here is true and faithful for My children, for I do not give it to the world, but only to My weak children. Therefore, they shall not measure My love and wisdom, My words and My grace by worldly standards. I do not want to shine before the world; I only want to be loved by you, for I have plenty of suns to shine upon the world. If you criticize My writings with your worldly learning, what do you think I shall one day do with your worldly nonsense? - Therefore, learn from Me, and once you will have been taught by Me, you will see and recognize whose laws are on a higher level- Mine or those of the world. For to the world the word is important, but to Me the meaning within the word; and he who does not gather with Me will mightily scatter!)

Before I lead you any further in this My household, I will briefly tell you something concerning My angel, especially to those who almost in every line find something to criticize in the grammar, for the sake of the world. Since they have no malice in their heart, they may, where My weak secret scribe of My New Word has in his old inattentive way made a little stroke too many or too little, complement it according to their insight; also correct the spelling and dot the i's, where necessary. But at him who would dare to change a single word or seek a better rime or to unnecessarily improve a line, I shall look with angry eyes. Do not seek the word in the sense, but the sense in the word if you want to find the truth.

For the truth is in the spirit, but not the spirit in the truth, which might be impossible since the spirit is free and preceded every rule, allowing to derive truth from it Since you say this already of your men of genius, why do you look with critical eyes at My Spirit as if a schoolboy had given you some poor work for correction? - Therefore, if anyone should think that I do not fit into the world with that garment, let him keep Me at home. However, there will be more merit for everyone if he added to My writing a rule learnt from it rather than worldly criticism; for giving is more blessed than taking! Do understand this well! Amen."

[Uncovering the Hidden Legacy: Japan's Mysterious African Heritage - YouTube](#)

The Animal's Sermon of Repentance

Ref: "The Household of God" by Jakob Lorber Chapter 35 (July 27th, 1840)

Jesus is speaking: "Now let us turn to the school] of the hyena and to our fourteen pupils and find out how far these people have during this short time advanced in the improvement of their minds in this extraordinary educational establishment.

Behold and pay attention and let no one have his ears plugged up and his eyes shut but listen to another powerful word from the jaws of the hyena, also from a tiger, a lion, a wolf and a bear. For men are full of falsehood, and not one of them can tell another something that is true. Experience has often shown you how wrong the scholars are, how all their false doctrines are supplanted by others, which often are even worse than the ones they have replaced. Therefore, it is also for you not unnecessary to hear reliable words from the sphere of honest nature full of power and write them into your hearts in order to see how true, just and faithful your holy, eternal Father is.

For lo, when the allotted period of time had successfully run its course, the hyena once more faced the frightened group full of anger, in order to render their minds through fear all the more receptive, and, allowed by Me, spoke with a loosened tongue from its wide-open jaws, as follows:

'Rise from death! This is the will of the great, almighty God and Lord of all His countless creatures! The short time has passed quickly, days and nights have in fast succession alternated over your weak existence. At the time you were led by me, the hyena, through the mighty will of the supreme God, you saw the full moon illuminating the steep paths of the wild heights to the cave inhabited by me and my children and which we willingly left to you to rest in the fresh coolness of the earth. Now you again see the moon and how it has once more become large and full, whereas earlier it had lost its light completely and had in succession become a child, a youth and now once more like a man full of power and majesty.

What the moon shows you constantly within short periods of time to teach you wisely, you shall one day faithfully imitate in your lives. Your worldly light shall, and must, wane like the light of the moon to enable you, after complete surrender of your former worldly light, - which is your proud intellect - to absorb a new light from the high heavens, which is true love without self-interest and out of it the grace of the great, holy God.

Look, just as I am now speaking to you thanks to gracious permission from above, everything can become capable of speaking to you. If you remain stubborn

and tyrannical in your heart, then cast yourselves down before us, remember this speech and think how deep beneath us you stand, and how high above us the children of God.

For tell me, which animal have you ever seen dominant the other? Which animal have you seen appropriate something? Which animal have you seen ever rob another? Or have you ever seen us murder each other or lie and cheat or practice fornication just for the satisfaction of lust?

Tell me, when have you seen us commit an act which would have been completely against our nature?

Should not the animals have learnt from you the beneficial use of their powers? But as you see, we ravenous beasts must show and teach you gentleness and the wise earnest of life. Oh, shame on you, you lords of the world, when a gnat, buzzing around my ears has more wisdom than you and the whole city of Enoch and its ten cities. For, although its life is limited to hardly a few days and its action does not leave a visible trace, it has even in its short life done endlessly more than you since the time of Cain with all your building of cities and tormenting your brothers; for the gnat fulfilled the ruling will of God and gratefully enjoyed its so short existence But you men, who are meant to live forever, could forget your own worth and above all the boundless worth of the eternal, holy God's supremely holy love within your spirit.

We lifeless beings gratefully enjoy our mute, short life, and you living men can and pleasure in licking the dirt of death with a greedy tongue!

Oh, you great holy God, why did you not rather create just hyenas, tigers, lions, wolves and bears which at all times do Your holy will? And You should never have thought of creating even one man who could forget not only Your supremely holy will, but even You Yourself!

Look here, you handsome, smooth men and see my forbidding, shaggy, miserable appearance. Does it not look as if it were enveloped in the night of God's curse, but yours in the highest blessing of eternal love?

But how is it that under the cover of death gratitude is hastening to meet the Creator, whereas under your blessed skin there is only derision, mockery, contempt and, finally, even total forgetfulness?

What is the reason why you have made yourselves through your disobedience the scum of hell, whilst my kind in servitude to the might of God has many millennia prior to you walked over the earth, yet under the hard pressure of its ferocity has never ungratefully stepped out of the order assigned it by God?

Oh, remember these words of a ravenous beast and rise to the dignity of even being called created beings and see whether you may one day succeed in being called humans. And bear in mind how high above you the children of God will still rank and see that you can, and shall, become at least similar to them, if not quite like them. - My speech is now ended but stay and listen to yet another kind of beast. Amen.'

And behold, when the hyena had ended its impressive speech, a huge, ferocious tiger came leaping towards the intimidated group, looked at them with great earnestness and, swinging its tail, then turned to the speaker and leader, stared at him for a while and, finally, opened wide its deadly jaws and spoke, as follows:

Sihin! That shall be your name, that is, this name shall tell you that you are a son of the earthly heaven, which is a heaven of the animals. They have a soul out of the fire of the sun, and this soul is speaking to your soul, which is a soul out of God given to you, greatly shaming you before me and all the bloodthirsty beasts of the forests and the scrub, for it had forgotten the great Giver, whilst our souls have not ever dared to overstep His order, although we are endowed with the same five senses you have and we possess a memory and desire and distinguish earth, water, fire and air, wet and dry. We also distinguish day and night, high and low, steep, and level, warm and cold and possess very keen sight from which even a corrupt spirit cannot hide, but trembles in deadly fear since he recognizes before him an inexorable, strong and courageous judge, come to perform on him the initial uncovering and to tear up his palace of filth and drink his impure blood so that the hallowed mountains may not be defiled.

All of you have seen with your own eyes what happened to the army of Tatahar not far from here. Do you think that the camels and donkeys have protected you from our fury? Oh no if you think this you are very wrong! God made us spare you, and there was not a single one among us that would not have promptly obeyed the will of the almighty Creator.

But you men, who not only have the five most noble senses, but in addition an immortal soul with a divine spirit in it, you were able to forget God and completely ignore this most holy name and will!

Oh, you miserable kind, you infamous human beings, you veritable monsters of decay of the wide earth! Tell me what you are or what you want to be since you have lost God, the Holy One, your most loving Creator through Whom alone you are and exist, like everything else? He Who out of His supreme love also gave you complete freedom in order to one day draw you scum from hell ever closer to His loving fatherly heart. And for this He, the most loving holy Father, is being cursed and forgotten! - Oh, You great God, do preserve my strength, which tends to desert me at the sight of these monsters, so that I may fulfill Your holy will!

See the grass! It praises God, for in its muteness it knows God, but you in your living freedom do not know a thing about Him! Yes, look at these mountains, the stones, the water, look at us, how everything you perceive with your eyes, ears and other senses extols, honors and praises God. And all the heavens are full of His great mercy, of His glory and His boundless honor! And what are you filled with that you could so completely have lost sight of Him and lose Him from your hearts?

In short, my words have come to an end! I could not possibly look at you any longer and curb my justified anger. So I leave you now after the will of the Most High and, finally, just add this: If eternal Love will free you from our gentle claws - gentle compared with your hands which are still reeking of the blood of your brothers - and set you up as a people on the earth, you shall remember what a fierce tiger - with bloodthirstiness burning in his eyes, yet like a lamb compared with you - has here told and shown you, as willed by God.

If your heart has become dumb against the so loud voice of God, you have to learn from nature! Amen.'

And as the tiger had thus ended his powerful and effective speech, it was the turn of the lion which, too, came suddenly leaping out front a thicket where it had been lurking and positioned itself firmly before the already less apprehensive Sihin, opened its jaws wide and began to speak, saying: 'Listen and see, you lords of the earth who want to be deaf and blind, you powerful kings, rulers and lords of the world in your gnat like weakness! What do you think would be the first duty of a free being that can use its God-given powers at will, that is not, and cannot be, restrained by anything from thinking in the light of the great, almighty Creator's love?

You stare at me like a shattered boulder and know less than a rotting tree trunk Would it not be the first duty to fulfill the will of the One Who gave you, as also me, life - an immortal life to you and a mortal one to me -- and willingly fulfill this will in order to thereby regain the lost grace which your great disobedience had forfeited?

Have you ever done that, or are you doing it maybe now? Oh no, you have never as yet recognized God; and one is not indebted to something one does not know -- that is your base comfort. But I must speak to you about it and ask you how it is possible to forget Him of Whom each day and night should have forcefully reminded you, and whose great majesty the rising sun, the moon and the bright stars openly proclaim.

Look, I am a strong, cruel inhabitant of this wild region full of dead stones and thorny scrub. With effort and owing to my nature necessarily also in a cruel manner, I have to seek a pitiful nourishment and take gratefully what God's judgments only scantily offer me after having suffered a raging hunger for days on end. Therefore, I tell you: If in my great need anyone would come to my aid with even a few drops of water to quench my burning thirst, thus refreshing my parched tongue, I would gratefully follow him like a guardian angel, share my last morsel with him and die for love of my benefactor!

But you men, not only that you beat, torture and kill the brothers working for you are even ungrateful towards God, curse His blessings, His grace and turn His great love into the serpents most poisonous dirt.

Oh Lamech, Lamech! You wanted to set the forests on fire in order to destroy us who only obeyed the will of the great God! But what shall we do to you who forgot God, murdered your brothers and wanted to blame us for the murder before the Just One?

Look, we do not seek revenge although his plans are well known to us; only you ungrateful humans want to take revenge on the innocent. Therefore, you shall learn from me to be grateful and obedient to God. Only then may you leave this place and become that for which God's supreme love has destined you. Amen.'

And behold, when the lion had ended his speech, also the wolf came sneaking along and began to preach to this already awakened group, earnestly admonishing them of their duty of obedience and mutual love to God and all His created beings, saying:

'Look here at me, a feared, ravenous wolf, standing before your eyes, ears and fearful hearts, called and awakened by the great merciful love of the almighty, holy God - Who is an eternal power full of the highest, most perfect life out of and within Him, invisible to all beings who have become unholy in His grace, since He

is the Most Holy - to show you His will which you have in such an infamous fratricidal manner forgotten in your selfishness, self-love, tyranny and, as a result, with contempt for everything that might have reminded you of the existence of the great God and His inviolable holiness.

Therefore, eternal Love awakened for your great humiliation and shame especially us, the most despised and feared beasts, to preach to you, above all, obedience in meekness and humility and, besides, to show you blind men through our actions, and now also through the words from our loosened tongues, energetically and impressively, the will of God for you men, who are meant to be, and to become, immortal.

And this holy will be consisting in all power and might, all wisdom and strength, life everlasting and the most blissful and wonderful freedom, in which it will consist forever, is this: All of you are absolutely equal before God, thus, brothers and sisters; so let no one ever dream of any superiority over the others. For no strength, beauty, youth, age, virtue, wisdom or whatever else give you the right of superiority, but with all these points you shall, lovingly resigned to the will of God, come to each other's aid and help the less gifted and diligent, so that you may have the opportunity to practice the divine virtue of eternal love implanted in you by the so exceedingly good Creator. For only out of the purest and greatest love God's almighty holiness has allowed itself to be moved to create out of Itself you bad, ungrateful men, who could forget honor, love and God, and then create for your sake also a great number of beings of countless species which were meant to serve you in every imaginable way.

However, you threefold blind and super deaf people do not perceive any of this which would always have benefited you, but your infamous, confused and wanton sensuality and carnal love has obscured everything for you and thus thrown you into the jaws of just and deserved death.

Therefore, bear in mind what you are meant to be, and could be, and what you now are: Nothing but miserable larvae and serpents' puppets of hell.

Change your ways, restrain your desires, wash yourselves with love and become similar to each other in humility, in obedience and in the orderly upbringing of your children. Let be harlotry, beget your children within God's blessing and be true fathers and mothers to them in the love and grace of God. Teach them first of all to obey your wise love and find therein the great love, the holy will and thus also the inestimable grace of God. Only then will you recognize that it is not we bad beasts, but the love of God that has graciously spoken such holy words to you through our loosened tongues.

And once you become as you have now been taught by the love of the eternal, holy Creator, you will find that not only animals, as you are now experiencing, but all creation will speak to you, then death will vanish from your heart, and with alive eyes and wide-open ears you will perceive clearly the depths of the divine wonders. Do ponder over what a wolf has here preached to you in a truly miraculous way and reflect in your dimmed hearts on how all things are easily possible to the eternal love and holiness of God. Then you will perceive within yourselves even much stranger things thanks to the grace of God! Amen."

Remembering Adam's Disobedience and God's Mercy

Ref: The Household of God Chapter 2 by Jakob Lorber Chapter 36

Jesus is speaking: "And behold, when the wolf - mind this, I say a wolf- had finished this miraculous speech full of wisdom out of Me, he happily leapt away and a big bear was suddenly standing before the remorseful, contrite group and gazed at them with confused and unsteady eyes as if it wanted thereby to show that their minds were still confused and unsteady like its eyes. Thus, pointing to their state of mind finally the bear, too, opened its jaws and willed by Me, began to address to them fortifying words full of earnestness and dignity, saying:

"What is God, what are you and what am I? After God, the Eternal, the Holy, the Almighty, had created out of Himself through His almighty, essential Word the entire visible world with all the suns, planets, moons, seas, mountains, valleys and great plains and then placed upon them all kinds of plants like grasses, herbs, shrubs and trees, and all this according to His wise order one after the other and, thus, a little later in the same order gradually all imaginable kinds of animals and had found that all this was perfectly in agreement with His holiness and was good, His Love within Him spoke to God in the center of His infinite, almighty holiness:

"Now that everything is well prepared, let Us make also man from the finest clay of the earth as a perfect image out of Me according to My love and My grace in order that We may be recognized and praised by an independent life outside of Us, and that one day all creation may be saved in and through him thereby to attain once more to the free awareness of its useful existence out of Me!"

"And behold, this was promptly carried out, as planned. Within a few moments the free, eternal man was standing there in all his glorious majesty, endowed with endless perfections, privileges and still greater abilities for the attainment of even more endless perfections towards becoming similar to his primeval, most holy origin, namely, to become like his great God out of and in the sphere of spiritual consecration.

"He had the power to speak with all creation, and there was not a sun so high and distant that it could not have perceived his forceful and querying voice. And none of the highest angel spirits would have dared not to answer the great inquirer and speaker.

"And God Himself, visible to His beloved, spoke with him like a brother, saying: 'Look at Me, My beloved Adam! (For that was, and is, the name of this still living first man.) Not in order to test you, but to make you perfectly free and mighty as Myself I give you an easy and brief commandment for only a very short time. This you shall keep during this time until I return to you. If you have kept it faithfully, I shall remain with you, and you shall share everything with Me as if we were one.

"Behold, everything must obey your might; but there in a short distance you see a tree laden with beautiful fruit. For a wise reason I have not yet blessed this tree. Therefore, you shall not yet taste of the sweet juice of its apples; for on the day you will eat from it before I have returned with My blessing, you will be sinning and rendering yourself perishable, weak, powerless, blind, deaf and mortal. O My beloved Adam do bear in mind the words of your most loving Creator and do not spoil the already so far advanced greatest work of My love and wisdom!

"For, now it no longer depends on Me and My almightiness, but on you alone by virtue of the freedom of your will which I have reluctantly granted you.

"Now you can preserve or ruin yourself. Therefore, keep this easy commandment and you shall become a second god out of and in Me!"

"And lo, the day changed hardly seven times with its lightless companion when already this first man, placed by God so very high and free, through the lustful and ruinous sight of his second self - became weak, deaf and blind and yet fully aware of what he was doing, forgot God to his great detriment, and willfully disobeyed the so easy commandment which was full of the good and holy Creator's love.

"Then the Eternal, the Holy One, in His anger destroyed the entire visible world before the eyes of the remorseful sinner. Not even a stone of the size of an apple was preserved and not a single animal which already for millennia, prior to ungrateful man, had gratefully walked over the meager plains of the earth. Everything was completely destroyed in the endless sea of fire of the divine wrath.

"Nothing was holy to God any longer, whether guilty or innocent, that was all the same to the great wrath. His voice thundered above and in the spaces of infinity with immense might eternal destruction to all creation. The worlds shook, dissolving in their foundations and their fragments were flying, howling and frightfully lamenting, from one infinity to the next before the angry face of God.

"However, here something takes place which no angel will comprehend in all eternity. While He, the Holy One, in His wrath destroys everything with His right hand on account of the desecration through the sin of the great evildoer, His equally holy left hand protects the weeping sinner. And only a small tear of the sinner fell into the so mightily cruel and furious eye of God and behold, all the wrath had vanished and already a new creation was smiling in and out of the endless spaces at the disobedient man and the earth and all the worlds were once more happily teeming with countless creatures for the service of disobedient man.

"As he had been prior to the sin, he remained, pardoned, after it for almost more than thirty years with all his incomprehensible might and power. But he fell again having forgotten his so loving Creator in the passion of his lust. Then the Creator expelled him (that is, carried him on His hands) from Paradise, and in another place the desert had to flower under the tread of the great sinner.

"The Creator punished the fratricide Cain with an extremely fertile land because he had cried over his evil deed, and besides He freed him from the clutches of his son Enoch and gave him the sea and all the land therein. The same happened with Meduhed and his numerous people, and now His boundless love proves itself once more where you are concerned. And even against the greatest evildoer Lamech His heart is not hardened.

"Oh see, see, you most unworthy men, what a boundless love God had, and still has, for you, notwithstanding all your unspeakable sins!

"Hear His voice through me proclaim His mercy! Look over there towards midday where He has already prepared a great land for you and see how He invisibly protected you from our just anger at His great, most loving heart!

"And listen, now when I will have finished my commanded speech to you and you shall, weeping, cast yourselves down before His love, He will have you seized by an angel and gently guided to the already mentioned beautiful land.

"Oh men, think what God is and what you are, and could and should be, through His boundless love, but when you enjoy God's grace bear also in mind who and what we despised beasts are and like Him - Who is not only your Creator and ours, but also wants to be a true Father, and actually is that and has been for a very long time since before the world and we were made - embrace with His love all beings unselfishly and bear in mind that we, too, although dumb and without speech, enjoy life. Therefore, in your love out of God, let once on the great day to come also us see a new light of the free life out of God, in which all creatures shall, and will, live everlastingly.

"Now fall on your faces before God, your holy Father, and weep penitent tears of true love. Then let yourselves be raised by the gentle hand of the almighty Creator, and now also your most loving Father, and be led by His blessing right hand to the mentioned land. There you shall become a nation, and what you have to be like His own holy mouth will teach you mightily through the lips of a great brother-angel. Amen." (August 3rd, 1840)

"And behold, when the bear had ended its speech, it vanished from their sight and in its place there suddenly appeared an angel clothed in a white garment of light. This angel was the pious Abel who actually had already invisibly spoken through the souls of the animals. (Actually, whenever natural things speak through the mouth of a seer and prophet, some angel transfers it from these things to the soul of the seer and prophet who then with corresponding natural words either writes it down or, which is easier, proclaims it directly with concise words. Only the seer and prophet understand why the one is harder to do and the other easier, wherefore also the Apostles used to more often speak rather than write, as did all the earlier seers and prophets.)

"When these fourteen people of both sexes finally caught sight of the angel, the latter began to speak to them very gently out of Me, as follows, and this is faithful and true:

"Children of Cain, my brother who had been so bad, but who is still living and will be living physically throughout the earth's ages and until the end of all time, inaccessible to all mortals right to the early end of all malice, when after the great Time of times the Almighty will proclaim to the late descendants great things through a small seer and will speak of your evil patriarch (which is now happening, and has already happened). Take notice of what I shall here make known to you according to the most holy will of God, the Almighty, eternal Creator, as well as most loving Father of all the angels, patriarchs and men! You have heard most precious words from the jaws of the fiercest beasts, which God has appeased through me and enabled to speak to you who were more corrupt than these beasts through the malice of Enoch's serpent. It is now especially Lamech who has become a great evildoer, loathed by all creation, and whose shoulders are already burdened with God's judgments weighing like whole worlds, watching the almost totally filled vessel of crimes above the stars.

"Since you were the youngest, and still are, who were compelled to join the serpent-army of Tatahar against your somewhat better will, God's boundless love has shown mercy to you. It enabled you to recognize Lamech's, the atheist's, crimes in his most arrogant, cruel tyranny. Then it led you here in a miraculous way, negotiating this great distance in a short time, whereas normally it would

take more than 120 days. Above all you were saved from the clutches of the beasts where the infamous Tatahar found his just judgment, and through death you were shown your own death. Then I, who already have been fully alive for a long time, was sent to you in order to awaken you from the sleep of death and to show you the life in humility and willing obedience to the most holy will of God and to lead you to a land which God's eternal love has prepared for you. And once you will have come to know yourselves completely in your love for Him in all humility, you will also, through the added grace of God, recognize life's true, holy and greatest worth within you and only there from the most holy and supreme worth of the eternal love of the holy, almighty Creator of all things and most loving Father of all the angels and men, not only of this earth, but of countless other worlds of which so far you have not had the faintest notion; for to know that is only given to the children and angels of God.

"However, one day worlds will bow to this earth when its light surpasses that of all the heavens. For then God's holiness will shine to all nations that will be of good will. And if you will remain true in humility and willing obedience to the most holy will of the eternal great Father, this light will penetrate to you too and make you alive throughout. But if ever you should, or could, assume superiority one over the other, this most brilliant and most holy light from God's innermost depth will shine upon you only like the light of the most distant sun of creation in the dark night of the earth.

"Look, the descendants of Lamech will because of their arrogance soon reach the firmament with their heads and penetrate it with their infamous, blind and deaf obstinacy as dark and evil criminals in that particular spot where the large vessel is standing, which is now almost full to the brim with all kinds of atrocities and has become very brittle. This large vessel will then fall upon the earth, filled with sins and the most terrible judgments of God. Then all the evildoers will drown and choke in the mire-deluge of harlotry and sweep along with them a very great number of God's children who will have allowed the daughters of the serpent to captivate their hearts - they will commit infamous harlotry with them and beget children of God's wrath and curse who will be called children of hell and infants of the dragons; and no more than eight persons will then be spared.

"But before all this happens the Lord will for three hundred years send teachers and prophets who will warn the people of the Lord's judgments and preach penitence to them for the forgiveness of their sins and the complete change of their deathly sham-life in the night of hell. They will show them the path of true life out of God's endless merciful love and grace and show them in a miraculous way on a small scale the type of God's imminent great judgments.

"Then the evil brood will seize the teachers and prophets and kill part of them, but the others they will embrace with serpent's arms and drag them down into the sink of corruption of their harlotry, deprave and deaden their spirit and make them murderers of their own children.

*"Then God will have the last teacher, Mahal, - a brother of the only righteous son, whose name will be **Noah**, i.e., 'the just son' - of his own free will travel to the wicked cities and preach there. 'This man will have bad experiences, become bad himself, finally abandon God and perish in the sink of corruption.*

"Only then will the mentioned vessel, full of sin and judgment, break to pieces and laden with all the curses be flung to the earth to ignite it in all the evil spots from their center. And only for the sake of the few righteous the merciful love of God will open the mighty floodgates of heaven and roll the high floods over even the highest mountains in order to mitigate the hellish fires and preserve and cleanse the children as well as the earth itself for the carrying of a better race according to the will of God.

"However, neither the fire nor the floods shall afflict you if in humble obedience you will observe the now revealed will of God, which says:

"Let your foremost thought be God, His will, His love and His grace. And when the day will retire into the star-glittering arms of the night and the last ray of God's beautiful sun will gently fade away above the wide plains of the earth, you shall in these searching light-thoughts of your immortal spirit retire into the blessed repose of your body.

"You shall not worry about nourishment for your body, for where the Lord has blessed some land on earth, its inhabitants will never have to suffer hunger, as long as their aspiration will be directed towards having before their eyes and in their hearts the most holy will of the eternal, great Father, blessing all things. For men were created to recognize God and His most holy will, to live according to it and in word and deed praise the most holy name of the great, eternal God.

"And if you will do this in all humility and willing obedience out of pure, unselfish love for God, He will always be prepared to make His most holy will known to you, partly indirectly through the language of nature, partly directly through His own living Word speaking aloud in your hearts.

"Should you fail to do this on just one day in a state of false complacency, which is only to test you, the heart of the one who was able to forget God, will initially feel heavy with an admonishing sadness and be for seven days dumb like a rotten tree. And as the ground under the tread of the obedient will bear and ripen the noblest fruits, the earth under the tread of the disobedient will become a desert and bear nothing but dust, stones, thorns, thistles and poisonous berries.

"For God's boundless love and wisdom gives everyone his due. To the pious and obedient children it gives bread, honey, milk and sweet fruits both physically and spiritually, whereas the disobedient, proud brood of the serpent receives stones, dust, thorns and thistles and poisonous berries, spiritually and physically, in order that the evil brood may perish and, if possible, the dead spirit can be preserved and gradually become alive again through the boundless merciful love of the great, eternal, alone most holy Father.

"Behold, all of you are equal, the men the same as the women. But you women shall properly cover your private parts, also your whole body and preferably also your head so that the men are not enticed to unchastely by your lewd nature, as the serpent by the great, secret lasciviousness of its seductive eyes lures the free genus of birds into its venomous jaws. For you women are first of all children of the serpent and full of its venom. Therefore, be above all modest like the queen bee that does not venture out into the sunlight, but carefully crawls by day and night over the cells of its harmless little children. You, too, shall be like this and obey your husbands in everything, as far as is required by the most holy will of God. But if a man - which should never be the case - should want to force

you to something that is against the most holy will of God, you are allowed to uncover your head before the man and lovingly remind him of his duties towards God. And if you will fulfill all this, then the Lord will overwhelm you with His graces and you will become a sweet and welcome sight to the eternal, holy Father, eternal and immortal.

"You men shall have no other law but the always apparent most holy will of the supreme God. If any of you should ever ignore this in his heart, the holy mouth of God, as well as that of nature, will gradually cease to speak to you. Then, since he turned away from God to the outside, he will be given an external law which will make him a slave of sin and a servant of hell if he does not soon change his heart, cleanse it in humble obedience and once more with lengthy prayers carry it to God in awe and love in order that He may bless and hallow it again with His also to you most holy will. - (N.B. Let this also to you be a good reminder of how and why you shall aspire after the rebirth!)

"Now stand up and wear the clothes prepared for you by the children of God. Over there are the ones for the men and they're the ones for women so that you may be distinguished from each other also by the style of your garments morally, modestly and in your behavior. But far be from you any magnificence and haughtiness. 'The garment shall only cover you and protect you from the cold in cool nights and spiritually lead you to God in the warmth of eternal love, meekness and obedience.

"And let each of you now take also a protective wrap to cover the eyes so that no one may suffer giddiness at the sight of; the precipices across which I am going to lead you. Once we have reached the destined place, you shall free your eyes once more and let them enjoy the sight of your preliminary homeland, beautifully appointed by the immense love of the best and most holy Father. There you shall refresh yourselves for the eternal, vital strengthening of your spirit with blessed fare of the earth, given to you by two great children of God, a man and a woman, already awaiting you. Now follow me according to the most holy will of God! Amen."

"And behold, thus My dear Abel led them for seven days and nights to the destined place with great speed over a distance of normally more than thirty days, without rest and food. For there they were My guests and I nourished them spiritually. The spirit then strengthened the soul, and the soul gave energy to the body. Thus, with My true heavenly fare they could easily endure the journey.

"When they had safely reached the destined place, they were received by the two already waiting children of God, or children of My love, Ahujel and his wife Aza ('son of heaven' and his wife as 'the silent just desire'), grandchildren of Adam's children before Seth. They removed the wraps from the travelers' eyes and welcomed them in the friendliest manner. The fourteen little ones were amazed at the sight of the two great children of My love who had the just measurements of a human being, namely, six hundred sixty-six inches the man and the woman sixty-six inches less, whereas the rescued ones reached hardly your size of sixty inches.

"When they had once more the full use of their eyes and ears, the angel again began to speak: "Children, this is the place destined for you. Regard these two great children of God as parents given you by God and obey them in

everything. For that is the will of God which in my first speech I was not allowed revealing.

"They will always confirm to you what God is going to speak to your hearts and when your spirit becomes inclined to go to sleep, they will always awaken you and teach you many useful things which, both physically and spiritually, will be of great benefit to you. And sexually you shall not know your partners until these your parents will bless you according to the most holy will of God. Even when you will have been blessed, let all harlotry be far from you and may chastity shine from your forehead like an evergreen, and let discord, anger, jealousy, covetousness and lechery never desecrate the hallowed begetting of your children, but be moderate in everything and let the love of God be your law. If you will do this, the life of your body will be a long one. You will depart from the earth in the great light of the eternal, holy Father's boundless grace, and your true reward will be waiting for you as everlasting life in the wide bosom of the most holy and most loving Father in the high heaven above the stars and one day, ah one day, in His most loving heart.

"However, about this your parents will tell you more, who are well informed by God and do not need me to instruct you. May God's love bless you and His grace enlightens and hallows you and leads you to life! Amen, amen, amen."

"And behold, this is the foundation of Sina or China, which land was spared from the flood and is still today in general much better than other countries on earth, except for some silly changes for the worse which were only later brought in through contact with people from the evil world. *Let one who is not reborn never dare to preach My Gospel there! Amen.*"

Original History of the Chinese People

Ref: "The Household of God" by Jacob Lorber: Chapter 37 (August 10th, 1840)
The Great Wall of China was built 37

Jesus is speaking: "Before we return to the city of Enoch, I must necessarily tell you a little more about the inhabitants of China. First of all, regarding the size of the great children of My love out of Adam, you are wrong if you imagine a physical tallness, for six hundred sixty-six inches are a full number of My love within man, where six hundred are directed towards Me, sixty towards the fellowman and six towards self. The measure of the woman is equal to the divine measure in man, but as for the woman's neighborly love and self-love there is a difference of sixty-six, and the woman must definitely obey the man in all things concerning this. Since the woman was created out of the man as self-love, she can love herself only in the man if her love is to be just. And since she is closest to the man, also her neighborly love is closest to him. That is why there is the difference.

Actually, these two, like all Adam's children, were also bodily considerably taller than the much-weakened children of Cain, and they were more powerful, stronger and more robust in all their muscles, veins and organs.

(N.B. The reason why the number of men is similar to the number of My adversary is that with the latter the opposite is the case, making him the most abominable being in My eyes.)

Behold, Sihin was the first who turned in his heart to Me, and he was the most obedient son of these parents and with great care led also the others in

obedience. Therefore, Ahujel blessed him first and in My name said to him in the presence of Aza and all the others:

'Sihin, I bless you in the name of my God and yours! The land will be called by your name. Take your most beautiful sister for your wife and beget with her in the most blessed discipline children like the children of God and call them 'sons of heaven' and 'daughters of the earth'. And when the love of God will take my great line away from the earth, then your descendants shall be loving and wise leaders to the descendants of your brothers.

Seek love, and wisdom shall be given you, and your tribe will survive to the end of time, for the Lord will create many lines of your tribe so that your name may live to the end of all times.

You have been given only one wife, but in the future men shall take in strict discipline also several wives for the sake of begetting the generations. But let all harlotry be far from you, thus causing an unblessed procreation. If you will observe all this, in a thousand years your people will already have spread like grass on the earth and like the stars in the firmament.

I with my few descendants am still going to bless and guide you for five hundred years, but then it will be your turn until the end of time. You shall measure the time by the ripening of a fruit, which ripens five times during one revolution of the earth around the sun. And whenever you have recognized a thing, look within yourselves and you will find a sign that shall represent the thing. Your actions shall be expressed through various corresponding lines and the accomplishment through dots. In this manner you shall record all you will in the future still hear from us, learn and experience. And what is important show also to your children till the end of time for a great witness one day to the evil brood of the serpent. Amen.'

However, without prejudice to the spiritual freedom, also this nation did not remain quite the same. Approximately one hundred and twenty years after the flood also the descendants of Sihin grew to a considerable nation, had frequently all kinds of quarrels and formed parties which differed in their customs and divine services. Some insisted that only the firstborn were capable leaders, whereas others maintained that it was nothing special to be the first-born since they were often female, and the ones with more insight in their hearts should always be the leaders. The people who said took up this argument: 'If it is only the heart, why should not the sensible heart of a brother from the lower class be capable of leading?' Some rejected all this and said: 'As it was in the beginning, let it be also to the end of time!' Others said that in everything and at all times God should be asked for advice and nothing should be judged and done independently. To this other replied: 'If this is so, then everyone can do it; so what would be the use of one or even more leaders?' Some said that God did not reveal Himself to everybody in order to prevent men from becoming superfluous to each other. Thereupon again others replied: 'Then let every seer teach what has been revealed to him and the leadership be left to God. Why then one or several leaders?' Again, others remarked: 'But who guarantees that such a supposedly more advanced seer and teacher always teaches the Word of God?' Whereupon others said: 'Well, if one can no longer have complete faith in the teachers, then leaders and teachers are no use to us!' Thus, the arguments continued and as a result many sects came

into existence and the realm fell apart, each section under a different leadership and teaching, and in this way it continued right to the year **3700 after the creation of Adam**, when the two your better historians already known builder (***The Great Wall of China***) of the Hehu Tsin line, named Chi Huang Ti (wise absolute leader of the people) appeared and began to preach mightily. He prophesied that a great people not far from the borders of their land had secretly spied on them, and if they did not all work together and erect a high and thick wall along their entire realm, this people would invade their land in great numbers and murder all of them.



He himself had been given the power by Me to hold back this invasion until the completion of the wall. But this could be only for ten years and, therefore, they had to work diligently to accomplish this great, holy task according to My revealed will; otherwise, things would look very bad for them.

Now everyone who had hands took part in the work and in eight and a half years the wall was completed its length was more than eight hundred and seventy thousand man-lengths; it was nine man-lengths wide and nineteen man-lengths high, and every hundred lengths it was provided with a ten lengths higher watchtower, in which alternately a hundred men had to keep watch. This situation did not last very long because the false prophet gave himself away to the people when he had all their religious writings collected and whatever in them did not suit his despotic spirit burnt and destroyed.

Thus, he managed, although only by force, to once more reunite this before him so divided realm and as a veritable usurper to rule over it for almost sixty years. His son of the same name became indifferent and indulgent, but as a result the latter's son, the third in the line of these usurpers, had to pay for the outrage with his life in a general revolt of the people when he began with an even more cruel persecution of the believers than the one his grandfather had already started.

Thereafter the realm once more disintegrated into many parts until, finally, in the year 3786 Liu Pang (a highwayman) gathered around him an army of like-minded, as a general subjected all and, finally, set himself up as an emperor and a son of heaven. He collected whatever he could find of ancient, still hidden writings and legends, organized religion, appointed priests to watch over the sanctuaries and divided the people into classes or castes, threatening with death those who would break the rules.

Thus, he founded the so-called Heavenly Empire or the great dynasty (Han) and expanded it considerably west of the wall. This empire lasted until the fourth century before the incarnation of My Word when it again suffered a considerable, division, losing a great part of Tartary and Mongolia, and was reduced to three fighting realms, called I Chen kue. Still later, in the fourth century after the great incarnation of My Word, this line became extinct and the realm, in the same heavenly form, because of the people and the priests, came under the rule of

Mongol-Tartar rulers from the region of Baikal, under whose bearable leadership it still exists today.

Here you have the whole history of China in brief. Whoever cannot believe it, may go there and convince himself. However, he will not fare much better than if he traveled to Japan. To the blind a lantern is no use even in bright daylight, whereas the light of the sun suffices to the one who can see.

Now, having taken care of our fourteen students, let us return for a short while to the city of Enoch and watch Lamech's conduct. And when we have satisfied ourselves right to the times of Noah, we shall pay a short visit to the forefather Adam and following that open the sluice gates of heaven. Amen."

Lamech's Family – city of Enoch

Ref: "The Household of God" by Jakob Lorber Chapter 38



Jesus is speaking: "You can easily imagine that through a considerable emigration within one year the city of Enoch as well as the other ten cities became noticeably deserted. Furthermore, Lamech had lost his loyal followers and, as a result, his might, which he had considered to be so great, became as much as non-existent.

Bearing this in mind you will understand that Lamech for a period of about thirty years necessarily had to change his tone to a milder attitude in his government in order that the people would once more become submissive and begin to work for him so that at least he and his own could without a care gourmandize like a pig and a lazy oxen.

His family consisted of two wives, namely, Ada ('well-advised virtue in joyfulness') and Zilla ('silent submission and patience'). Ada had two sons, namely, Jabal (father of the hut-dwellers at the foot of the mountains) and Jubal (musician, inventor of the Pan's pipe and the violin, an instrument which resembled yours, but it consisted of a single piece of wood which he had laboriously fashioned with the help of grinding and smoothing implements of stone).

Zilla had a son Thubalkain and his sister Naeme. I graciously allowed him to become a master in working metals, and Naeme tamed the wild animals and

thereby enabled her brother and his helpers to enter the iron-rich mountains. She was exceedingly beautiful, had a very humble, but all the more courageous soul and her eyes possessed such a power that before her gaze stones became like wax and the hard teeth of the beasts soft like the down of a dove.

Behold, this was Lamech's family, plus a few servants he had retained, a few lady's-maids and some worthless concubines; in all about thirty people, all of whom had to work diligently in order to get something to eat and cover their nakedness. As already mentioned, this situation lasted about thirty years when the people, because of the good inventions rather than because of Lamech, began to visit the city of Enoch in order to buy their useful metal articles by way of barter. Also, from the other ten cities people came to hear Jubal's music, which softened their hearts and changed their attitude towards Lamech. Thus, Naeme's great beauty charmed the hearts, and the one who had not been able to see Naeme might weep and lament for days.

To help you understand how this could be possible, I will describe her appearance to you. This Naeme was the same person who, going back to the times of darkest heathendom, was known by the name of 'Venus', as the wife of a blacksmith and goddess of beauty. Since Sarah and Rachel there had never been such a beauty on earth as that of Naeme. She was five feet tall (according to your measurements). Her hair was blacker than coal, her forehead white like new snow, slightly pink towards the eyes. The eyes were large and sky-blue, the pupil fiery black, the eyelids fresh and tender, as were the dark eyebrows. The nose was straight and ended in a soft tip below which the nostrils gave it a sweet look through their gently rounded shape. The mouth was the size of an eye, and its gently raised lips silenced any rose. Her perfectly formed beautiful and serene cheeks had the slightest flush of the most tender red of roses, and they looked like snow-covered roses, where the snow, as it were, lets the last love-ray of this royal bloom shine through to its brilliantly white surface. Thus, her chin was incomparable to any other in an earthly shape. Her neck was neither too long nor too short, but just perfect, smooth and round and absolutely faultless. The beginning of her bosom distinguished itself from the neck only by a tenderly rounded elevation and the shoulders and the nape of the neck were all in perfect harmony. The bosom was like an ethereal, soft and white elevation of life rather than something of flesh on whose highest full and gentle roundness two bright young roses seemed to bud. Her arms were so rounded and soft that you would not be able to even imagine it, for such arms are found only in heaven. And in this perfect harmony all her body was covered with the shining white of snow in ethereal tenderness and softness.

This Naeme became the wife of her brother who begat with her seven sons who looked very heavy and shapeless and resembled your so-called idiots. This was caused by the fact that Naeme, at her father's will, had to allow herself to be used too often for purely unchaste reasons because of his tyranny, for thereby all the men became once more submissive to Lamech. Now all eyes were turned towards Naeme and all ears to the greedy commands of Lamech. For right to her eightieth year Naeme remained an object of human admiration, during which time the people had multiplied considerably and obeyed Lamech's commands. Seeing how mighty he had once more become, Lamech became increasingly severe and

hard and cruelly reinstated the death penalty for those who resisted him. (28th August 1840)

At this particular time of Naeme, Adam's children, at My bidding, sent the first good emissary from the mountains to the lowlands of Enoch there to proclaim My name, and that, in particular at the court of Lamech. And behold, Lamech received the emissary well, who was a grandson of Adam descended from Adam's grandchildren before Seth. His name was Hored ('the terrible') and he was tall, wise and had neither wife nor children. When Lamech had taken Hored's teaching to heart, he honored this emissary by assembling all female members of his court and inviting Hored to choose the most beautiful woman. And so, against My will, Hored looked at the wife of Thubalkain and she had to obey Lamech's command, this being a matter of life and death.

For although Naeme had at that time already reached an age of almost eighty she was still so beautiful that now a very attractive girl of eighteen would be no match for her. Besides, Thubalkain was used to unfaithfulness anyway, and so he did not take this event to heart, all the more so since Hored assured him that the wild beasts would be unable to harm him because of the weapons and his metal Armor and, besides, Hored would provide for him some strong helpers from the mountains who would protect him and teach him the proper method of how to produce all kinds of useful things from metals.

This satisfied Thubalkain completely and thus this matter was ignominiously resolved. Hored departed from the city of Enoch and returned with his wife to the mountains.

However, as far as the helpers from on high were concerned, this promise was not kept as Hored did not return to his people with his wife, but had chosen a lonely spot where he could enjoy his happiness without being envied by anyone

Through this deception Thubalkain was compelled to persuade his brother Jabal, son of Ada, to join forces with him and erect foundries at the mountains and live there as a guard. Thus, he became the first known foundry man.

In this way they established regular metal-works and manufactured hundreds of objects, partly useful things, partly just ornaments and jewelry, which were avidly acquired in exchange for fruit. From all the cities and from all parts of the great land people traveled to the secure foundries where they bought articles they needed as well as luxury objects. They admired Thubalkain and brought their sons to him to be apprenticed, and thus within a short time the foundry population grew to such numbers that Lamech began to become anxious concerning them.

He thought: "What will, what shall I do? The crime I committed against my brothers is weighing down my heart. The great Terrible One from the mountains, who became my second son-in-law, has severely reproached me and made me tell the people about this crime. If I do that, my life will be in danger, and if I do not, I will have God and His great children in the mountains against me, who will destroy the disobedient one."

And behold, a powerful voice sounded from his breast: "Reveal it to your wives and tell them: You wives of Lamech, listen to my words and pay good attention to what I tell you. I have killed a man, which deed gave me a tumor, and a youth, which act wounded me. Cain shall be revenged seven times, but Lamech seventy-seven times!"

And behold, Lamech found this acceptable and soon did as bidden by the voice. But when his wives heard this, they had such a shock that they lost their speech and thus were unable to tell anyone about it. After a while they left him secretly to go to their sons in the foundries, but before they had reached them, they were stopped by two mountain dwellers, their speech was restored, and they were taken to the hallowed heights of the mountains.

As soon as they had arrived there, they asked about Naeme, but the guides told them that Hored had vanished out of disloyalty and jealousy, and they had not been shown where he was hiding like a worm. And if they wished to be blessed by them (the guides), they would take them for their wives. For Ada was one hundred and ten years old and Zilla only a hundred, and both were still extremely beautiful. Nowadays they would have been thought to be only in their twenty-fourth year.

Thereupon they let themselves be blessed, became the guides' wives and traveled with their husbands to the abode of Adam, who was then already nine hundred and twenty years old, in order to receive his blessing, too.

When Adam saw them, he spoke in a troubled voice: "Listen, you sons of the children of my children, I know all of my descendants who are within my blessing according to the blessing of Abel from eternal Love. But these two women I do not know! Where are they from?" And the two answered: "They are outlawed wives of Lamech whose crime has outlawed them."

And Adam said: "What are you saying? I know the son of Methuselah who is only one hundred and twenty-six years old and has never known a woman as yet! * So, what are you saying? Cursed be the lie and the mouth that has uttered it and the tongue, which speaks an untruth in the face of God! Therefore, by the curse of Cain, the murderer, tell me, where are these women from?"

"Do not be angry, Father Adam! Also, out of Cain a Lamech has come into existence in the lowland, and he has murdered two brothers. These wives were godly, notwithstanding the curse, and therefore the Lord has awakened us to save what was lost and if we did His will, do not be angry, father, but bless what the Lord has saved!"

And behold, Adam was moved and spoke: "What the Lord has saved is already blessed, and my blessing would in this case be a sin. So go in peace! How could I dislike what pleases God? Therefore, keep the treasures of eternal Love and Mercy! Amen." * N.B: of June 25, 1841: "*Here 126 years do not denote the age, but only point to a state wherein man has not yet attained the proper ratio which is hundred for God, ten for the brother and fellowman and one for himself. If you know your arithmetic, work it out and you will know when a man is ready to be reborn. Lamech has not yet known a woman because in his spirit he has not as yet reached the stage set as a foundation of eternal order.* Ans. W.H. (AnselmW. Huttenbrenner. The Publ.) *is only one hundred and thirty-seven years old; there from the seven and the three some things have still to come off. This says I, your Father. Amen. Amen. Amen.*" - Methuselah was at that time two hundred and seventy-three years old and Lamech forty-six. Comp. Chap. 110, 7.- 'The Publ

Begin and Cause of the Decline of the Children of the Heights

Ref: The Household of Gog by Jakob Lorber Chapter 39

Children of the Heights - The Sons of God and the daughters of Cain (Genesis 6:1-8)

Jesus is speaking: "And behold, thereupon they left the first patriarch and kept their treasures in their hearts. But they cared too much so that there remained only very little room for Me, which was, of course, not according to My order. Thus, their hearts became gradually dark, and they are increasingly sensual. The same happened to their children, and soon there was not much difference between them and the Enochites.

When Adam's children noticed how exceedingly beautiful these women were they asked the two where they had come from.

They (the two guides, the Ed.) replied: "From the city of Enoch in the lowland; and there are still many thousands that have come from the blood of Cain. Go there and preach the name of the Lord and you shall receive such a reward, too. Hored went and was rewarded. We went, and the reward is tied to our hearts!" When they inquired after Hored, the two answered: "Brothers, our love has blinded us in its blessed sweetness; therefore, we do not know where he has gone. But we assume that he has taken the road of Ahujel and Aza and you know that the sun has to rise and set eighty times before that place can be reached. However, you should not envy him in his happiness, but do the will of Jehovah and go to the city of Enoch and powerfully proclaim His holy name. Then the reward will not be withheld from you."

There were seven of them who had heard this, and they went into the lowlands. - However, we shall first throw a glance into the depth of the city of Enoch before we await them there and allow them to appear and act there as unauthorized ones in My name out of temporal interests.

Behold, now Lamech had no one left to comfort him. Nothing would appeal to him. Music stirred his conscience; in the soft vibrations he kept hearing the last sighs of his murdered brothers and the sound of the pipe cut through his heart of stone. And he cursed Jubal for producing such miserable things, which at the sound of every note did not kill him only seventy-sevenfold, but always caused him a thousand-fold death. Because of this, which always mightily disturbed his conscience, Jubal had to leave the court and was not permitted to show his face there if he still valued his life.

Thus, Lamech's most beautiful mistresses, however attractive they might be, were unable to win any favors. Therefore, they tore their garments, wept and grieved. When Lamech saw this, he went to them and said: 'My Ada is gone and so is my Zilla. Of what use could you be to me? Go into the fields and work so that you may not starve at my court, for all I need now is myself! If I still possessed my might, then the sun, the moon and all the stars would have to submit to my anger. But since Tatahar I have become weak and am no longer able - notwithstanding the numerous executions, which were carried out in accordance with my just laws - to regain my lost power. Therefore, I want to get rid of everything and be left alone with my few servants, counselors and other workers and limit my government to my city only. Let all else be lawless and outlawed and whoever should approach my court shall be punished with death.

And now away with you that you may not be the first to experience this punishment and let none of you dare answer back if she does not want to see me cool my anger in her blood!’

Then he left them suddenly and the thirty maids of exquisite beauty, aged between twenty and forty, departed. Out in the open, they sat down and deliberated what they should do, but were unable to come to a satisfactory decision. And look, while they were still deliberating, they suddenly noticed that seven tall, robust men whose unexpected appearance frightened them surrounded them. But when the men noticed their embarrassment, they spoke to them, as follows:

‘Do not be afraid you young and beautiful children, for you will not be harmed! We do not come from the city of Enoch to lead you to your death, but we come from the heights of the mountains and want to save you. If you will let us bless you, confessing the divine name of Jehovah, we shall take you for our dear wives in the love of God, the mightiest Father of our father Adam. Then you will have to follow us to the heights where Naeme has followed the great Hored and where in the protective arms of the brothers Aholin and Jolliel, Ada and Zilla, the former wives of Lamech, the cruel murderer of his brothers, have found safe refuge.’

Thereupon the maids rose and said: "There are thirty of us and you are only seven. If, as we have once heard, each of you may take only one wife, what should we, the other twenty-three, do by your side?"

And the seven said: 'It is not as you think! Although in the beginning, as we were taught by our still living original progenitor Adam, Jehovah's almighty love created only one man and one woman, we children have been allowed by God to take four, five and even more wives for the sake of begetting. Therefore, do not have misgivings, but let yourselves be blessed and follow us.'

And behold, when the maids heard this, they were very happy and followed the men. Having reached the heights, the seven did not know how to distribute these treasures of love among themselves. So, they prostrated themselves and implored Me for advice. - And lo, Seth approached and said: 'Rise and do not tempt God with perjured hearts, asking the Holy One how to distribute the impure catch among you, but go to Adam, repent there your mighty offence and then distribute the women among your brothers after the father Adam has blessed them, so that you may appear just before God, for you know that God is holy and that His land must not be desecrated through disobedience and the lewdness of your vain hearts.'

Upon such a reprimand the seven, together with the maids, followed Seth to the dwelling of Adam where they found him and Eve praying and sighing by the side of Enos (the preacher of My name), a son of Seth, and Enoch ('the will of Jehovah'), the extremely pious son of Jared. Seth told Adam what had happened and asked him to show mercy to the blood of Cain and thereby once more restore order, which had been disturbed by the seven.

And Adam said: 'O my dear son Abel-Seth, you are a true image of my godly Abel. You are, as he was, according to my heart, full of love. Abel blessed his murderer out of love, and you ask for blessing of the blood of my enemy!

Oh, be blessed a thousand-fold, you awakened seed of God, and bless with this blessing the so deeply desecrated blood and distribute it to the children. And as it pleases the Lord, let each one take one of the maids, but only one. And he shall no longer remain in the land of Jehovah but go westward for thirty days and settle there in the deep valleys and not return to the here dwelling fathers before the sun has completed a hundred times the circle of its journey. For you, my dear Abel-Seth, know anyway how holy this place is where every mouth so often utters His holy name, where your sacrificial altar is standing, where Enos proclaims the holy will of the most high, holy Father and where Enoch fulfils that holy will to the last detail. Therefore, you shall act in the most holy name of Jehovah and in my name which is a holy name since I received it from God's most holy mouth as the first, unborn man created by His holy hand.

May love guide you and grace lead you forever! Amen.'

And behold, Enos and Enoch accompanied the father Seth from Adam's hut. And Eve wept for joy when she saw Adam so happy and said: 'Adam, how I always rejoice when you are really happy! But when I look back at myself, I become again sad when I realize the magnitude of my guilt and how much evil has gone forth from it. What must things be like with the descendants of Cain! O God, what a great sinner I am!'

But Adam comforted her, saying: 'Beloved wife, you my second self, your grief is always just and pleasing to the Lord. Therefore, let your heart be calm and bear in mind that we can do nothing without God, whereas with God we can accomplish everything, as Enoch has taught us. Without God we can never find complete peace, and therefore we must sacrifice everything to the Lord. Behold, He is mighty, wise and full of love and shall find the right means to once more straighten out what we have spoilt. So be unconcerned; the Lord's love will set everything to rights in due course. Amen.'

And Eve thanked Adam and he blessed her for the last time in My name and he lived still ten years, but Eve another thirty.

Seth did as suggested by Adam, but the seven began to weep because they were to go away. And Seth pitied them in his heart, and he prostrated himself and implored Me in his heart: 'O Jehovah, behold, the tears of these children are burning me, and yet my love is no more than hate compared with Your endless compassion! Show me through Your mouthpiece Enoch what I am to do or let me die like Abel that I may not see the tears of the children that are to be orphaned! O Jehovah, hear my prayers also this time as You always do! Amen.'

And behold, Enoch raised his eyes to heaven, and I opened his mouth and he began to speak, as follows: 'I have put My ear to the earth and have heard Seth's love. If the seven will give the maids to their thirty unmarried brothers and they live for ten years in chastity, they may stay. But if not, they must flee from My face as Adam bade them! Amen.'

Having heard this, the seven rejoiced in their hearts and praised God for His immense grace. And with great joy they took the maids to their brothers, accompanied by Seth, Enoch and Enos.

However, when the brothers saw the maids, they were alarmed at the situation and refused to accept them. But when I noticed the willingness of the seven, I spoke to them through the mouth of Enoch:

'I have seen the seven to possess unselfish hearts, happy to give joy to the brothers. Therefore, keep the maids and they shall be blessed for your hearts, four each, and the two eldest shall have five each. But the demanded chastity shall be observed! Amen.'

And behold, Seth, Enos and Enoch blessed them and left, praising My name, and then went and told Adam about it."

Adam Explains His Weakness

Ref: "The Household of God" by Jakob Lorber: Chapter 44

Jesus is speaking: "Having heard this, Seth's eyes were opened and so were those of all the others. For now, they understood what Enoch had wanted to say and were satisfied that at least Enoch comprehended the things which were so totally incomprehensible to them. And they praised and glorified Me deep within their simple hearts for having endowed a man with so much wisdom for their benefit, shown him things from the heights as well as the depths and let their hidden meaning be revealed for the spiritual benefit of those who sought Me in true love.

You have also been given many and far greater things. But none of you has as yet come to Me in the depth of his heart to glorify and praise Me in true love, boundlessly happy about this great and now so abundant grace flowing to you and secretly longing for the consecration of the servant who has to be an instrument of My grace for little more reward than that for which every one of you shall serve Me in true love. Only one have I awakened for you to be a fool before the world so that you may be raised to great glory before the angels, and this one is My poor weak servant (J. Lorber. The Publ.), a fool who came to you long ago from the country. He was for a long time among you, and no one noticed that he is a fool before the world. But the fool sought Me and I allowed him to find Me and awakened him before your eyes to become a beast of burden to you and bring you a new bread of love from the heavens, which is a true bread since it gives and demands love. When this beast of burden is on Zion on a boggy road, you approach him and take greedily bread from his basket. But you take no notice of his feet, which, usually because of you, are up to the ankles in sticky clay. But I tell you that if you enjoy the bread and the water of life, do not let the good-natured beast of burden remain stuck. Whoever is able to do it, let him free his feet from the mud, unnoticed by the world. Otherwise, if he should remain with you, his feet will gradually become weak from fear so that he will hardly be able to carry bread for you, except I Myself free him; but then I shall also lead him where I want him to be. In that case I will not leave him with you, for although I have still many children, there are only few among them who would let themselves be used as fools. For it is better and easier to eat the bread when it is already prepared, but much harder to have oneself for love harnessed to the plough as a beast of burden for a small reward. Do heed this and glorify and praise Me in your obedience! The one among you who will do something about it shall never lose a penny, and in due course he will be recompensed temporally and eternally. The servant will tell the one who wishes to help wherein his feet have got stuck. Amen.)

When all had for about an hour glorified and praised Me, Seth rose again, told the others to do the same and said: "Children, our dear Enoch has with the

visible grace from above lifted heavy burdens from our oppressed hearts and thrown them forcefully into a boundless depth of delight and bliss. God, our most holy and best Father, be forever glorified and praised for this! However, as Enoch was given this for our sake because of his great humility before God and the brothers - and he has faithfully passed on to us without the least reservation all that he has received - and we are now happy and are praising God, our most holy Father, I think that in our love and joy we should not forget Enoch. Since he has become a favorite of God, how could he not be ours as well?

Although we are aware that all he told us comes only from above, I still think - while we must respect the spot upon which our dear father Adam and our mother Eve have tread -- that it would be important not to ignore the mouth through which God Himself has spoken to our hearts.

O children, let us take dear Enoch into our midst and let him no longer till the meager earth for his daily bread, but since God, our most holy Father, has in His boundless love graciously made him into a cultivate for of our hearts so weak in love, let us work the land for him through our many other sons and daughters who all have strong limbs, but all the weaker hearts.

You, dear Henoch, will take willingly and gratefully what your fathers want to give you because of their gratitude towards God, so you can work our hearts very much to the holiest desire of God.

And now, children, follow me into my hut and let us strengthen our bodies with food and drink in the name of our most holy Father. And then our dear Enoch may speak to us once more about love. Amen." (26th November 1840)

When Seth had enjoined this on his children, they all walked towards his hut, which was situated near the one of Adam. Arrived there, they all bowed first to the hut of Adam and only then to Seth's hut They paid a brief call to the arch-patriarch and arch-mother and had Adam bless them before the meal. This was done daily for those who were present, and a general free blessing was spoken for the absent ones. When they wanted to leave, respectfully and extremely gratefully, Adam spoke to them, deeply moved and with an already weak and touching voice:

'Dear children and you, my most beloved son Abel Seth! I, your father Adam, have now blessed you and you are on your way to invigorate your limbs with food and drink, which is, of course, the right thing to do. But behold, I have become already very old and weak, as has mother Eve, and can no longer work, as my limbs no longer serve me. You know that I have still worked all the time and did not want anyone else to work for me, so as to set a good example.

However, today I was no longer able to do it. When all of you were unable to work I, your father, worked for you with the gracious help of our great, holy Father, but now I cannot do it any longer.

Children, I am hungry and thirsty. When you have eaten your fill, do think with a small refreshment also of your old father and mother and give me, too, something to eat and drink and henceforth do keep us in your care. And what you do to us, your parents, do that out of love so that the offered food may be enjoyable and not taste hard and bitter to your old and weak parents. You will not have long to endure this small burden as I, your weak father, will not dwell much longer in this hut, always blessing you, but shall leave it forever and go to dwell in another one where Abel has gone. Therefore, you should gladly look after me,

your old, weak father, and also after your mother while we are still among you, for in a few years, which will have passed soon, you will sadly seek the one who now in his helpless weakness is asking you for food and drink, but his hut will no longer be found on the vast earth. Now, dear children, go with God's blessing and strengthen your limbs, but do not forget your old, weak father and mother. Amen.'

When the good children had heard these words of Adam, they were so moved in their soft hearts that they all began to weep aloud and could not calm down for a long time. But finally, Seth rose and spoke, deeply moved.

Father, children! As long as the earth exists and heaven with its stars, the moon and the sun surrounds it such a holy word has never been spoken by the mouth of man as the one, which I, after Adam the father of all of you, shall now speak. I say: Let all the stars fall from heaven and sun and moon be deprived of their light forever; let all seas, lakes and rivers dry out completely and the entire earth turn to stone; let all this happen rather than that we eat a morsel before our father Adam and our mother Eve have sufficiently satisfied their hunger at any time of the day.

O father and mother, you already know how happy I used to be when you were willing to accept something from me in the days of your strength. So, my joy is all the greater that you do need our care and I, thus, have the blessed opportunity of repaying with my greatest love at least the tiniest part of my very great debt to you, O father and mother, for all your great kindness. O father and mother, accept this graciously and remain among us with your blessings to the end of time!

And you, Enos and Kenan, hurry to my hut and fetch the best food and the freshest drink and tell my wife, Jeha, your mother, that her father Adam and her mother Eve are hungry and thirsty and bring her here that she, too, may promise what I have now promised sacredly in the face of God. Now go and return immediately! Amen, amen, amen."

Adam Blesses his Children

Ref: "The Household of God by Jakob Lorber Chapter 45

Jesus is speaking: "And behold, hardly a hundred heartbeats had passed when the two emissaries returned with food and drink, accompanied by the weeping Jeha. They entered Adam's hut with reverence and handed what they had brought respectfully to Seth, as the most worthy, that he might, kneeling before Adam and Eve, give them joyfully and with the greatest filial love what they had asked for.

When Adam saw the great willingness and love of his children, he raised his eyes to heaven, before he had put a morsel in his mouth, and said: 'Oh You great, best and super holy Father, how great must Your love for us weak, disobedient men be when the smallest spark of this Your boundless love in my descendants and Your children is already shining so mildly and gloriously upon me, the first, weak man of the earth! Oh Father, look graciously down from Your holy height upon Your weak, fallen son whose fall has brought about the fall of all his descendants and bless in Your kindness the loving gift of my descendants and your dear children that it may strengthen me and my dear wife in our constant remorse about our disobedience to You, Oh most holy, best and most loving

Father! Bless also Your dear children and let it graciously happen that your holy name be always praised and glorified! Amen.'

After these words, Adam took the food he had been given and happily enjoyed it with Eve, full of gratitude towards Me and kind thoughts for his children. But the children silently thanked Me in their hearts for the great grace that I had deemed them worthy of now caring with great joy for their parents. Behold, these were dear children to Me of which kind there are nowadays only few on the totally depraved earth. They were truly children after My heart! If there were many such children, I would not have to be such a hidden Father to them as I now must, unfortunately, be to many, that they may not perish completely in their stubborn blindness.

And when Adam and Eve had satisfied their hunger in the presence of the children still weeping for love, Adam rose and thanked Me with a deeply moved heart, then turned to his children and said with great kindness and deep feeling in his voice: 'May God's blessing as well as my blessing be always with you and all your descendants. And as long as the earth will remain earth shall your now so highly blessed lineage continue till the end of all time; and with those from your direct line this my blessing out of God, our most holy Father, shall always be evident in all their dealings. And one day this my blessing upon you shall become visible as a newly rising sun of love and grace out of God the Father over all the nations of the earth who will then behold the great glory of God, descending in supreme love and meekness as a Life of all life. Amen. - And now go, dear children, and strengthen and refresh yourselves with God's and my blessing! Amen.'

Then Seth rose and said: 'Oh you dear father and you lovely mother! It would not be right if when you have been hungry even for only half a day, we should not out of our great love share your undeserved discomfort for which we are responsible as we have come to you only so late. Therefore, let us because of our great love for you, and through you for God, take no food today so that we may praise and glorify God more purely and worthily in our very happy emptiness. Oh father, do graciously accept this little just sacrifice from us and instead allow your grandson Enoch to speak about the love of God before you and us that his mouth may be hallowed through your blessing, too, as it was hallowed before us by God through your deceased son Abel. Oh father, do graciously accept my pious request! Amen.'

When Adam heard this, he was moved to tears and said: 'O children, you are doing more than I asked of you. You shall never be limited in all that is good. Do what you wish, yet not in my honor but always for the glory of God, and do not forget your father in his great distress and always remember the weakness of your mother.

And you, dear Enoch, who through my beloved Abel were blessed by God to be a speaker and preacher of love, be blessed also by me in all your descendants, and may from your lineage arise a great preacher for all the nations of the earth who with the word of life eternal shall proclaim the Kingdom of God to all men. Amen. - And now speak with your blessed tongue! Amen.'

Having received this exalted encouragement Enoch became exceedingly happy and cheerful. He first thanked Me in his heart, then he prostrated himself

before Adam, kissed his feet and the garment of Eve and implored the original progenitor to place his blessing fatherly hands on his head so that through this act his weak tongue might become worthy of uttering words of love before the ears which once had heard the words from the mouth of eternal Love Itself, yes, before and to the hallowed ears which have heard God's voice so often.

After complying with Enoch's request, Adam said to him: 'Dear Enoch! You have formulated your request well and pleasing to God and me. And it is as you have said. But there is one thing I must add which would not have been proper for you to think, let alone say, namely, the ears before and to which God's voice once spoke in vain in its supreme love.

'Behold, dear Enoch, I am entitled, as is each one of you, to confess my own mistakes openly and, thus, to humble myself before God and the earth. But woe betide him who should disparage the name of his brother and take away the honor God Himself has given him. Such honor is everyone's possession received from God and no one has the right to attack such a hallowed possession of another with his tongue or hand. However, everyone has the right to humble himself before God and the earth, that is, before his adult brothers, but not before the minors that they may not become proud or take offence in any way.

'Let this be a good lesson to all of you and a great comfort to me enabling me to hear God's words from the blessed mouth of Enoch. For it is quite a different thing if one brother speaks to the other about the earth, the moon, the sun and all the stars -- for these are things of the world, all created for my sake and yours - and a different thing again if a brother speaks to the other words out of God about the things which are God's. These things can and shall no one hear who has not first humbled himself before the judging holiness of God.

'If someone thought that the brother spoke out of himself and not out of God when his tongue had been blessed, that one would pass judgment on himself in his self-conceit imagining that he, too, was good enough and God could, and would, speak through anyone's mouth, and it did not have to be just that of Enoch. But I, the physical father of all of you and procreator of your soul out of God, tell you that this is not so. Look at the flowers in the field. Has not each one a different shape, color, fragrance and use, and the noblest of all is only the rose with its glorious fragrance and its dew strengthening every weak eye if the heart was first refreshed through the fragrance? And when you gaze at the countless stars in the firmament you will find, if you observe them closely, that not two of them have the same light. But among all the stars that do not leave their community there is only one that you call the star of Abel, and which radiates like a bright dewdrop in the morning sun. It does not make any difference to God whether He looks after a mote or a sun or whether he provides for a gnat or a mammoth, for when someone possesses much, he can give great and little things with the same love. To the one who needs much he gives much and a small gift to the one who needs only little. He can distribute a variety of gifts, to one this and to the other that and, thus, something different to everyone. Enoch was given love, a blessed tongue, and a well-enlightened heart. Therefore, he shall also give what he has received. And because the love of God became his share, he shall pass on this love like the rose that gives what it has received, and no one doubts that it received it from God

since it is a good gift and of benefit to our senses. Who will ever doubt where Enoch's gift is from when his tongue trembles with the love of God?

'So, speak, Enoch, and strengthen us, your fathers, with the superabundance of your grace out of God! Amen.'

About the Coming of the Lord

Ref: "The Household of God by Jakob Lorber Chapter 46

Jesus is speaking: "And behold, when Father Adam had finished speaking, Enoch rose respectfully in order to speak to the fathers; but before he began, he silently turned his loving heart to Me imploring Me for the grace to now be enabled to speak of My love and the holiness of My name, unutterable to any tongue because of its holiness.

I gave him what he had asked for and made the sound of his voice melodious like refined ore. His speech was full of dignity and sweetness, and no human tongue, before and after him, has spoken like this until Moses and all the prophets who, too, spoke with the tongue of Enoch and out of the same spirit. And his speech was as follows:

'Oh fathers! The immense grace of God, our most holy Father, has come among us like a cooling breeze floating from the distant morning. Yes, the holy, eternal Father is among us! You, Father Adam, may say: 'Enoch, listen, that cannot be, for the Lord has told me: You will and shall not see Me anymore, for I shall appoint an angel to lead, guide and test you until the time of My pleasure!' However, father Adam, if a man had a weak wife who on a bright morning saddened her husband, who loved her deeply, when she refused to follow him into the room to receive the blessing of God where-upon the sun would rise and bless the earth out of God with the bright rays of God's merciful love, then the husband, seeing this disobedience in her love, will say: 'Wife, what use are you to me when you reject the grace and power of God in me and oppose the blessing of God? Look, in order to appease the holiness of God in my vigor, I will leave you and no blessing shall touch you before the sun has shone upon you seven thousand times and has always found you washing yourself in your tears of remorse. Then I will send you in my place someone to bless you in my name. And when you have changed, I shall look at you from a distance to see whether you have become worthy of my touching you with my blessing vigor. You will be surrounded by my memory and only thorns and thistles will be growing in your field, but the seed from which may come a sprout out of God shall be absent from your body for the time being.'

'Having said this, the husband would leave his wife. She, realizing the holy seriousness of the matter would throw herself to the ground and begin to weep and lament about herself and her unforgivable disobedience to her husband's holy vigor out of God and roll in the dust of the earth in her sorrow. Seeing the earnestness of his wife's remorse the husband would say to himself: 'She mightily regrets her sin and is at her wit's end about my harshness, which is a protection of the holy vigor out of God within me, and her lamentations silence the voice of my emissary. Therefore, I will break the word of harshness in my heart and will allow myself to be led only by my exceedingly forbearing love and go to her before the time, comfort and touch her, dry her tears and accept her once more as my wife.'

'However, the wife, after having cried her eyes out, only gradually recognizes the great mercy of her husband, rises from the ground and, happy and surprised, sees the face of her husband who admonishes her, saying: 'Wife, you are surprised that I have broken my word, but look, this is due to my love, and my harshness had compassion on you as you had appeased it so mightily with your remorse. And so, I have returned to you before the threatened time to admit you once more into my heart.'

'Oh look, fathers, as this husband because of his great love broke his word and forgot his harshness in view of his wife's great remorse, also God, our most holy Father, has in His exceedingly great love often broken His Word and did not stick to His just severity. For the penitent His anger is like that of a dove, but His love is like a strong spring, which keeps feeding the ocean.

'Oh fathers, and also you, Mother Eve, lift up your eyes and behold the great Holy One among us, yes, behold among us, His children, the most loving Father, who broke His word!

'Oh fathers, my speech is finished and now let Him speak Who gave me these words and before Whom my tongue becomes silent.

'O You holy Father, do speak the great Amen Yourself!'

And behold, it happened like Enoch had said, and visible to all I spoke the great Amen. When they saw Me they all prostrated themselves before Me and in the dust worshipped Me, their holy Father, with great contrition of their hearts. No one dared lift up his eyes, but I called them all by their names and made them raise their heads that they might recognize their holy Father. Then they looked up and Adam recognized Me and tried to speak, but his tongue did not obey his overflowing love. I pitied these weak children and so stayed in their midst for a while.

However, no one dared utter even a single word; they were all unable to speak out of great fear and love. And I pitied them for their weakness and faint-heartedness and breathed courage and strength into them so that they would be able to bear the thunderous sound of My voice and understand the exalted meaning of the words from the mouth of eternal Love which were flowing like a great flood from the eternal source, the First Cause of all existence.

When thus all their senses were strengthened and thereby also their soul and spirit, Adam rose to his feet, supported by his children, and spoke full of love and humble trust: "O You holy Father Who are the very eternal Love; in Your great mercy You have looked graciously and lovingly upon all of us who are so sinful. Therefore, I, a poor servant of sin in my endless nothingness before You, dare with a trembling heart to pray and ask: O most holy Father! Where is there in us still a fiber of life worth in the least of saying to itself joyfully: Because it was still unspoiled You came to us?

'However, every one of our hairs has become bad and every fiber of our life useless. Would You, therefore, graciously reveal to us what has caused Your love to so mercifully descend into this lowliness?

'O most holy Father do not treat our request unfavorably. But as always Your most holy will be done!'

And lo, when Adam had spoken thus from the depth of his heart, they all once more knelt before Me and worshipped Me in their love inexpressible by

human standards. Then I stepped up to them and, when they had sufficiently expressed their love, bade them rise and open their eyes and ears to clearly perceive My Word.

Only when this had been done did, I direct the following words to their hearts, which translated as follows:

'Children, listen! Thus speaks He Who has given you an immortal soul and a living spirit out of Himself that you may recognize My great love for you and that I will one day give you eternal life out of your love for Me and My love for you, once the great debt of My Love will have atoned for this same debt to the Holiness at a time which I am going to prepare out of Me. As I have made all of you out of My mercy, I shall prepare this time out of My love.

'As I am now a spirit of grace among you, I shall then be a man full of supreme love among men. But though you now recognize that I, your Father, have come to you as a high, eternal Spirit full of power and might and you are well aware that it is I Who is speaking to you, your later children will not immediately recognize Me in a weak, poor brother among them. They will persecute Me, cruelly maltreat Me and do to Me what Cain did to Abel. However, it will be hard to slay the Lord of life and My apparent death will bring about eternal life for all who will believe that it is I Who came as a Savior among them, endowed with all the might of love to atone for the debt your disobedience has brought upon all of you, over all the earth and all the stars - for there are also children who initially have gone forth from you, Adam. But for the unbelievers and stubborn ones in their selfish malice this will lead to eternal judgment and also eternal death.

'And thus, I will come seven times, but the seventh time I will come in the fire of My holiness. Then woe betides those who are found unrighteous; they shall be no more, except in the eternal fire of My wrath!

'Behold, I have once been here in the beginning of the world to create all things for your sake and you for Mine. Soon I shall return in great floods of water in order to wash the pestilence off the earth. For the depths of the earth have become an abomination to Me, full of dirty mud and pestilence, which has grown out of your disobedience. There I shall come for your sake so that the whole world may not perish, and one lineage remains the last descendant of which I Myself shall be.

'And I shall come to you a third time manifold (Abraham, Moses and the prophets. The Ed.), untold times as now - sometimes visibly and sometimes invisibly in the word of the Spirit - to prepare My way. And I shall come a fourth time bodily, in great distress, in the great Time of times. Soon after that I shall come for the fifth time in the spirit of love and sanctification. And I shall come for the sixth time to the inner self of anyone who will truly long for Me in his heart and shall be a guide to him who full of love and faith will let himself be drawn by Me to eternal life. At that time, I shall be more remote from the world; but whoever will be accepted shall live and My Kingdom will be with him forever.

'Finally, I shall come again, as already mentioned. But this last coming will be to all a permanent return - one way or another.

'Listen and comprehend it well: Abide in love, for this will be your Redeemer! Love Me above all - this will be your life everlasting. But also love one another so that you may be released from judgment. My grace and My primary

love be with you until the end of all times! Amen.' - And their eyes were again closed."

About the Greatness and Depth of the Word of God

Ref: "The Household of God by Jakob Lorber Chapter 47

Jesus is speaking: "When they had completely returned to their normal state, Adam rose and spoke to the small gathering: "Well, children, have you seen with your own eyes and heard with your own ears? Yes, you have beheld the Lord of Eternity, the God of Infinity, our most loving, holy Father, and you have seen and heard His inexpressibly sweet voice! Indeed, He is as He was when I saw Him before He had been seen by a mortal eye, which is now enveloped in death's threefold night. And His voice is the same unchanged voice full of might and power obeying the endlessly sweet sound of which suns and worlds came out of their nothingness and in boundless reverence became what they are now. Through the sound of this voice even the mightiest and greatest spirit became what he now is: a helpless worm in the dust of the earth here before your eyes. For I was set in his place as a miserable, bad and ungrateful creature full of disobedience out of myself.

Oh children, look how exceedingly good our God, yes, our most loving and holy Father is! This great spirit whose place now I, a poor and very weak man from the dust, am taking, was called to be a brother to the eternal Love of the Father's holiness. But disobedience because of his self-love forced this great, mighty spirit here into this indescribable lowliness. Since it is no longer possible for us in our nothingness ever to be worthy of the Deity and come closer to Him even by a mote, He intends, as you now have all heard, Himself to enter our nothingness in order to draw us closer to Him, and thereby give to this our nothingness more than the greatest spirit could ever comprehend; that is - if I have grasped it correctly - He wants to be to us worms of the dust not only a God, a holy Father, which He has been from eternity, but He wants to become a strong brother to us thereby to unite us unworthy ones with Himself for eternal life.

Oh children, who can ever grasp such endless love? Where is the heart which in its greatest rapture could bear even an infinitesimal part of such love capable of drawing down to us the great God, the most holy Father, to have mercy upon our nothingness and out of such love to clothe Himself in our nothingness in order to become everything, yes, everything to us?

Oh children, my emotion is numbing my tongue, and therefore you, Enoch, you blessed speaker of God, shall continue and let us hear the wondrous power of your tongue! But listen; do begin to speak of the great love of the most holy Father where I have ended to speak of it. Amen.'

And when Enoch had heard this wish, he pulled himself together, rose from the ground, thanked Me in the great humility of his heart, bowed to all, then stepped up to Adam, bowed to him and said:

'Oh, father of my fathers! Behold, my fathers and your children are present here; how could I dare to speak before these whom God called into being out of you before me and thus has set them to be my fathers? Therefore, I would like them to give also their permission so that I may with complete peace of mind utter

the word of God's immense grace before all the patriarchs and the exalted mother Eve.'

When the patriarchs heard these meek words of modesty, they all rose, bowed to Adam, praised Me aloud and thanked Me for giving Enoch such a modest and meek heart. And their faces were beaming with great joy at the glorious Enoch. Adam himself praised his insight and humility and now asked him with the happy consent of all to cheerfully begin to speak of the great love of God, the eternal, holy Father.

Only after hearing this, and after an inner, silent prayer for My grace and mercy, did he begin to speak, saying:

'Oh, most beloved fathers! What can the feeble tongue of weak, limited and insignificant man bring forth and stammer at this so holy place where a little while before the eternal Love and Wisdom of the most holy Father has spoken words full of eternal meaning to our hearts.

'Oh fathers, what is our greatest word compared to His smallest which caused the eternal might of such holy Love to bring forth out of Himself countless great and small things in order to fill with them the infinite, eternal expanse of His will, whereas our greatest speeches are unable to blow even the tiniest mote from its destined order.

'Oh fathers, if we ponder on this must we not feel as if we were standing on embers and I, the speaker, on the burning rays of the midday sun when its rays above our heads make the hard ore melt?

'Bear in mind that it was God Who was standing there as a mighty, eternal Spirit speaking to us out of Himself great words. And we do not understand them and shall not ever understand them completely; for how could that, which is nothing in itself, comprehend the eternal, infinite Being of God and grasp the eternal essence of a word from the mouth of God since all of us know how many words eternal Love and Wisdom needed in order to call forth us and the entire universe so perfect, yet incomprehensible for us.

'Oh fathers, look, if one considers this and wishes to speak of the so endlessly great glory of God, where is one to begin and where to end?

'Should we turn to the mote which is so insignificantly floating in the air of our little hut, glistening in the rays of the sun, not knowing with what to begin first? Or who might know what to end with so as to give appropriate praise to the Lord, the most holy Father, the infinite, eternal God?

'O fathers, since we already here in our hut realize the impossibility of greeting the first mote in a way pleasing to God and to thank Him for the recognition of the last one, - where would we begin when on leaving our hut, we see the endless multiplicity of dust on the vast earth?

'Yet we must admit that all this which appears so endless to us comes to almost nothing before God, although the full revelation of but one such mote would take a whole eternity if we were to recognize it in the boundless perfection of God.

'Oh fathers, look, if such a tiny mote as we now recognize is already so immense to us, what must then the magnitude of the endless multiplicity from the first to the last be? - Where is there a being, except God, that could comprehend the eternal wisdom of the most holy Father herein?

'And since this is so, what can we say about the earth as such, all the countless stars and all that is on the earth and on the great stars? And what could we say about us, now and about our original being? Yet all this is only a simple word from the mouth of God.

'Oh fathers, do think about it: How many words has before our eyes, ears and hearts the eternal, infinite, most holy Father now spoken; the same through who's almighty 'Let there be!' infinity was filled with endless things.

'Oh listen, eternity will not ever comprehend it and infinity is too small to absorb what we have just now, enraptured, heard from the most holy mouth. We men cannot possibly imagine it; but when all this will happen in accordance with the most holy and supreme decree, then heaven and earth themselves must become endless. The dust will become earth and infinity itself will have to be endlessly extended before we shall be able to understand only a mote of what our most holy Father has in mind by wanting to become a holy brother to us.

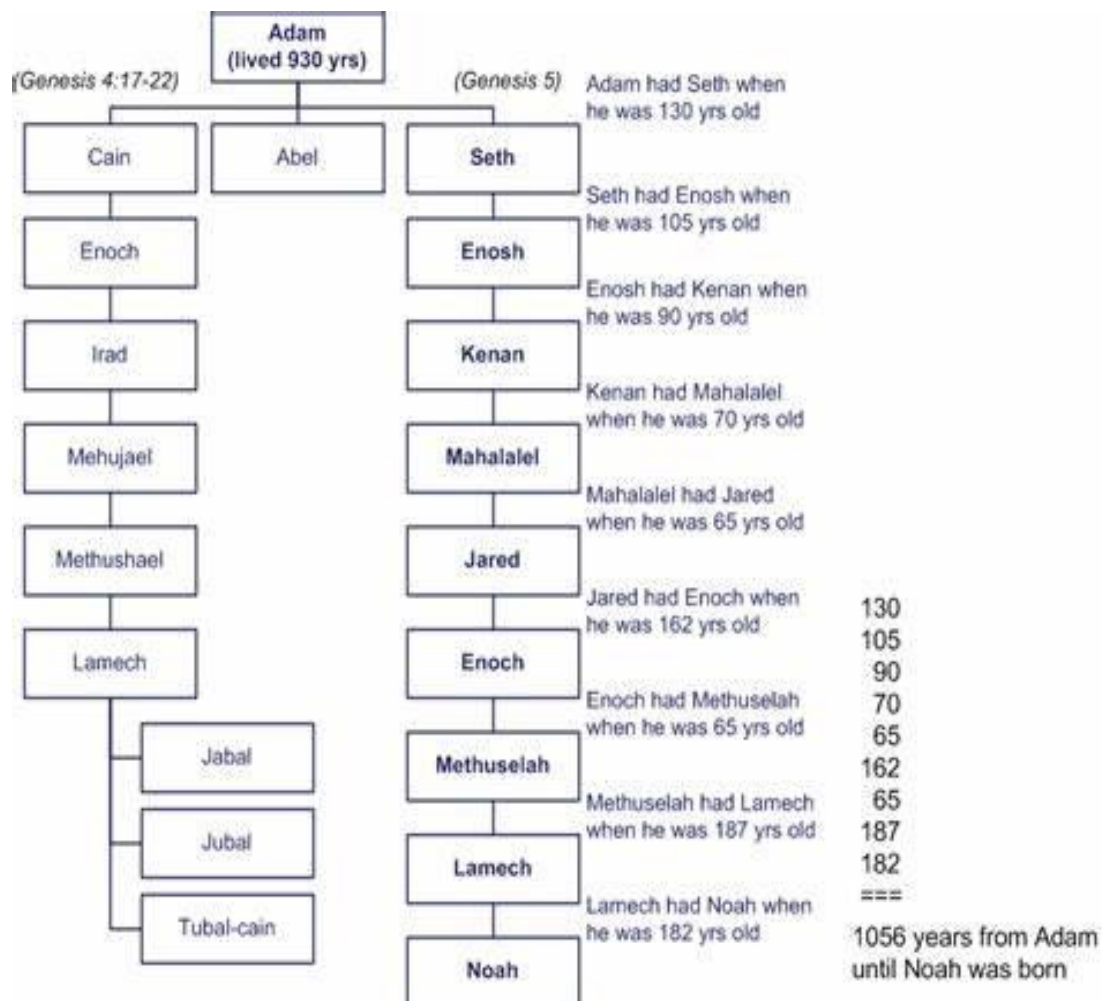
Oh fathers, behold the greatness and profundity in God, - and I, a poor worm in the dust, should dare after such a speech to interpret it to you since, for our great comfort, this was given for a new heaven and not for this limited earth. We can do nothing but love Him Who always is and will be holy, holy, holy. Let all that we can understand consist in our ever-increasing love for our most holy Father and let our greatest wisdom be that we love Him above all who is the very Love eternal and throughout and we and everything through Him - eternal! Amen, amen, amen."

Adam's Descendants

BD No. 8237 of 08/11/1962 taken from book 87
(Continuation of no. 8236)

God the Father is speaking: "You are most certainly working according to My will when you distribute the spiritual knowledge which is conveyed to you from above; For it is important to provide clarification to many more people who genuinely want to receive it. Time and again I tell you that people have considerably diverted from the truth but that they hold on to their wrong thinking because even a correct clarification does not seem acceptable to them. ***However, it is the time of the end, and the length of time from the start of a period of Salvation until now is too long that evidence could be produced regarding the events which took place when the first human beings took possession of the earth.*** Yet even the first people themselves lacked a correct realization, since they were burdened by the original sin, from which they could have liberated themselves had they passed their test of will. They were spiritually still unenlightened and unaware of the correlations between the spiritual and the earthly kingdom, since due to Lucifer's temptation they changed their love when the pure spark of love from Me became clouded due to their fall into sin, otherwise it would have been impossible for people to descend ever further until the human race, Adam's descendants, lost itself in unbelief, for the sin to get out of hand. They didn't recognize the correlations and lived a purely earthly life. And although time and again beings of light embodied themselves on earth, too, in order to give people instructions and explain the purpose of existence to them their thinking nevertheless remained limited, and thus limited thinking was then also

reproduced, the condition for profound wisdoms didn't exist, which includes My reign and activity throughout the whole of Creation. But neither did people's limited thinking allow for such clarifications relating to the broad scope of Creation, which can be noted on earth alone and which My might and wisdom, My love for all created beings always and forever animated with the apostatized spirits, which were to accomplish their return to Me on this said work of creation called Earth. And according to their narrow field of vision they also only described the narrow region which they themselves occupied. And an account was given of the earthly process of development since Adam and Eve, the ancestral parents which, however, does not mean that the same happened in other places on earth, since these were still so far apart for the first human beings and partly separated by large areas of water, that every territory was a world in itself where the once fallen spirits were able to mature and embody themselves in a human being."

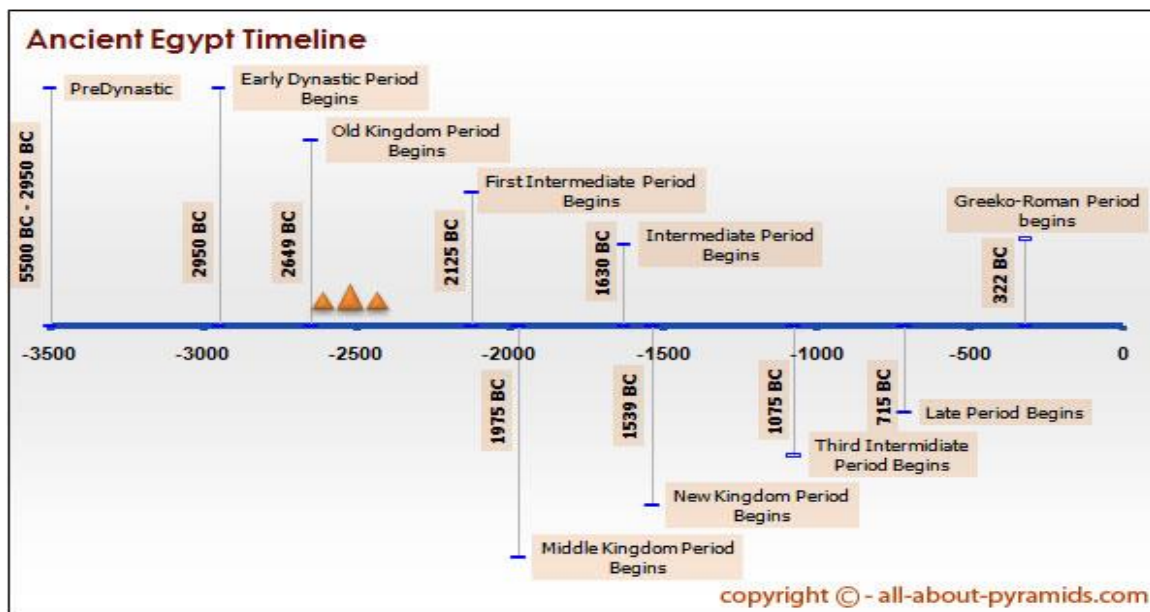
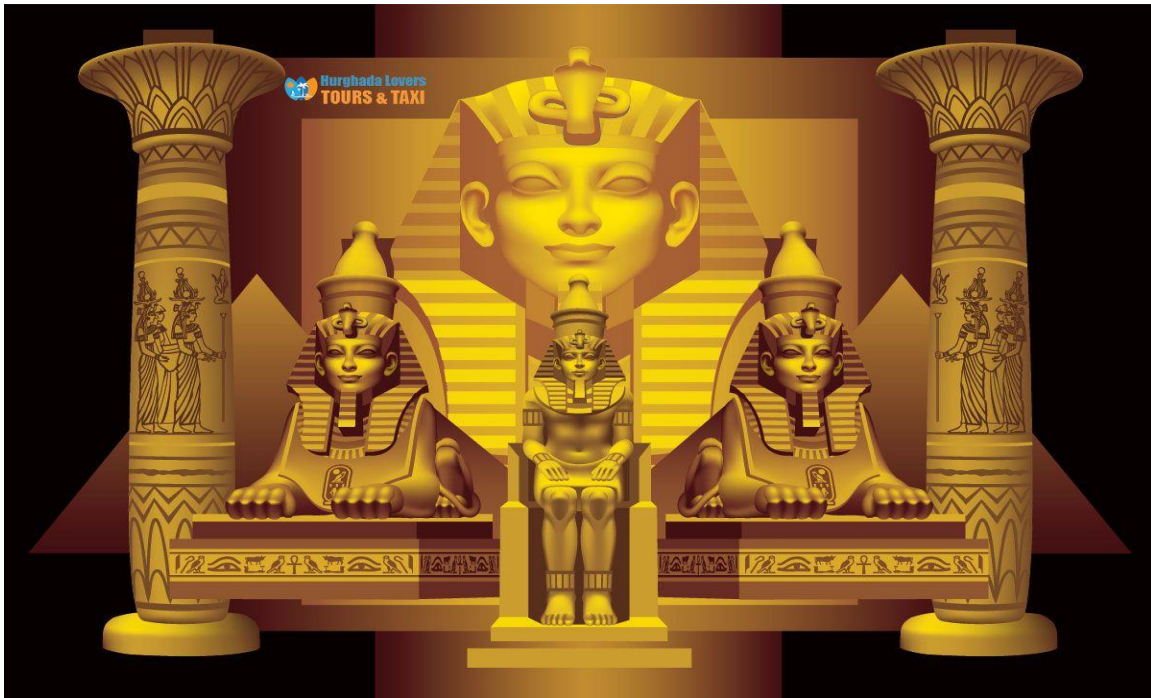


Chapter 7: The Mysteries of the Great Egyptian Dynasty



The Purpose of the Lords Incarnation – Moors as example of the true Primordial Humanity, Power of the Moors to Control Elements of Water, The People of Abyssinia and Nubia, The Lord Sends a messenger to meet the Nubian, The Lord speaks with the leader of the Nubian, The Leader describes his journey to Memphis, The curse of the over-developed culture, The blessings which comes from the primitive culture, The Nubian camp in Egypt, The Nubian request confirmation of the presence of the Lord, Oubratouvishar describes his Nubian homeland, Oubratouvishar treasure, The Black people who followed on, The nature of Isis and Osiris, The Constellation on the seventh pearl – the collapse of the Egyptian culture. . .

Egyptian Dynasty



The Mysteries of the Great Egyptian Dynesty

In Summary: The Lord will now reveal the mysteries about the ancient land of Egypt, the Moors – descendants of Cain, and how they relate to its rise and downfall. Understanding these events will help us recognize similar events that are taking place in today's world.

The People of Abyssinia and Nubia

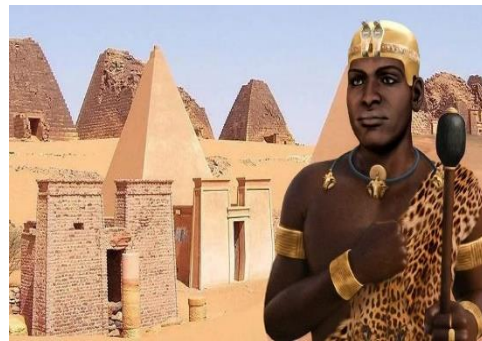
Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol.4: Ch 179 by Jakob Lorber

Jesus is speaking: "Most of you are familiar, at least in legend, with the famous ancient land of the Egyptians.

Behind the great waterfalls on the Nile there is a very large, fertile mountain land called Habi ie sin (the Son of Habi). This Habi is a descendant of Cain and not of Noah; these highlands, like many other countries on the earth, were spared the ravages of the Great Flood during the time of Noah.



The son of this Habi was, like Nimrod, a mighty hunter. He invented the club and the bow, and all animals, no matter how aggressive, fierce, and wild they might be, gave him a wide berth as he was a giant. His voice caused rocks to tremble, and he smashed them to pieces with his mighty club, while, with his bow, he shot ten-pound arrows over a thousand paces. Whatever he aimed at, he hit with confidence and made it his prey.



At the same time, as he had mastered all the animals, all his weaker brothers and sisters obeyed him. He was very serious, never cruel towards people, not even hard, but his orders had to be obeyed.

He believed in a far-off, all-powerful God, who originally created everything. But this God has countless exceedingly powerful servants and henchmen, both visible and invisible. Some of them ruled over the sun, the moon and all the stars, some ruled over the earth, some over water, some over fire and so forth, some over the grass, trees and thickets, some over the waters on and in the earth, some over metals, some over the birds in the air, some over all the animals in the water and some over all the animals which walk or creep on earth.

These invisible servants and often the visible henchmen had to be held in high esteem by mortal people, who were obliged strictly to obey and comply with the laws which were from time to time handed down to them. They always punished disobedience most severely by means of all kinds of cataclysms with which they plagued the dissidents who were lacking in respect for them or did not follow their laws or even those who were just unfriendly to each other.

In a word, this son of Habi was the first ruler of this ancient little nation and at the same time the first priest, whose contribution was a very deficient concept of God and the other spiritual beings. In his lineage he was the sixth descendent of Cain and the seventh of Adam.

He taught the people to get to know how to handle the tame animals and how to bring them into their households and was therefore the founder of a colony

of shepherds. He also taught them how to use some fruit as food, and how to grow, maintain and improve them in their gardens, as well as instructing them how build huts using rocks, palms, and clay to create a safe home.

He himself cleansed the whole of that large country of ravenous, wild beasts. The equally powerful giants who were his sons reaped the benefit which arose from the tireless efforts of their powerful father. During the course of a few hundred years this black-skinned little nation became a large and mighty people with good customs and quite effective government, much cleverer and better than the Egyptian one under its first ruling shepherds (the pharaohs).

However, this rather happy nation blockaded all possible entrances, so that even the foreign wild animals found it almost impossible to gain access or cause harm to the rich herds of this large country, which had expanded in all directions, and which was five times the size of the Promised Land. For the same reason, until now no foreign invader has been able to reach its green pastures, even though the country has expanded far beyond its old borders. The borders of the newly occupied territories were also sealed off by this nation as they were annexed, so that it was not easy for any enemy to invade them.

They have one single access road to Egypt and that is located at the foot of the Kamarhati Mountains where the lower slopes are very rugged. It is an extremely narrow pass which ends, after a four hour walk mainly underground through deceptive twists and turns, in the uppermost region of Egypt and finally passes through a very narrow cave, - an exit which was only found during the times of Moses, by citizens who were fugitives accused of high treason and were fleeing their fearful punishments. When they were pursued, they fled into a hole in the rocks to hide. After they had progressed about five hundred paces inside the cave, armed only with bows and arrows, they discovered daylight at the opposite end and ran towards it. They soon came out and were very happy to have escaped their pursuers. Having reached an open country, the like of which they had never seen before, they closed off the cave exit with rocks, so that it would not be possible for their pursuers ever to enter this spacious, beautiful, free land.

The number of fugitives was seventy heads in total, thirty-six men and thirty-four women. One of the extra men did not have a wife so they chose him to be the leader because he was the most experienced. The last one was still too young to have a wife and was therefore chosen to be the leader's servant.

The fugitives lived on this land for about a year and a half. However, they were not able to succeed in cleaning up the area, even though they spent most of their time hunting fierce wild animals. After the end of that time, they left and followed the Nile as it flowed northwards and after a few weeks they reached the Cataracts which, seen from the Egyptian side, are regarded as the second series. There they met great difficulties and major obstacles to progress.

They would certainly have moved more quickly on the right bank of the Nile, but they were on the left shore, where there are many clefts in the rocks as well as no shortage of all kinds of animals which are not very friendly to people. As the barriers to their forward progress were unending, they had made the decision to return to their former settlement when a large herd of cattle and sheep came up behind them also heading north, which led them to believe that their pursuers had tracked them down. They therefore pressed on as quickly as possible

and after a tiresome day's travel they finally reached a beautiful expanse of exceedingly fertile land.

There was an abundance of dates and figs, as well as large flocks of sheep and herds of cattle which moved around as they grazed completely without supervision. However, those herds which had forced our community of black people to move on, were lost in the rapids of the cataracts and did not follow them any longer. This greatly pleased our travelers as they then believed that their supposed pursuers were no longer following them.

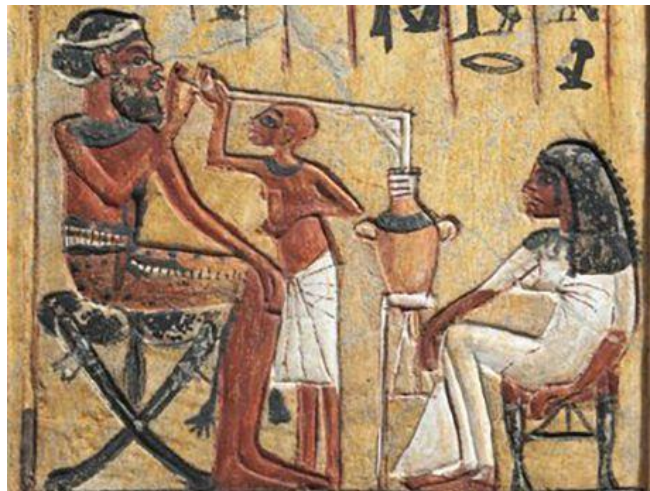
In this new land the community sought out the best place to live, fortified it and settled down. It was a beautiful, smooth hill on the banks of the Nile plentifully supplied with dates, figs, and beautiful palms and apart from a few monkeys there was no trace of any aggressive wild animals.

In this place these people multiplied and within a few hundred years had grown into a sizeable nation, which took over all the free herds, built huts and even villages and lived quite well. They all, however, retained the beliefs and all the customs and uses which the son of Habi had introduced.

This large, at that time very beautiful and fertile land was called by the black inhabitants 'Noua Bia' (Nubia) which translated means 'New Dwelling'.

In time this nation also became acquainted with the Egyptians, a nation which at a later date made great efforts to subjugate this first black community, an enterprise in which they did not however wholly succeed. They were also the first completely black people which the Egyptians came to see.

In the beginning the Egyptians regarded these people as large apes and it was only after they discovered that they spoke a language akin to their own, that they began to regard them as real people and bought cattle and sheep from them. In return the black community learned all kind of arts and sciences from the Egyptians which they were able to turn to good use, especially those in the field of metal working of which they had until then no previous knowledge.



In that community the old religion and all the old customs and habits which they took over from the son of Habi, have survived to this day.

This year a seer emerged among these people and revealed to his brothers and sisters an extraordinary vision, which he has experienced seven times in succession. He described to them the path he would have to follow on this earth in order to reach the place where the One could be found who would teach the people about truth and the great unknown God.

Look, this seer from Nubia will be here in the Caesarea Philippi area before midday with quite a large number of companions. We shall therefore send a messenger to him to request that he should bring them here! They came with

many camels and brought many valuable treasures with them. They will pay for anything they consume here in gold and precious stones.

You, Marcus, please see to it that these Nubians are well looked after! When you asked Me yesterday evening to remain here for another day, I agreed as otherwise I and My disciples would already have departed this morning before sunrise to meet their caravan as they search for Me. However, I stayed, and our presence today will provide much work for your household: nevertheless, you will be well rewarded."

The Lord Sends a Messenger to meet the Nubian Caravan.

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol.4: Ch 180 by Jakob Lorber

Marcus asks Me with a very happy look on his face: "My Omniscient Lord! How many of them are there?"

I say: "The head count is exactly seventy, of which thirty-four are women and thirty-six men just like their fugitive ancestors. The one without a wife is the seer, and the second unmarried one is his servant!

Look this is how these black people became fugitives nearly a thousand years ago, basically because of a change in the laws which in Moses' time were not quite the same as before the Great Flood! The old leader who became a fugitive, wished to revive the old customs and habits but he only succeeded in making many enemies, who began to persecute him and his followers in a despicable way, so that finally he had no option but to seek refuge from the superior, blind, fanatical strength of his many enemies.

The escape was therefore a prophetic portent of the coming of a higher light and in Moses' time indicated to the worthier descendants of Cain as well, that the light of redemption would also shine forth for them. These black people cannot fully aspire to reach Jacob's ancient well like the children of Abraham, but nevertheless they will still be able to imbibe the splendid waters, if they thirst for them.

Now let us choose a messenger who has mastered the language of upper Egypt! In Julius' camp there is a captain of the guard; call him to Me, so that I can instruct him as to how he can recognize the leader immediately and what he should say to him!"

Julius himself got up immediately and hurried to the camp, called the guard, and brought him to Me.

When this typical Roman reached Me, he said: "Son of the highest and most noble Zeus! What instructions do You have for me? I am most unworthy to receive any orders from You - the Son of the highest God only gives orders to subordinate gods, then to the princes on this earth, then to the most senior generals, then to their colonels and captains, and only then to their slaves, which we have the honor to be - however You, most High Lord, wish to make an exception here and I therefore ask You to give me Your holy instructions!"

I say: "Very good, very good, My dear friend! You are still a typical Roman, but nevertheless faithful and honest in your beliefs and true to your station in life. You have served for some time in Egypt and have learned to understand and speak the old Egyptian language, and now you are being asked to carry a message

for Me to the area near Caesarea Philippi. You are a good rider and on horseback you will soon find the right place.

Near the town which was burned down you will meet a caravan of seventy black people while at the front, riding on two camels in white livery, you will find the leader on the right and his servant on the left. The leader will greet you when you are still some distance away. He is dressed completely in white garments, but you will see that his face is coal black as well as his hands and feet – however his heart looks much brighter than the skin on his body. Say to him: ‘You have reached your goal; follow me! Within a few moments you will be standing in the presence of Him, for whom you have searched after His appearance to you seven times in a vision!’



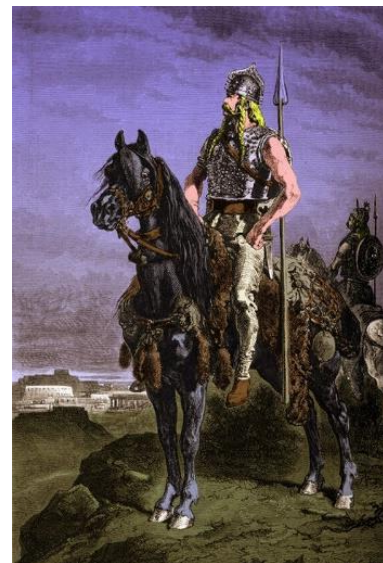
Just say this to him in the ancient Egyptian tongue which you speak rather well! Go now, saddle your horse and ride quickly to the point where the main roads cross and there you will meet him!”

When the guard captain had heard Me out, he bowed deeply and said: “A Roman veteran never bows except to the gods; but You alone deserve our admiration and worship! I will proceed to carry out Your instructions!”

The already grey-haired warrior hurries away, quickly mounts his Arab horse in full armor and gallops like an arrow to the chosen spot. A dust cloud in the distance was a sure sign that the large caravan was approaching the meeting place. Our messenger was on the spot in a few minutes, but he still had to wait for a quarter of an hour for all the people in the large caravan to arrive. We could see them if we stepped round the corner of the house as the distance to the junction was scarcely half an hour’s walk away.

When the leader reached our guard captain armed to the teeth, the latter asked, as was the Roman custom of war, where he was heading and what had happened in his native land to make him undertake the journey.

The leader came to a halt, looked the Roman squarely in the eye and said in a very serious voice: “Roman! Who told you to expect me here? Today we have already come from the great sea and have travelled over steppes and through forests. From Alexandria ships carried us over the sea and only the birds could see us from Egypt to here! You are the first person we encountered during the whole trip; how could you know that we would arrive? Who informed you of our arrival? Are you clairvoyant? But you are carrying arms which have often been covered



in human blood and cannot therefore be clairvoyant. You should however know that there is primordial, supreme Godhead mightier than all your gods and above all men, no matter what the color of their skin!

Seven times I had the same vision and in it I always saw this area illuminated in an indescribable way. A small group of people whose skin was white or brown in color, was already standing in this intense light and they themselves were shining like the sun. However, in their midst there was one individual who shone more brightly than a hundred thousand suns! All the light originated from Him and, yes, it gave me the feeling that the whole of infinity was filled beyond measure with His incomparable light! However, despite His incredibly intense light, it nevertheless did not cause any pain in the way that the much weaker light from the sun inflicts pain on us.

At the end of the vision which was always the same I invariably heard the clearly spoken words: 'Go there, you black person, and your night will be illuminated!' I told all my black brothers and sisters and we decided to undertake this trip from Nubia which has already taken three months.

I knew quite well where we had to go as my spirit, which had already accompanied me for seven years, had informed me that the place which I saw in my vision was to be found in Asia along the coast of the great sea. I immediately recognized it from the sea, which I had pictured seven times in my vision. When we were at the right place, we disembarked. Immediately we saw a road which took us to this place - and here you are to meet us! Please tell me, who told you about us? Speak up! I anticipate something wonderful!"

The Roman said: "You have reached the end of your difficult journey! Within a few moments you will be standing in the presence of Him, the One you have searched for after seeing Him in your visions seven times!"

The leader immediately instructed all of them to follow the Roman as he was clearly a messenger sent by Him, whom they were searching for.

The Roman immediately rode in front and the whole caravan followed him."

The Lord Speaks with the Leader of the Nubians.

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol.4: Ch 181 by Jakob Lorber

The ride went smoothly, and our captain of the guard brought the whole caravan to us, as we sat contentedly at the tables.

When My Jarah saw the pitch-black faces with their prominent blood-red lips and remarkably white eyes, she was frightened and said: "O Lord, will these beings really not harm us? They really look so dreadfully black! I have already seen Moors, but not as strikingly black as these people! Just look at the strong sets of teeth! It is certain, My Lord, that if I were not with You, I would begin to be terribly afraid! To fall in love with a black man like that would really present a challenge to a tender-hearted girl!"

I say: "Very well, My dearest daughter, - but be sensible, My little child! Who should be afraid of a color? You are now perhaps being a little childish, - but



that does not matter! Just pay attention carefully to everything; because there will be some important matters to be discussed!"

Jarah says: "However, I shall most probably not understand a great deal as the old Egyptian tongue is a closed book to me and these black men speak no other language!"

I say: "Everything will be translated - so be calm, be silent and just listen!"

Hearing this, Jarah quietens down and I immediately called the wise man who was their leader to come to Me and asked him what had motivated him and his companions to travel so far. Of course, I already knew the whole story from the beginning, but I was nevertheless obliged to ask to provide him with the opportunity to express himself and reveal his intentions.

In reply to My question, which I put to him in the Hebrew tongue, the leader also spoke in our language and answered: "For me You are the nameless one who is the most exalted person on this earth. Forgive this poor, weak, half-man, if I dare to make the hesitant point that I recognize in you the very same person I saw four months ago in my seven identical visions surrounded by an indescribably bright light. I began to look for that person and have travelled to the ends of this earth. Now, touched to the depths of my heart, I believe I have truly found him! Would you, most noble lord, please tell me, if I am right?"

I say: "It would be of little value to you if I were to say yes or no; you must recognize the truth for yourself! Seek the truth and it will be clear to you! You have come so far but you can also go further; however, you yourself must have serious and steadfast intent! No external guidance is of any value if is not simultaneously received from within your own mind. Look how well you now speak Hebrew! Can you remember ever having learned this language? As your companions now also understand this language quite well, ask them if they have ever learned Hebrew at any time! Go over and convince yourself of this!"

The leader guides his camel to his companions and speaks in Hebrew to them. All of them understand him and even answer him in our language. The leader is now completely astonished and cannot explain to himself how he and all his companions have gained their knowledge of Hebrew - he is of course unaware that this is a feat within My powers.

After this encounter the leader returns to Me, still sitting on his camel, and says: "Most exalted person on earth! I am at a loss as I sit here in my black skin, as this is the first trip I have ever undertaken! I have never become acquainted with the languages and customs of other countries and am totally without experience in all aspects of life. At home in my own country, things are very simple. The land is good and beautiful, but it does not offer us anything new. It is therefore possible that this land here has the ability to imbue a foreigner, as soon as he enters its borders, with the spirit of the local language so that he can immediately speak to the natives as if he himself were one of them. Whether this is possible or not, I cannot say. Please, therefore, give me an explanation! In my own country I was never able to put anything like this to the test as no foreigner ever came to visit us!"

I say: "First dismount from your camels, lead them to the strip of meadow near the sea, so that they can enjoy their necessary respite and be able to take you back to your country more easily - the return journey is certainly no shorter in

distance than the way here was! Then come back again as that will show how much enlightenment you are all able to take!"

The leader bows and says: "Most exalted man among men! You are quite right that we can only dare to place our very unholy feet on this holy earth as, judging from my visions, this land must be immeasurably holy!"

I say: "If it is not too holy for the feet of your camels, it will certainly not be too holy for your human feet!"

The leader says: "Yes, this is truly, truly, truly so! Most exalted of men among men on this earth, You are most kind and exceedingly wise!"

Saying this, he guides his camel back to his companions and informs them of My wishes. Immediately the camels kneel, and the riders descend to the ground. These well-trained animals then stand up again and are led to the strip of grass beside the sea where they start to graze quite contentedly. Ten of the Negroes are instructed to look after the camels while the rest, together with their leader, immediately return to Me.

When they reach Me, I first ask the leader to tell Me his name, and he says: "My name describes what I am and, in our tongue, it is OU BRATOU VISHAR. With us no one has a name unless he describes his occupation. Otherwise, we are all called the same: SLOUVI."

The Leader Describes His Journey to Memphis.

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol.4: Ch 182 by Jakob Lorber

I ask the leader further: "Where did you get this quite valuable education?"

Oubratouvishar says: "About ten years ago I and my personal manservant followed the Nile, accompanied by another twenty of our strongest helpers leading a good herd of cattle as anyone travelling in that region must take along a healthy herd as he might otherwise perish on the way. Figs and dates do not grow everywhere, only on good and fertile ground. However, there is no shortage of grass along the Nile and the traveler therefore always has a nourishing supply of cows' milk, which adds flavor to any meal.

Thus equipped, it was ten years or ten rainy seasons ago, that we tried to make a trip downstream, as I have said. For a few days we made good progress without any problems; but on the third day we began to hear a mighty thundering noise some distance away. We hurried onward and after the length of time it takes to count to a thousand, we came to the first cataract on the Nile. There we had little prospect of further progress. One of our best climbers reached the top of a high rock to investigate the whole area. When he came back down, he described a possible route to me which went some distance away to the left of the Nile but returned to its bank further downstream. I decided to follow this route. There was certainly no lack of rocks and other obstacles on this detour. It was evening, although the heat was still intense, before we finally arrived at an oasis overgrown with an abundance of palms and papyrus trees with a gushing spring at its center which we and our herds appreciated a great deal. Here we rested for a full day.

On the second day we broke camp again at the first crack of dawn and continued our journey. By sunrise we had again reached the Nile and had come to a wide road we had never seen before which we then followed and within half a day, we were close to the city, which our grandparents had told us so much about.

About two-thousand paces outside the city we set up camp. I and my servant did, however, ride into the city to request permission to camp near the city with our essential herds of cattle.

When my servant and I reached the city, we were surrounded by a crowd of very brown-skinned people who asked me who I was and where I came from. Others immediately guessed and said: 'Thot e Noubiez!' (This is a Nubian!), and I replied: 'Yes, I am a Nubian and I want to gain experience and learn a variety of good and beautiful things from you perfect people!'

These inquisitive people then send an old man to me, who questioned me in detail about many things and finally even went with us to our camp. It was only then that he revealed himself completely and told us that he was the high priest of the city, and, at the same time, a proconsul appointed by Rome to rule the city and the wide surrounding area. I immediately gave him a gift of seven of the best cows, two bulls and twenty of our sheep with the finest wool.

This gesture made the old man very well disposed to us and he said to me: 'Our long established, pure wisdom will be very useful to you! But do not take up any of our totally decadent customs as they are worse than appalling! This city was once the pride of the region, a fact which is still very clearly expressed in its name: Memavise (Greek: Memphis) which means 'has the highest name'; now this nameless 'highest' is only a widespread rubbish heap, as you will soon easily convince yourselves!

The people who still live here do not have any belief left in a supreme Godhead on the one hand and on the other, they are immersed in the most profound superstition from which they can never be freed. There are only a few of us who still maintain the long-established, truthful recognition that there is a unique, everlasting, true God. The people, blind and stupid, believe in a few thousand gods. They offer god-like reverence even to animals and their corpses and that we must accept that.

It is most probable that our ancestors planted the seed in that they paid some animals, because of their usefulness, a kind of respect almost as demi-gods, a policy designed to encourage the people to tend these useful farms and domestic animals in the best way. In so doing, the elders of course only intended to illustrate to their as yet very primitive subjects the variety of ways in which divine love and wisdom are disseminated in nature. In time, however, these people appeared to become more honorable the more they regressed into the past and became enveloped in an aura of divinity. Evil and unscrupulous so-called teachers had an easy task to ascribe some divinity to every event in primordial history in order to immerse their blind underlings as deeply as possible in the darkest superstition.

Therefore, take great care, honest Nubians, and only accept what you will hear from me as being a correct version of the truth. Reject everything you see and hear from the common people as it is worse than very unreliable! You will see them making sacrifices and performing all kinds of empty rituals. Yes, it is true that on great festive occasions you will even see me standing at the front holding shining ornate objects. Do not be deceived by that as only my outer skin is involved with all that. My inner being is and always will be devoted to the one,

everlasting, uniquely true God, whose love is my life and whose light is my true knowledge and cognition.

You and your servant shall come on foot with me to my residence in the city, where I will give you all the necessary instructions as to how you and your companions should conduct yourselves here. I will also show you the best place to camp with your herds in a spot where you as foreigners can stay for a full year without being disturbed by anyone. However, you and your servant will stay with me so that I can instruct you in many things.'

I said: 'Noble lord! Will you allow us to bring the gift which you graciously accepted from me and deliver it to you in the city?'

This truly good proconsul then said in a loving and friendly manner: 'Not now, but in three days' time, when you have moved to the new location! However, there you will have to wear shoes on your feet, as is our custom, because at night there are many little insects and worms which creep around on the sandy grass-covered earth, enter your skin beneath the toenails and can in time cause great pain. In my house I will provide you with these as best I can as I have a number of servants, attendants and slaves.'

My servant and I went with the commander into the large city. After walking some four thousand paces we came to a large open square which was surrounded by impressive large buildings made from dressed square ashlar. A few of these large buildings had already been considerably damaged, but many were still well maintained. One was designed with many columns and inside the widely spaced long colonnades one could see all kinds of gigantic statues. The columns were also decorated with many devices and inscriptions, which the commander often explained to me afterwards. Next to the hall of columns there was an extremely large palace in which there was much lively activity.

Our host said: 'See, this is my house; just come in and look at all the things it contains.'"

The Curse of the Over-developed Culture of the Egyptians

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol.4: Ch 183 by Jakob Lorber

(Oubratouvishar:) "In front of this palace there stood two enormously large columns or obelisks which were completely freestanding, and which were inscribed on every facet with a multitude of symbols, figures, and writings; in front of the large hall with many columns, two similar obelisks had also been erected.

Hesitantly we entered the proconsul's house and had to walk for some time before we reached the living quarters. However, it was so marvelously beautiful in these rooms that we were left completely speechless.

In my mind I compared my miserable hut at home with this residence and said to myself: 'Why are we black people so amazingly deficient in our knowledge and our cognition? Why are we unable to construct buildings like these? Why are we still not familiar with the production of metals? We still have no cutting tools other than those, which we bartered from the Egyptians in exchange for our raw produce from nature! How primitive our looms are and how badly finished our clothes! In our community there is no spirit, no talent, no zeal; we are scarcely on a slightly higher plane than our apes!'

When I was lost in these thoughts, my heart was breaking, and I started to weep saying loudly: 'Oh why are we black people not just animal beings who can neither think nor experience any feelings?! What marvelous things true human beings, the true gods of the earth, can create, while we negroes who are half man and half animal can do nothing which is comparable! Yet we are still obliged to feel strongly about all these things of beauty which true humans have created!'

The proconsul then said to me: 'Think nothing of all that! We already have grey hair, and these marvelous treasures can no longer fill us with joy as we have already lived too long. You, however, are still children at the peak of your strength, constantly and increasingly possessed by your emerging enthusiasms. Our lives in this world are already at an end, our laurel crowns lie withering in the pit of oblivion, our palaces are collapsing, and our current level of knowledge and cognition is worse than abysmal. Here we have a few smiths and a few weavers left but all our technological requirements must be met either from Rome or from Greece.

It is true that a few thousand years ago, more gods were living in this country than human beings and structures were erected, the ruins of which will always continue to amaze new arrivals on this earth! What we currently produce, however, can only be classed as destruction, both in physical and spiritual terms. You on the other hand are still an unspoiled, primordially developed, young, strong nation, still able to think and have your ambitions. You therefore have the opportunity for your works to outshine those produced by the people of this country and therefore to become greater than they ever were.

However, if you wish as people to live very happily on this earth, retain your old-fashioned simplicity! Firstly, it will cause you little trouble and little work and, secondly, you only have very few needs imposed by nature, and these are easily covered. Your cattle breeding on the rich grasslands brings you few worries or problems, while your agriculture, which you only work on a very limited scale, does not count for anything and even your clothes are simple and easy to produce. You therefore need only very little time to meet your physical needs and you can therefore devote yourselves increasingly, even exclusively to spiritual matters! Look here, this is much more valuable than building these palaces with blood and sweat at the cost of a hundred thousand times a hundred thousand human lives, just so that time, the tooth of destruction, will have thousands of years to gnaw on it!

Finally, what is an artificial heap of rocks piled on top of each other, compared with just one blade of grass, created by the great spirit of God? I say to you: nothing! Every blade of grass, every tree is a building constructed by God, grown out of the dear earth without our input of trouble or work, which then within a short time refreshes our palate with the sweet taste of a fruit. Compare the trouble and the enormous effort which a people invest in a palace! What is it that they gain from it afterwards, when their work has been completed after many bloody years? Nothing except wretched nourishment to increase their vanity, or to awaken jealousy in other foreign nations which will lead in time to war and all kinds of persecution!

My dear black friend, this is truly the wretched fate of my people, who were so stupid as to cover their most beautiful and most fertile grasslands with these

lifeless palaces, which otherwise would have supported many hundred thousand of very fertile trees ready to drop their noble fruit into the laps of the people living in very simple huts! Just consider that on the land on which this city is built, ten thousand people together with their large herds could easily find enough space to live. On the contrary, however, a hundred thousand people currently live within these damaged walls! What a life most of them lead!

Previously, as history teaches us, this land was a breadbasket from which, in a time of need, foreign nations were supplied with bread, while nowadays we often must bring in our grain from far-away countries and peoples! Our herds are in a terrible condition. Thousands of people in a city like this do not work at all for their pittance of gold and silver. They drift around idly day after day, keep company with venal prostitutes and often speak to them in an uncouth animal-like way. This behavior inevitably causes a great deal of illness - something of which you have no experience. During the day, while the sun shines, you will see this large city completed lacking in people and it is only when the cooler night air has arrived that they emerge from their artificial cave dwellings like predatory animals and entertain themselves in any way that pleases them. These are, your simple son of true nature, the blessings which the people have gleaned from their great culture of building with stones!"

The Blessing which comes from the Primitive Culture of Simple Men

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol.4: Ch 184 by Jakob Lorber

(Oubratouvishar:) "Therefore be true to your great and unique natural purity and never have any ambition to acquire such a wretched national culture! Never build any cities! Dwell in your simple huts and you will remain for all times the most fortunate nation on earth. This assessment will be even more valid if you retain your proper recognition of the everlasting true God, honoring and loving Him alone! Even if you cannot see Him, He can see you and He will always strengthen you with the necessary power to combat any elements which are hostile to man. According to the original laws of nature, man is lord of all things which live and breathe on, within and above this earth.

You are still what mankind should be! The fierce lion, as well as the tigers, panthers, hyenas, wolves, bears, snakes, and adders flee from your presence; only herds which have been tamed follow you every step of the way! Equipped with all his unique properties, man still stands on the same elevated primordial level where the Creator placed him at the beginning of all creation. Lie down on the grass where the rattlesnake and the poisonous viper are playing their malicious games and they will abandon the holy place where man, as lord of Nature, is taking his rest! Angry ants, the curse of so many forests and plains, leave the scene as soon as man with his primordial strength settles in an area and builds a house for himself. The lion, the panther and the predatory tiger stay away from herds which are guarded by true men, and the crocodile, the dragon of the Nile, is never to be seen in those regions which are inhabited by mankind. The ibis, the stork and the icz ne ma (ichneumon = has no poison) willingly serve man and cleanse the land of all creeping animal vermin, and their sharp eagle eyes seek out dead corpses which they then devour to ensure that the air is never polluted.

What a splendid existence people enjoy in every country area, compared with the wretched life led by people in the cities, who are consumed by arrogance and foul-smelling love of self! All their primordial life's forces are extinguished, and they have become foreign bodies, foreign beings in the vast kingdom of Nature which surrounds them. They no longer have any contact with God and consequently even with any other of His creatures. They are obliged to build strong castles and fortresses to protect themselves against the hostility of Nature!

Today, if I were to allow one hundred of these people to spend the night on the grassland where I told you to camp, not one of them will have survived with his life when dawn breaks. These are no longer people, but pale shadows of their former selves and their crippled bodies harbor all kinds of evil and immature natural spirits and unnatural vices. Their behavior towards others is no longer governed by their God-given individuality and they have more of an animal-like existence. There is no power left in them anymore and even less available in the outside world. Their nature no longer allows others to believe their beings have attained their highest achievable goals - merely total depravity and complete destruction of the platform on which all creatures are supposed to reach their perfect state. All other creatures are therefore hostile to these people and try to exterminate them in every possible way because they expect nothing more from them.

My noble, black-skinned friend, you and your whole nation should therefore be happy, that you are black and that you still live the innocent huts of the spring of life, particularly because you still as a result represent what a true person should be according to the ordinances of the supreme Spirit of God! Therefore, always remain as you are now, and hand your culture down to your most distant descendants, and you and they will then never have cause to complain about the distress and misery of human life!"

The Nubian Camp in Egypt

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol.4: Ch 185 by Jakob Lorber

(Oubratouvisar:) (the proconsul continued): "Now we shall proceed to the place where I will show you where you can stay! At the same time, I will provide a guard to protect you for as long as you are here. The guard will warn off the criminal element which would not be concerned in the slightest if it were to raze your camp to the ground both physically and morally. I shall not ask if you have understood since I know that you have grasped what I have said. In future you will understand me even better!"

Having said this, the proconsul gave a signal by striking a metal plate which resounded loudly and a large number of armed men with dark brown skin miraculously appeared. He gave his instructions in a foreign tongue which we did not understand. However, when the considerate commander noticed that I was uneasy, he comforted me by explaining in my language what he had said to his armed men. He had informed them that they must offer us their best possible protection against the intrusion of the decadent city dwellers which he no longer regarded as members of the human race.

One of their officers, dressed in nearly the same way as our friend who showed us the way, remarked to his commander that, although the luxuriant

grassland was rich, it was infested by poisonous snakes and vipers and that people and cattle could not live on it.

The commander said: 'That is certainly true of decadent people and their cattle, but these are still genuine primordial people who are undisputed masters of all of Nature's kingdom and its creatures, whatever the species! The numerous poisonous snakes will not only leave the people unharmed, but all of the wildlife will take their young and leave this otherwise most beautiful spot immediately. As their guards you will not have the slightest problem with the vermin, and you can be fully confident of that! - But now, bring me twenty-two pairs of leather banded shoes, which we will give to these unspoilt people, to prevent them unnecessarily damaging their feet on our rough sandy soil!'

The shoes quickly arrived. My servant and I each immediately received a pair of very comfortable shoes and on the proconsul's instructions the other twenty pairs were handed to our companions by four of the guards. After they had also put on the shoes, they were asked by the guards to follow them to the new meadow. In the meantime, I with my servant and the commander all accompanied by the other guards, walked down many streets to reach the spot outside the city where the large stretch of beautiful meadow was situated, plentifully endowed with excellent grass, together with several dates, fig and orange trees and several other varieties of fruit. I also concluded that the meadow would seldom be visited by other people as we could hear the rustle of countless rattlesnakes in the distance.

Soon afterwards my companions also arrived with the large herds and the camels. When they reached the field, they did not wait until the wildlife had fled before bringing in our herds. Without showing the slightest fear they took possession of the meadow and its fruit, immediately walked in all directions across the wide pasture while all the vermin fled to the Nile so that for more than half-an-hour its surface was covered with the creatures. There were even four Nile dragons which took flight before my companions and our herds.

The proconsul also explained this phenomenon to the guards assigned to us and told them that they could fearlessly go with us to every part of the meadow as he was already fully convinced that even on the first night, they would not find a single adder or any other snake on the whole pasture. That was how it was – in the evening, after about an hour, the pasture was free of wildlife of any kind.

On the other side of the Nile, we could see whole flocks of Egyptian sheep fleeing from the escaping poisonous snakes. The shepherds were fleeing with the sheep, screaming horribly but nevertheless reaching the refuge of a Nile bridge. However, the flocks suffered losses in that quite a few lambs were caught and eaten by the larger animals. There were also colonies of rabbits on the other side, and they were also surprised by the unexpected invasion with the result that many of their young too were consumed by the snakes.

The guards took good note of the previously inaccessible delicious dates, figs, and oranges, and also of the very beautiful roscize (the carob tree or 'John's bread'), which was generally used for camel food.

The captain of the guard said to the proconsul: 'Honor to Isis and Osiris! Finally, we can also harvest here again and that has not been the case in living memory!'

However, their commander said: 'The crop for the full year will belong to those who cleansed this field. You can take only what they allow you to take, but not a single leaf from a tree without permission! In addition, refrain from invoking your trifling local gods in front of these very unspoilt people as there is not one man in your group to whom I have not presented the teachings of the only true God! Speak of Him, but certainly avoid Isis and Osiris, and even Apis! All of that is and forever will be as nothing!'

After all this the proconsul said to me: 'As you now can see for yourself, you have been supplied with everything with the help of the Almighty! I will leave you now, but tomorrow at the crack of dawn I will be with you again. I will then give you the appropriate lessons here in the great, open-air temple of the Almighty! What you have learned from me you should also pass on to your companions! Farewell, and may the Almighty protect you!'

With these words he returned to the city. He must have already enjoyed great respect from the Egyptian people as whenever people met him, they bowed down to the ground before him. However, he pretended not to notice any of the deference shown to him, quickly taking his leave as if deep in thought.

When the sun had set, many sightseers came out of the city but none of them dared to come closer than twenty paces from the edge of the infamous snake field. Some called to us to leave as we would otherwise inevitably suffer the greatest harm. However, the guard pushed the curious people back and explained to them that there was no longer any danger as our secret powers had served to cause all the poisonous vermin to swim across the Nile.

Afterwards the inquisitive ones went away, and we tended our herds, which that evening rewarded us with so much of the best and most nutritious milk that we were quite unable to consume it all. We asked the guards if they drank milk too. They joyfully affirmed that they did, and we gave them so much that they too were not able to finish it off. The vast quantity left over was poured into containers which we had brought with us, to make cheese.

For a whole year we have lived here and gleaned much knowledge from the good man, particularly regarding true cognition of the almighty Godhead. We were allowed to depart on the most amicable term after a year and we returned to our own land in high spirits.

Soon afterwards I had my visions and I immediately arranged for a caravan to travel to Memphis in order to inform the proconsul of what I had seen. He, however, already knew of you, most Exalted One, and pointed me in Your direction, described to me the best route to Alexandria and entrusted me with the name of an experienced sea captain, who duly brought us here. He also offered me a translator, but I did not take him with me.

Now you know, most Exalted Man-among-Men, how I came by my small store of wisdom. Please now tell me unequivocally whether or not I am standing at the right spot or whether I have further to go! I am not able to delay my departure as the distance I must travel to my homeland is considerable."

The Nubian Requests Confirmation of the Presence of the Lord

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol.4: Ch 186 by Jakob Lorber

I say: "I already have told you that it is of little or no value to you, if I were to tell you: 'I am the one!' or: 'I am not the one!' That you must establish yourself in some way and you can do that quite easily since you are not lacking in spiritual qualities. Just consider what it is possible for mankind to do and what is impossible! Did nothing strike you as unusual? Did you not notice anything remarkable happening to you or to anyone else?"

The black man replies: "As I mentioned earlier, nothing particularly struck me – with the exception that when we came to this land, we were immediately able to talk in your tongue. To speak frankly, however, when I first arrived here several things appeared to me to have a miraculous quality but the longer, I stay here, the more natural you all seem to be.

The ability to speak the language is therefore the only thing which borders on the miraculous. However, as I said earlier, it can be a natural, even if inexplicable, consequence of the special character of this country. I have experienced something similar during my travels through the length and breadth of Egypt when I met with Romans and Greeks. They spoke in their own tongues, but we understood them quite well and could even converse with them. The conversation did not flow as easily as it has here but that can be attributed to the character of a country, the quality of its air or the aura that surrounds it!

As fundamentally very simple people, we are much more receptive to all kinds of appearances and impressions. We can therefore see the souls of the dead, including those souls who, by their own admission, had never had a bodily presence. These natural souls can also be recognized from their ability suddenly to change their configuration and disperse themselves into all manner of smaller beings, then revert to human form - a phenomenon we have never observed with the souls of our dead brothers and sisters.

We asked the wise proconsul in Memphis if he had seen this with his own eyes, but he said: That is only an ability possessed by very simple, unsophisticated, natural folk, who do not even know the name of any artificial form of life. With him and the Egyptians it was said never to have happened. Now and then isolated cases crop up, but they are impossibly vague and inexplicable, while with us everything is defined, natural and therefore also more easily explained.

From that it can also readily be deduced how we can so quickly understand and speak a completely foreign tongue. If You, most exalted of men, just consider this point, your outstanding mind will help you to realize that, during our short stay here, we have not seen anything unusual which would irrevocably lead us to conclude that we had without a shadow of a doubt already reached the place which I saw in my visions.

There are many background details which correspond with it: a fisherman's house builds on a mountain on the shores of a small inland sea; many men of high standing and appearance; in all seriousness, You too have much in common with the man, radiant beyond belief, that I joyfully saw seven times in my visions. However, this resplendent presence used words to create His wishes; He spoke -

and it came to pass! Heaven and earth were under His control and innumerable multitudes awaited a wave of His hand!

Most exalted man among men, that is surely not the case here! I found here in Your presence, just as I did two years ago with the proconsul in Memphis, many very good and wise people, - but up to now I have found nothing here that I expected to find and I therefore ask you, if I have come to the right place or not. If you say yes, I will believe you and I will stay here as your word is quite sufficient for me and you are in any case a very wise man. However, if you say no, or if you say nothing again, we will begin our journey back home and retrieve our herds, which we left behind in exchange for gold and silver in Memphis when we consulted the wise proconsul. We will also repay the unused money which he loaned to us as he had no use for it at the time.

You can see, most exalted man among men, that I and all my companions - regardless of the fact that our flesh is not adorned with white skin - are neither false nor deceitful; we are all searching for absolute truth which is of supreme importance to us. We live in the hope of finding it here, but if not, then somewhere else! Please therefore confirm we are at the right place, and we will happily do anything you ask of us!"

I say to Raphael: "Go and give them a sign, so that they can know where they are!"

Raphael immediately goes to the black man (Oubratouvishar) and says: "My friend, what is it that you left behind at home, which you wished to return and fetch when you were in Memphis? You wished to give it to the proconsul as a special present as thanks for all the trouble he had taken with you. It had therefore been wrapped in fresh linen, but in your haste to depart you forgot it was lying in a corner of your hut, where it now remains. If you wish, I will bring it to you in an instant! Speak up - and your wish will be granted!"

The black man says: "No need to convince me that I have reached the right place - because the fact that you have told me what I left at home, tells me that I am at the right spot as only God's all-seeing eye could perceive my forgetfulness - you would however do me a great service as on my way home I wish to make the proconsul very happy because he delights in rare natural phenomena! The thing can at best only have a sentimental value and not a monetary one! Nevertheless, it is very beautiful!"

At this moment Raphael gives the beautiful natural specimen, wrapped in a linen cloth, to our black-skinned friend and asks him if it is the right one.

When this happens the black man nearly faints and cries out: "Yes, this is it, this it is! How could you possibly have brought the jewel here as you did not leave my presence for a second?! Did you steal it from me as a young, courageous Egyptian in the service of the proconsul, in an incomprehensibly clever way? Did you in fact secretly follow us to my hut a year ago when we came home from Memphis and remember its hiding place?

Yes, but why am I asking all these stupid questions? A few moments before our departure I was holding it in my hands, but while I loaded up my camel and called my herd together, I placed it in a corner of my hut and covered it with a pumpkin shell! In my preoccupation with herding the animals and loading the camel, I forgot the beautiful natural specimen. You could not have stolen it from

me! You have obviously fetched; but - how, how, how is that possible for you, a man who is visibly flesh and blood?! To leave here and return was the work of a split second! This is an achievement that is only possible for a God! You are either a God yourself or one of His closest servants!"

Raphael replies: "Not the first, and certainly the second! However, when I collected your beautiful natural specimen, I forgot to bring the pumpkin shell you used to cover it! You should have that as well! - Look, here it is! Put your little jewel in it and reveal it to us; since there are many here who would like to see the treasure you have found again!"

The Nubians Recognize the Lord.

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol.4: Ch 187 by Jakob Lorber

Now the black people are completely disoriented by one surprise coming on top of another as this is something they prize very highly. They are pure, still completely unspoiled natural people and with their true mastery of nature even now, they are able to achieve so much purely by virtue of the intensity of their total belief and their willpower. This must appear to the already decadent people commonly found in this world as a great miracle and it would therefore be difficult to make any impression on these primitive souls by performing any other miracle for them. The healing of illness would be completely inappropriate as these true children of nature know no disease. Their old people always reach a great age and when they die, they always just fall quietly and painlessly asleep.

Their children never die, because they were fathered in an ordered society, and they came into this world fully mature and healthy through and through. Afterwards they were fed in a proper natural way and therefore no trace of disease could enter their bodies. If one were to cure any illness in their presence, one would first have to explain to them what an illness was and how it originated. However, in so doing one would have caused them more harm than good as knowledge of a sin and its consequences is almost as bad as having committed that sin already.

Somebody thought that reincarnation of a dead person might be quite effective. It would also mean nothing to these people! They view the death of the body as a great blessing from God to His people and would even consider transformation of this kind as a transgression against the ordinances of the supreme spirit of God, at least until I Myself am able to teach them a better interpretation. They would view the creation of a great storm with natural eyes in their very sensitive character as they themselves have always had a considerable influence over the natural spirits in the air, water, earth, and fire. However, a speed of movement which exceeds the speed of an arrow from one of their bows to an incomparable degree is a true miracle for these people. They consider a feat like that can only be performed by God and His highest servant spirits, never by weak mortals on this earth using their minds.

After the black people had recovered from their complete and utter amazement, their leader said to his companions: "Brothers! I and all your others have now witnessed a feat which can only be performed by God as even in our minds we cannot move as quickly to our homeland and back again as this servant of God has in fetching this little jewel of mine! We are therefore at the right spot.

We must display the greatest reverence and continue to worship Him in spirit as He sits there at the big table with an unimaginably divine and exalted expression on His face.

The words He will speak to us in His inexpressible mercy and grace, will from now on be our most holy commandment, which we will retain in our memories as securely as the clear image of our rocky homeland. In the same way our descendants will do this until the end of all the periods of time through which this earth still has passed! You recall the wise proconsul's prophecy about the everlasting dignity of this supreme God in human guise! It is in fact true and of that we are now fully convinced! Because it is true and nothing more nor less than the truth, we also know what to do and observe in order to follow Him!

The journey here was long and difficult but even if it had been a thousand times further and a thousand times more difficult, it would not diminish in the slightest the magnificence of this incomprehensibly supreme blessing which we shall in all eternity never deserve! There He sits, the eternal, almighty Spirit in human form, He who made heaven and earth and everything that exists, merely by imposing His will and using His willpower creatively, just as the wise proconsul in Memphis explained to us in detail.

We are now standing before the true, everlasting God, who made us and has given us life. Every moment of our life is in His hands; if He wished, we would not exist anymore. In short, only He is everything in all things and everything that exists is as nothing without Him! This is what my vision meant and what we were taught in Memphis. We must therefore accept it and believe in it forever. - It now seems that the everlasting Lord and Master wishes to talk to us! Therefore, be most attentive, as if we were on a highly dangerous lion hunt, as that was the comparison given to us by the proconsul in Memphis!"

Oubratouvishar describes his Nubian homeland.

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol.4: Ch 189 by Jakob Lorber

(The Lord:) "Earlier I asked you if you were hungry and thirsty and merely posed the question because I could see only too well that you are weak with hunger and thirst. The day has already lasted for four hours and since yesterday you have not eaten, nor have you had anything to drink since midday. You were unable to have any milk on the ship and the water on board was already putrid and therefore undrinkable. My immediate concern for you is that you should build up the strength in your body again as without it you will be unable to enjoy the relaxing rest which is essential for you to absorb and retain the spiritual food in a more permanent way. To attempt to teach the Gospel to an audience when their eyes and ears proclaim their hunger and thirst without offering them food beforehand, would be the pinnacle of worldly self-serving foolishness! The first priority is that your bodies should be nourished and only then will we look to the Gospel!

However, here, you will have to be content with the offerings on My table, which are not the same as you are accustomed to consuming and leave your motheaten dates and figs for your camels to eat. Please therefore sit at the tables over there which are empty, and you will quickly be provided with sufficient to eat and drink! You, Oubratouvishar, sit down here as you too are a real king of your

people, and this is a table for kings who must decide together how to lead their people and develop them into true human beings!"

Everybody follows my wishes and our Marcus, with the help of unseen hands, is at once ready with a quantity of the best fish. When the black people are seated at the tables, fish, bread, salt, and wine are placed before them and the guests are invited to enjoy the meal that has been provided in this way. They soon begin to eat the still steaming fish, consume the bread and wine, and they find everything to be excellently prepared and very tasty.

Their leader, already gaining in confidence, said: "Lord of my life, food as tasty as this has never before touched my palate! At times we also eat fish at home, but we regard it as a penance food. Anyone failing to observe our established rules must eat fish. If we were able to prepare fish like this, to be required to eat it would no longer be a penance!

What kind of water is this that we are drinking here? It tastes indescribably good, and one could drink it at any time without being thirsty and constantly eat this honey-sweet bread! In Memphis I was sometimes offered bread to eat by the proconsul, but it was not as sweet as this by a long way. However, above all I am astonished by this water! Where is the source? Are we able to buy it from you? I would like to take some of it home so that people can taste the spring water from this heavenly country.

The earth is also much more beautiful here than in our homeland! Here there is extraordinary variety! Everywhere thickets and trees grow in abundance but at home there are only a few places where the vegetation is like that, - otherwise there is only wasteland which is desolate and barren. Here most of the mountains are covered to their summit with very beautiful trees and look soft and inviting while at home we see naked rocks, with only the occasional patch of greyish red moss. These rocks look totally destroyed and weather-beaten. In color they are mostly burnished red and dark-grey and for the most part they are so steep that they can only be climbed in a few places - and one is always taking one's life in one's hands. Once you have reached the top, the heat is unbearable especially after midday, as then the mountain tops begin to glow so fiercely that fish placed on the rocks is completely cooked in a few moments, even the meat of lambs and goats. In the afternoon even the eagles cannot rest on a mountain top, and the ibex descends to the fields near the rushing waters of the Nile.

Yes, we live in a very hard and extremely hot country, where it is quite difficult at times to be a human being and survive! Especially during the late summer, it would be quite impossible to live far away from the Nile as there are then days when the rocks and the desert sand begin to melt - especially in the afternoon if the midday wind begins to blow. Then we can almost see flames rolling towards us over the sandy floor of the wide expanse of desert. People and animals then have no choice but to embrace the good Nile, which by some miracle, is a very cold stream as it passes through our region.

As the last quarter of the year approaches and before the rainy month arrives, we have the most terrible time of all because then the fire storms begin. The air becomes horribly sultry. Clouds like incredible columns of fire rise from behind the mountains and finally cover the whole sky, while countless bolts of lightning come crashing down from the grey-black blanket of the sky accompanied

by fearsome claps of thunder which terrorize both people and animals. Although they do not cause much damage, because they disperse high up in the sky, it is however no joke to have to listen to this cracking, roaring, hissing and thundering for sometimes as long as forty days and forty nights – apart from also living with the fear of being horribly burned by one of the lightning strikes coming too close to earth, a fate which from time to time befalls us and in particular those people who do not diligently smear their bodies with fat.

When the fire storm season is over, it starts to rain, and the rain continues for about four to six weeks or complete phases of the moon. The rain which falls is fine but dense and, on some mountain tops it sometimes snows. Towards the end of the rainy season the temperature often drops noticeably so that we must warm ourselves at the fire. This is also not particularly beneficial but nevertheless better than living through late summer.

This is our life and how we live and behave! We must endure much hardship and enjoy very few pleasures. What heaven these surroundings are compared to ours! What a joy it must be to live in these areas which are truly heaven on earth, and how desolate and sad our country is by comparison! But You, My Lord, decreed that it should be like this and that we, sitting there in our black skins, would not wish to have it otherwise. Life is perfectly tolerable as it is. It is true to say that none of us has ever had any complaint regarding Your divine ordinance!

Our coal-black skin is in some respects quite a burden for us to bear, firstly because, in our wide experience, it attracts heat far more than any other brighter color, and secondly, because we are unattractively ugly by comparison with you white-skinned people. Look for example at the heavenly shape of this young girl in our presence and consider how ugly one of our girls is on the other hand! We see it and we feel it - yet we cannot change color! What beautiful hair you have, and what an ugly tangle of short black wool we have to adorn our heads! However, we do not complain and are content with everything that You, My Lord, and Master, have ordained for us!

Now I must show you my beautiful natural specimen and You, My Lord, will graciously tell us what its value might be!"

Oubratouvishar Treasure

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol.4: Ch 190 by Jakob Lorber

At this point, Oubratouvishar unwrapped his jewel from the linen and placed it in front of Me, saying: "There it is, just as I found it among the rocks on a hillside. I was unable to do otherwise than pick it up and to keep it! Human hands had certainly never touched it before! It seems therefore to be pure, perhaps, we might say, a trick of nature. What is it, and what value might it have? I would never wish to give anyone a worthless present."

I say to him: "This is a very valuable precious stone, in fact an immense cut diamond. It was nevertheless cut and polished by human hands at the time when the Persians made war on the Egyptians and on that occasion, they penetrated as far as the Nubian desert. It was lost by a general when he was fighting many hungry lions and panthers. You are therefore going to present the commander of

Memphis with a worldly gift of enormous value because it is so extraordinarily rare.

Just consider that this stone has been cut and polished for a hundred and seventy years. It became a jewel in the crown of the kings of Persia, until finally one of the kings gifted it as a reward to one of his greatest generals. In fact, that general lost it in the desert area bordering your country which was at that time overrun with lions and panthers. I have placed these animals there at that time as otherwise the then very warlike Persians would have discovered you and would have decimated your herds and flocks.

However, just as you were destined even to find, in your earthly life, a very valuable treasure which had lain among the rocks for several hundred years, you have also been chosen to find the most splendid and valuable treasure for your spirit and from that source, for your souls. You have searched and have found it in a most honorable way! Your black skin shall not be a burden to you and black will remain one of My most respected colors.

The gospel which I will now preach to you, will only be kept pure by you. You will become My apostolic forerunner to your black brothers and sisters! However, within a short time I will send you a helper to support you and guide you to a very rich region in your country. This man will teach you agriculture and other useful skills which are of great utility in life on this earth.

In this, to you still totally foreign, country, you will be a contented and happy nation and will preserve the purity of My word and My teachings. Woe betide those who will later try to seek to oppress you and subjugate you. Against them I Myself will raise my shining sword of vengeance and slay them to the last man! In consequence your black people will live in an isolated but spacious corner, always a free nation until the end of time.

However, if you should in future fall out among yourselves - which must remain a possibility if you are free men - the powerful ones among you will make themselves kings, will punish you with harsh laws bringing your golden freedom to an end for a long time or even forever! Then your children will languish in great deprivation and long for redemption; but they will have a very long time to wait. Therefore, organize yourself in such a way that no kings can arise among your people - except those who are like yourself! You are not a tyrant but a true benefactor in dealing with your people and that is decreed in my ordinances. This is therefore how matters should remain with you!"

The Black People who followed on.

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol.4: Ch 191 by Jakob Lorber

(The Lord:) "My name is Jesus from Nazareth, here on earth as a person, and Jehovah for eternity; but from now on Jesus shall be eternal. Using His name, you will be able to do and to achieve everything not only in the short term, but for eternity!

Love Me as your God and Lord and Master above all and love each other as each of you loves himself. You will then remain in My love, in My strength and My power, and My light will never leave you!

However, if your love for Me and your poorer brothers and sisters should diminish, darkness will enter your hearts, and My strength and power in you will

dissipate and become worthless! Even if you call out My name or wish something to happen in My name, it will no longer support you with My power and might as all the strength, all the power and all the successful deeds performed in My name can only subsist in love for Me and, through that love, for your neighbor!

My name alone achieves nothing - only the love within it, through it and for it and, in turn, for your neighbor! If a poor person approaches someone and begs for help, but this person says to him: 'Go and earn for yourself!', he certainly does not have My love and will not receive any power or strength!

Go now and inform your companions. Then come back and I Myself will continue with another gospel! So be it!"

Oubratouvishar bows down before Me and goes to his companions to tell them what I had told him. He was however utterly amazed to find that, instead of the twenty who had accompanied him, there were also thirty-four women seated at the tables. He of course recognized them immediately as neighbors and close relatives, and it is understandable that his first question was precisely: How and when did you follow me here?

The newcomers answered him: "Seeing and hearing for oneself is far better than to be told about miraculous events even if the description comes from the mouth of the most trustworthy eye and ear witness! We were always only half a day behind you!

We would not have undertaken this trip had it not been for the arrival of an indescribably beautiful youth in shining white who came down to us from the skies and almost forced us to follow you. We gathered a herd of cows and bulls and a small flock of sheep and went with them to Memphis. There, the good proconsul and his people came to meet us some distance outside the city, and he told us that he had received a message from a youth of similar description and that he had therefore hurried out to meet us.

The commander told us about you and in the meantime took good care of our animals, providing us in exchange with gold and silver pieces in a range of weights and values, so that we could use them wherever we went to buy all our food and other necessities. We thanked him and he gave us an escort to Alexandria who helped us on our way with all kinds of assistance. They also arranged for safe sea transport from Alexandria, and we were transported here over the seemingly unending stretch of water.

When we came ashore, we found your clear footprints impressed into the sand and we followed your tracks. We were ultimately so close to you that we could clearly see the dust thrown up by your camels. It was only when you were hidden behind a forest and a mountain that you were no longer in our sight.

However, the youth appeared again and brought us here in a manner that we are quite unable to describe. We can only say that we are astonished that we are here! How did we get here? We know nothing about the journey - except that it was like a very bad dream!

However, this most exalted person has instructed you to tell us something! What is it? Speak up! His appearance is very similar to the description you gave us of the image in your visions and that was the very reason why you and we travelled to this place! Speak up, speak to us!"

The Nature of Isis and Osiris

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol.4: Ch 192 by Jakob Lorber

The leader says: "We, my brothers, and sisters, believe that what you see before us undoubtedly exists because we have seen and heard everything with our own eyes and ears! All human wisdom, all our powers of comprehension and even pure, sober common sense, cannot grasp that it can be possible even to imagine what is actually here.

You cannot begin to suspect what is to be found here or imagine how it looks! After having my visions, I came close to picturing something immeasurably grand awaiting me but to conceive something so totally breathtaking and so inexpressibly infinite, was beyond even my wildest and most outlandish thinking and I did not dare to climb to such heights. Nevertheless, it is so and it is there, unmistakably, before our astonished eyes!

You recall that a year ago in Memphis, the proconsul and I loudly carried on our private discussion in front of you, even though he often expressed the opinion that it would suffice if I alone were to benefit by sharing his deep wisdom. I said however: 'Look, my lord, these are my brothers and sisters! Not one of them is inferior to me. Therefore, my lord, please do not keep secrets from them for my sake!' After that, the proconsul always spoke out loudly and clearly.

When about six months later he took us to Kar-nag in Korak to lift the fabled veil of Isis. More than half of your numbers were also there with me, seeing and hearing everything just as I did.

There we saw two strange portraits – the first was of I-sis (the source of sustenance in primordial life), concealed behind a thick veil with next to her the image of Osiris (Ou sir iez; the pasture of the pure, spiritual person).

The first picture showed a colossal woman, her chest covered with many breasts, and it was also said that at times a cow was depicted instead of the woman's image we saw.

The second picture of Ou sir iez represented a strange being. A man was standing on an extensive, rich pasture, surrounded by many herds eagerly grazing. This strange man was surrounded by a variety of fruit trees, and he looked as if he was eating.

Through these two images the Egyptians depicted, as you yourselves have heard from the mouth of our wise mentor, firstly the primordial origin of the veiled God-being which is the creative one and which nourishes and sustains all creation – while, in the second visible picture, everything that has been created and lives and consumes in all creation is shown.

The proconsul then began to explain to us all using profound words of wisdom, his concept of a sole, everlasting, primordially creative God, and we recognized that there must be an almighty, supreme, exceedingly wise primordial being, which is the source from which all creatures throughout the whole scope of everlasting infinity have originated and by which they are now constantly nourished and sustained.

This primordial God-being cannot be seen or understood by anybody in any way as it fills the whole of infinity and is secretly present everywhere in space as well as in time. That was the reason why the portrait of I-sis was always veiled. Nobody was able or allowed to lift the heavy veil from the image of I-sis except the

high priest at certain especially holy times - even he could only raise the lowest hemline in front of the people.

At that time, you obtained an immense respect for the primordial Godhead, and I myself was no less influenced. On the way from Kar nag (not naked, therefore fully dressed, and veiled) to Ko rak (humble like a crab) we spoke about nothing else except the primordial Godhead, and stopping at every tree our mentor explained to us that the inner being is also shielded from everyone's eyes, like the veiled image of I-sis. Our amazement and reverence increased with every step taken by the camels on which we rode.

In every aspect of nature, we began to see the enigmatic image of the shrouded and veiled I-sis, and the proconsul took great pleasure in being with us, his black disciples. From Kar nag onwards we looked at everything in nature with completely different eyes than we had before.

Marvelous, profound conversations took place afterwards in our company and with what reverence all our minds were filled when, in our leisure time, we directed our thoughts and our words to the one, eternal primordial Godhead! How often we talked with the good, wise proconsul from Memphis about the unspeakable feeling of bliss we would have if only it were in some way possible just to hear a single word from the supreme Godhead - even if it were only heard very softly but still quite distinctly - in one's heart!"

The Great Rock Temple of Abu Simbel

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol. 4 Ch 193 by Jakob Lorber

(Oubratouvishar:) "We asked the proconsul, if anything similar had ever happened to any other extremely upright person on this earth.

He shrugged his shoulders and said: 'Directly, most probably never; but there are valid examples of indirect communication both in the scriptures and in stories handed down by word of mouth from generation to generation, that very upright and devout people, having entered a state of rapture, saw God's Spirit as a light penetrating the innermost recesses of all infinity and they perceived that they themselves were part of this light. However, all those blessed in this way confessed that they were overcome by an intensely joyful feeling in the presence of this light. They began to prophesy, and their prophecies always came to pass. However, no mortal has ever seen the true primordial God in another guise!

Man wishes to bring his primordial God closer to himself in a limited way. His heart's desire is to see the Creator in approachable human form and to converse with Him, the everlasting primordial spirit, as if he were a person. However, that is nothing but the foolish desire of weak-minded mankind, which is in a certain way forgivable, but can never be realized. The finite can never become infinite - nor the infinite, finite!'



This is what our wise mentor said to us, and we understood his words as well as our limited comprehension would permit.

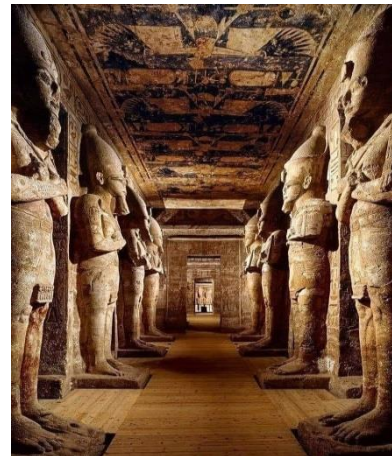
Nevertheless, despite everything, a process began spontaneously within each of us in which a powerful divine personality began to develop as we felt too lost in God's infinity and could not confidently find our way forward. Our hearts longed for a personal God who could be seen and loved, while our minds always declared war on our poor hearts which felt much too inadequate to embrace divine infinity with all our love, even though the proconsul advised us to love the primordial Godhead.

Our mentor also told us that there was a nation on earth called the Jews. This nation was said to have the best concept of the supreme Godhead. One of the first of their wise men, an Egyptian by birth named Moi ie sez (which means: 'my foundling', a name given to him by a princess when she rescued him from the Nile), had conversed with the spirit of God over a period of fifty years. God's spirit strictly forbade him ever to make an image of Him in any way! This wise man at one stage expressed a heart-felt desire to see God in person but received the answer, '*You cannot look on God and live!*'

Nevertheless, when the desire within the heart of the wise man became more insistent, the spirit of God instructed him to hide in a cave and come forward if he was called. *The wise man did that and when he heard his name he came out and saw in the distance the back of God's body shining more brightly than a thousand suns! His own face then began to shine so brightly, that no man could look at him for seven years without going blind. For this reason, Moses was obliged to hide his face behind a thick veil at all times. As you know, the very wise proconsul told us all this.*

To what extent all this was true or not, we would not know how to judge. We only know that an untrue word never passed the lips of the proconsul. The way he heard it is precisely the way he passed it on to us.

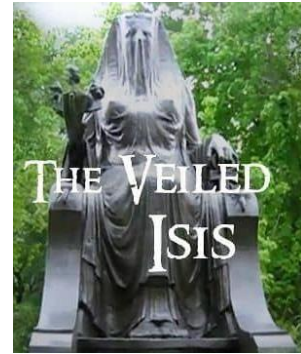
You know that, when we asked him where in the whole of Egypt, the true, eternal primordial Godhead had ever been worshipped and in all probability greatly revered, he replied: 'Not very far from here – to be precise it was in the great rock temple of Abu Simbel (which means: 'I was, I am and I will be')! You enter through a wide high gateway which leads to a cavernous inner hall. This is adorned with columns carved from the rock. ***Between each pair of columns an armed colossus stands at least as tall as twelve men and appears to support the weight of the temple ceiling.***



The interior is divided by an arch into three halls and in each of them on both sides there stand seven of these colossi – a total of fourteen giants in each of the three halls. They symbolize the seven spirits of God. In its three sections the hall houses six times seven of these colossi. This shows that even from the beginning of all creation, God set down six periods of time or ages and that in each of these endlessly long and always overlapping ages, the same seven spirits have always supported everything with their influence spreading throughout the

universe. Each of the six sides of the three sections of the temple hall is engraved with all kinds of signs and figures, decipherable by a seer steeped in the ancient wisdom that the spirit of God revealed to the primordial wise men in this country.

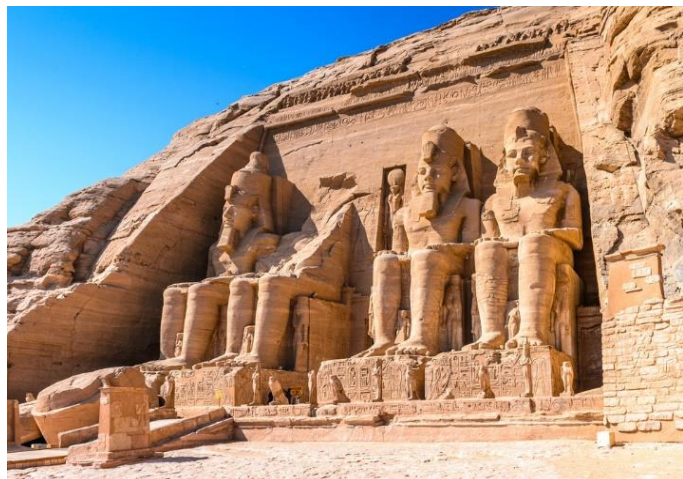
At the end of the three halls the veiled image of I-sis is again to be found, the open portrait of Ou-sir-iez, and, on the altar in front of the Isis, the following words are engraved in the hard rock: Abu Simbel! On each side of the entrance to the temple gate, there are two giants in a sitting position, and they represent the four main elemental forces of God in nature. The fact that they are seated indicates an ordered rest position, in which they have been placed by God to serve all creatures according to the will of God.



An inscription above the gate reminds the visitor that this is a holy place and that he should always enter the sacred halls with a well-disciplined spirit. Anyone entering the first hall will find the first pillars engraved with quite strange symbols and figures and these are said to make reference to some kind of worldwide war under the words 'God's wars.

However, I myself am not sufficiently well versed in the wisdom of times past to be able to put forward any furthermore profound explanation! In seven days, I will lead you there and you can see all this with your own eyes. Of course, the sharp tooth of time has damaged many aspects of this ancient sanctuary but most of it is still quite well preserved, and you will still be able to learn a great deal from the visit!'

Now, what feelings then began to gain ground in us! We could hardly wait for the day on which the proconsul would lead us to the holy place he had described. When finally, the day arrived and we hurried there on our camels, our hearts began to glow more and more, the nearer we came to the outer temple, which was said to be merely the grave of a few ancient seers. How our hearts then pounded when we reached the great rock temple! What an indescribably deep impression *the four statues depicting the elemental forces* made and were we not speechless when we entered the halls carrying our burning torches? Why did all this affect us so powerfully? The reason is that, in that place, we thought ourselves to be closer to the supreme, true Godhead than anywhere else in Memphis.



When we left the marvelous temple with much weeping and sighing and after our mentor had told us something of the history of the earth in primordial times, we were so moved by all this, that we immediately then began to regard the whole earth as a large temple of God! Whether some days were hot and others cooler, we did not notice as our minds were too fully occupied with anything

which might bring the primordial spirit of God closer to us. Yet we still completely missed the point. We certainly knew a great deal then, but I-sis remained hidden and veiled. No mortal was ever able to lift the hem of the mysterious garment worn by the everlasting Godhead."

The Origin of the Abu Simbel Temple,

The Sphinx and the Pillars of Memnon as represented by the hieroglyphics on the first two pearls. Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol. 4 Ch 202 by Jakob Lorber

His companions said however: "How can you have arranged anything with the Lord, when you have not exchanged a single word with Him?!"

The leader said: "Here, in His presence, everything emanates from Him, and we therefore only deal with Him, even if we are negotiating with His disciples!" - They were content with this answer and were then silent.

A few of them did however say to the angel: "Listen, amazing young man, would it not be possible for you also to bring here the quite unusual treasures owned by the five of us which we too keep hidden in our huts?"

The angel said: "Just pick them up under the table near your feet and we shall see what they amount to!"

The five Moors look underneath the table and to their immense surprise they see their very familiar, rather large bundles, and lift them onto the table. Another four heavy lumps of gold appear, together weighing over a hundred pounds, while in the fifth bundle seven fairly large river boulders are revealed, specimens which Marcus who was standing next to the angel, thought were completely worthless.

The angel said however: "Just wait, soon you will discover that these seven stones are of immense, even incalculable value in worldly terms! Bring me a solid iron hammer, and we will examine them!"

Marcus, full of curiosity himself, hurries to his workshop and soon reappears with a solid iron hammer which he hands over. The angel takes up one of the stones in his hand and strikes it carefully several times causing the whitish, silica-like crust to break away revealing a pearl the size of a human head. Everyone present is absolutely astonished.

On the surface of this amazing pearl, hieroglyphics and other symbols were engraved, including quite a good drawing of the temple Abu Simbel during its construction just when the four gigantic figures had been completed after a hundred and seventy years of sweaty toil and many sacrifices. People still were working assiduously on the facades, sculpturing, and engraving gigantic inscriptions and symbols into the smooth broad surfaces. At this time, they were beginning to create the gate situated between the gigantic figures. Anyone able to decipher these symbols and scriptures, which were clearly visible, had the story of the origin of this temple in his hands and could also see the reason why it was build there by the ancient Egyptians, which was to be near the river Nile.

This pearl therefore does not only have an incalculable value as a giant specimen, but it also has a historic value as it originates from an era many thousands of years before the first human being walked on this earth in the flesh.

During the time on earth when gigantic crustaceans lived in the water, huge waves from the worlds' seas were still flooding over the majority of the low-lying

countries in Africa. *The ancient Egyptians found the mother shell when they dug the foundations of the first pyramids and when they pried it open, they found these seven pearls in it, one of which the angel has now freed from its incrustation.*

Naturally, the angel was now inundated with questions, and he explained the circumstances briefly.

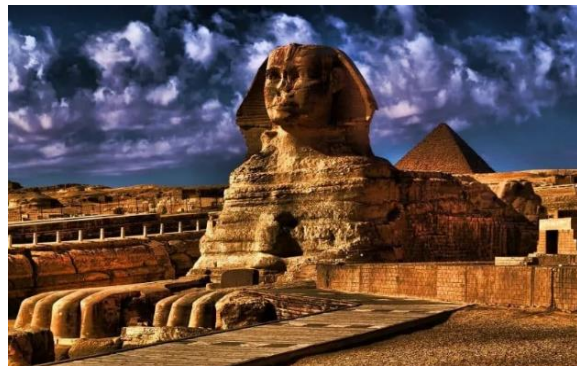
When Raphael had finished his naturally very superficial explanation of the **first pearl**, he said: "All that you need to know for the time being, I have briefly explained to you as clearly as possible. Let us now move on to reveal the second pearl which is somewhat smaller than the first!"

The angel then took the **second pearl** and freed it in the same way from its incrustation as the first one. It was also covered with symbols and inscriptions. On one of the most polished surfaces the little temple of Abu Simbel was engraved and next to it there was a head similar to that of the great Sphinx. And the angel was again implored to explain all the symbols and inscriptions.

The angel said: "My friends, unless the spirit within his soul is in a perfect state of awareness not one person currently living will be able to interpret everything that is written or engraved on this pearl!"

Although this pearl is as old as the first larger pearl, it was only engraved and inscribed about a hundred years later. That was just at the time when the smaller rock temple was completed while, on the other hand, the interior of the larger temple was still unfinished. Therefore, the representation of the smaller temple shows construction to be complete.

The head represents the man who was already the seventh shepherd king at the time and who gave himself the name Shivin (wrongly 'Sphinx'), 'the lively one' 'the entrepreneur'. He had almost reached the age of three hundred and his colossal head was chiseled from a large granite rock which can even today still be seen in quite a good state of preservation.



[Note: What happened to the broken nose of the Sphinx? Several theories but the one that interested me was that the reason for the broken nose was because it represented a black person's nose which would have suggested that the ancient Egyptians were black and descendants of Cain!]

[2024 DNA Evidence Of Egypt's Black Pharaohs \(Not Taught In Schools\) - YouTube](#)

This Sphinx initiated major improvements in the schools as well as in dairy farming and in agriculture. He was also revered by his people almost as a god. The symbols and inscriptions illustrate the many good things and improvements which he introduced to this country with his extremely fertile mind.

He did not start to hew out the large temple as that work had already been done by two of his ancestors who were very much devoted to the invisible spirit of

God. *However, out of his great respect for them, he had them sculpted on a colossal scale in a sitting position on a rocky cliff face not far from the great temple on a beautiful plain near the Nile, to serve as an everlasting memorial to them. As the two of them had no names and their modesty forbade them from wishing to carry names, he nevertheless called them 'The Nameless Ones' (Me maine oni, = badly translated in later times: 'Memnon'). Both the sculptured columns or colossi are still quite well preserved and very visible to this day.*"



The leader says: "Yes, yes, we have seen and admired all these things! But how old would all these extraordinary monuments be?"

The angel says: "Nearly three thousand years have elapsed, and the passage of the next three thousand years will not completely obliterate all traces of them! - Just wait a little and we will now reveal the third pearl. On its surface, next to Sch Sphinx ivinz' two ancestors represented as statues, you will see other important engravings which will give you serious cause to reflect!"

The Secret of the Third Pearl - The seven giants and the sarcophagus

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol. 4: Ch 203 by Jakob Lorber

Raphael now took the third pearl in his hand and removed its crust.



When it was uncovered, Raphael drew the attention of the onlookers, who were excited and consumed by their thirst for knowledge, to the quite clearly engraved colossi of Memnon and said: "Look, there they are already, the two Nameless Ones! Above them and in the foreground, you can however see a depiction of *seven gigantic, robed figures of humans, surrounded by many tiny human shapes!* What did the wise

Sphinx, who himself inscribed all the pearls, intend us to understand from this?

Listen carefully! It was at about the same time, some one hundred and seven years before the reign of the first of the two 'nameless' forefathers, that a large planet in deep space was fragmented into many pieces with the approval of the Lord. Many people of gigantic proportions lived on it.

As a result of this sudden cataclysm, which was not foreseen although its coming had often previously been foretold to these people, it so happened that seven of these earthlings landed in upper Egypt in several open



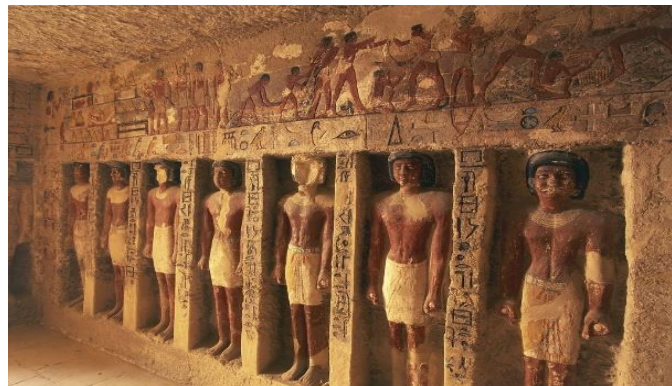
places throughout that large country and the heavy impact caused a major earth tremor.

This human rain lasted for more than ten days, which was the period from the first to the last of these impacts. The inhabitants of this country had to endure considerable anxiety and were greatly shocked; especially at night, when they were terrified that one of the giants would fall on them and totally obliterate them. It was therefore with fear in their hearts that they looked constantly skywards to see whether another uninvited guest from the clouds would pay them a very unwelcome visit.

For nearly ten years they posted a permanent watch to see whether another gruesome traveler might land in their midst but after ten days there were no more. In time the people calmed down and they even dared to approach the giant, completely desiccated, corpses which were scattered over a wide area and lay several hours' walk away from each other.

The seers among those ancient Egyptians deduced quite correctly that these were giants from a large, distant country who were being punished by the spirit of God because they must have sinned against Him. God in His just anger was said to have picked them up and hurled them here, just to show the Egyptians that He does not spare even the most mighty giants if their actions are contrary to His will. *In short, they finally began to burn the bodies piece by piece and fifty years later there was no longer any evidence of the giant visitors.*

However, the Egyptians' remembrance of these gigantic human figures caused them to regard everything in colossal terms as they were influenced by the image of these giants imprinted on their minds and their first sculptures were more than tangible proof of this.



In the temple of Abu Simbel, in each of its three divisions, seven giants were shown as supporting the roof to some extent and they were chiseled into the stone, notably wearing the garments in which the travelers fell from the skies. The Egyptians, who had previously walked around almost completely naked, started to dress in the same manner - which is the reason why even nowadays we see the remains of their ancestors dressed in this way. Their mummies and sarcophagi are full of this kind of adornment."

The leader asks about the true significance of the sarcophagi (a stone coffin) to the ancient Egyptians and why they gave this one name to both larger and smaller versions of these heavy coffins.

Raphael says: "This you will hear right now and in some detail! You know that in large areas of this country it is not so easy to bury corpses as, in dry ground, a body decomposes very slowly and therefore does not begin to rot. In the moister ground near the Nile, they wisely did not wish to bury the dead and thus pollute the river. The alternatives of just putting the corpses on the ground or throwing them to wild animals as food were both unacceptable especially to the

ancient Egyptians who were much too civilized and respected even the corpses of their dead brothers too much to treat them so disrespectfully. But what else could they do?

They then had a very clever idea! They hewed from stone, sometimes very large but later also very small coffins, in which there was comfortably enough space to accommodate one, two or at most three corpses. Each coffin was provided with a relatively large and heavy lid. When one or more corpses had been placed in a coffin, after the skin had been rubbed thoroughly with mum (Muma, also mummy, = earth resin, earth balsam), the lid was heated until it glowed and the coffin was then covered 'for all time', in a manner of speaking, with this glowing hot lid. Using this process the corpses completely dried out and with very large, well-heated lids they were sometimes charred or completely burned to ash.

However, in the bigger towns and communities there were also communal coffins, which were opened every seven years. They were then gradually re-filled with corpses and completely enclosed and a substantial fire was ignited on top of the lid with the result that the corpses were of course reduced to ash. When one of these coffins was full of ash, it was not opened again but was left to stand as a respectful reminder of the transitory nature of everything on earth.

In time vaults and pyramids were built around and above them and this is the reason why many of these coffins are still to be found today in the vicinity of the pyramids in sometimes very narrow and sometimes very wide vaulted chambers (Kai-tu comba, which means hidden chamber). These coffins which have now been described to you in detail were then called sarcophagi, as in the tongue of the ancient Egyptians, sarko means 'glowing' and vaga (vascha) means 'heavy lid'.

These then are your sarcophagi; but now let us proceed to the fourth pearl and see what secrets it must reveal to us!"

Raphael explains the Constellations on the Fourth Pearl.

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol. 4: Ch 204 by Jakob Lorber

The angel carefully the angel picks it up in his hand and removes the incrustation.

At that moment the leader asks the angel: "Young miracle worker, in your capacity as the hands-on servant of the Almighty, please do not be annoyed if I burden you with a question! Considering your miraculous power in other respects, I am troubled by the hammer! Is it absolutely necessary or are you using it only to reveal yourself to us in a more natural way so that we can watch and listen to you more fearlessly and calmly?"

The angel replies: "Neither of these reasons - I only do this to show you how to handle stones like these if you should chance to find any and wish to reveal their secrets! Especially in upper and middle Egypt these encrusted stones are to be found in large numbers over wide stretches of the desert, but there will of course only be few pearls like these hidden in them. However, other stones too may be decorated with all manner of signs, inscriptions and illustrations as the old Egyptians still did not have paper to write on for a long time. Therefore, they used

stone tablets, initially engraving them with bone tools and later with iron styluses, all kinds of material they wished to commit to memory.

The very first drawings of course only recorded very simple facts concerning their flocks and herds; but the latter one's record, like these pearls, great and significant events affecting not only this large country and its people but also the whole world. The Lord wished it offer suitable preparatory background for His Coming and this is also the reason why He sent His most favored chosen people, the Hebrews, to Egypt for long-term instruction. Moses, the great prophet of the Lord, completed his schooling at the Horn of the Kahi (Kahiro), in Thebes (Thebai, also Thebsai, = house of fools, later of course a large, populous city), in Kar nag at Korak and in the oldest cities like Memphis, Diaethria (Dia दौर = place of work) and Elephantine (EL ei fanti = the descendants of the children of God) and was led by the spirit of God to his ordination at Madan over the Suez at the late age of fifty-seven, while fleeing from a cruel Varion (Pharaoh). You can read about his later history in the scriptures.

In a word, Egypt was destined by God to become a preparatory school. The inhabitants of this, the oldest inhabited land on earth, were already endowed from ancient times with considerable wisdom and they traded and dealt with nearly all the more advanced nations in the world. You will now therefore understand how and why and particularly in this country, everything which is found here very often has a very deep-rooted significance.

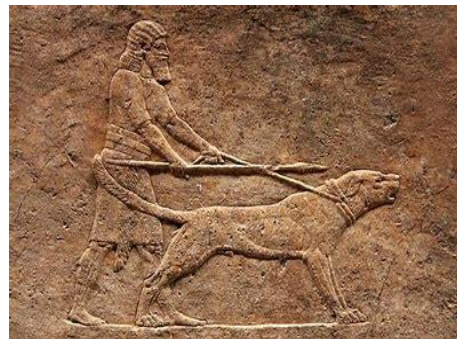
And now let us look at our exposed fourth pearl!

There we see several illustrations of hunters with quivers, bows and arrows and a large herd surrounded by lions. This signifies the major problem which the Egyptians had in combating the lions which were at that stage attacking the large number of rich herds owned by the Egyptians.



Look more to the right of this scene and you will see the pastures already enclosed with walls on which lie the heads of bulls, some with the horns pointing upwards, some downwards and some sideways, all signifying that the herds, before the large pastures were enclosed, were always in great danger and were completely defenseless. At each corner of the walls you see a large dog, ready to fight, sometimes standing, sometimes lying down. The name given by the ancient Egyptians to this guard dog was Pas, also Pastshier (guardian of the pasture).

Even farther to the right, you again see the shepherd king Shivin (Sphinx) with a gigantic dog at his side and, in front of the dog, the remains of a lion. More to the right but a little higher up, we see the same dog with images of the sun and the moon below him. What does this mean?



Listen! Our Sphinx was king of the shepherds and had in fact one of the largest dogs. No lion or panther could be sure of escaping him alive. For a long time, this dog protected Sphinx' herds but when the dog died of old age, the king, out of respect and his wish to preserve his memories of him, decided to immortalize his dog by naming a constellation in the southern sky after him. He christened the constellation the Great Dog, in memory of his loyal service in guarding the king's herds for many years. The fact that the king gave his dog a place among the stars is indicated by the sun and the moon positioned underneath the belly of the dog. *Every cluster of stars under which the sun and the moon can be seen serves as a symbolic reminder in the night sky of some great or important event.*



Nowadays a very large, watchful dog - especially in this country where there are almost no ferocious wild animals left - is no longer of special importance, but in ancient Egypt, where there were large packs of rapacious beasts and even in some parts of present-day Egypt where there still are a few, a large, strong, courageous dog was a prime necessity. Firstly, a dog like that was a very loyal guardian of the flocks and herds. His sustenance was very simple to provide as this large canine breed fed on countless mice and they were never in short supply in this land. They also consumed large grasshoppers by the thousand every day. Just once a day they did receive some milk and this gesture ensured that the dogs remained faithful to the herd.

As well as the large dogs, also a race of smaller dogs well accepted by the ancient Egyptians, called Mal pas (small dog). These were the noisy ones as Porosit means in their ancient tongue 'alarm or noise maker'. If any intruder came close to a house or a herd, the small dogs began to bark which alerted the large ones so that they then filled the air with intense barking. The wild animals respected them and promptly left the scene.

Quite often small dogs also guarded the poultry and their chicks, a task for which they were specially trained. Poultry-keeping was an innovation of Sphinx who domesticated the birds, showing the Egyptians how tasty their meat and their grilled or boiled eggs were. In this way he taught the already very large population about new foods and species, whose roasted meat and eggs tasted very good - otherwise there would not have been a 'chicken war' later - this was even mentioned by the Greek historian Herodotus in a mythical way.

Our Sphinx, who immortalized the great dog in the skies, also gave the Little Dog a place among the stars,



giving it the name Porishion (Procyon). Close by you also find the old Kokla (lucky hen); later this constellation received the name Peleada, also Peleadza, and based on a Greek fable was given the name **Pleiades** by the Greeks. (The seven sisters)

Here at the very top of the pearl you can see the detail quite well engraved, and you can consequently judge how intelligent our Sphinx was. It was not his main purpose to remind his followers constantly about his dogs and chickens using easily recognizable constellations but rather to teach them to use the stars to measure the passage of time.

It was also Sphinx who at Dia Daira (Diaethria) set down the first zodiac (Sadiasc = for the workers), he was the first to discover it in the firmament and gave the constellations names according to currently visible phenomena or events taking place in his country at a particular time - as we shall soon see revealed when we examine the fifth pearl!"

The Divisions of Time on the Fifth Pearl

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol. 4: Ch 205 by Jakob Lorber

(Raphael:) "Just pay attention; here is the fifth pearl! I have already shown you how these ancient relics should be handled and how they should be removed from their crust. I therefore intend to reveal the last three pearls just by using my willpower. Look! - The fifth pearl is already revealed to us!

Look here at the zodiac of Diaethria as it is engraved on the pearl's most polished and most expansive surface! There is a colossal temple; 365 massively dimensioned columns carry an equally massive arch of reddish granite ashlar, constructed most skillfully with great precision and very strongly in accordance with the best building practice. The highest point on the arch is at a height equivalent to sixty-six men. The whole arch has exactly 365 apertures, which are so precisely positioned that during a period of dominance of any one constellation where the sun is present that its light falls precisely at the mid-day onto the center line of a column standing vertically in the center of the temple. The light coming through the other apertures also fell onto the altar at different times during the day, but it did not pass cut the center line, being one or more degrees to one side or the other.

This most meaningfully constructed arch still stands, although somewhat ravaged by the tooth of time. It will stand for a long time yet and serve astronomers with its guidelines.

You ask: What actual use did the great Sphinx have in mind when he built this arch with the utmost precision in the world? - Previously there had been no system for keeping time. The small difference in shorter or longer days was hardly noticed. The moon was still the most reliable timekeeper. In Diaethria, the town where the workers became lethargic due to hard discipline, it was necessary to have a reliable time-keeping system both day and night. Our Sphinx made this



arch for that purpose and to ensure an orderly way of life. It did, however, take him ten years and a hundred thousand workers to complete.

The arch was of course very wide and at intervals of every 30 or 31 round apertures the symbol of one of the twelve-star signs was painted on it normally in red. Above each, the constellation was faithfully depicted at the top in white. You can see here on the pearl that the internal outline of the arch has been clearly and finely engraved then rubbed with a dark red color. You can now just imagine what an energetically motivated spirit our Sphinx was and the unlimited respect the peoples of Egypt had for him! In consequence, he only had to make a signal and hundreds of thousands of people would begin to busy themselves. The most extraordinary work was then raised from the ground as if by magic!

The wise people in the nation he made into teachers and priests. He established schools everywhere to teach all manner of subjects which were useful to people in their work and their ambitions. The supreme scholarship of divinity could, however, only be undertaken in Kar nag at Korak and finally, in secrecy, the ultimate test, at Abu Simbel."

Then the old innkeeper Marcus asked the angel, interrupting his explanation: "Dearest friend, while you are in full flow explaining your pearls, could you not also tell us the strange background to the Sphinx which, half woman and half animal, gave mankind on pain of life or death its famous riddle – namely, which animal is it that walks in the morning on all fours, at midday on two feet and in the evening on three? A man who could not solve the riddle was slain by the sphinx; while, on the other hand, someone who could solve it was allowed to kill the sphinx! - Is there any part of this that is in fact true or not?"

The Sixth Pearl - depictions of the pyramids, the obelisks, and the Sphinx

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol. 4: Ch 206 by Jakob Lorber

Raphael says: "Look at this, the sixth pearl here will answer your question! Here we have it fully revealed; what do you see when you first look at it?"

Marcus says: "Again I see the colossal image of Sphinx and some pyramids. In front of the most imposing of there are two pointed columns, called obelisks. At the side of the great pyramid, in reality perhaps a few hundred paces away from it – impossible to determine precisely from the engraving - there is again a quite colossal statue to be seen. It has the head and hands of a woman, as well as well-defined female breasts. Where the chest ends at the stomach, the indistinct body of an animal begins. Behind this strange statue there is an extended circular wall enclosing the whole vast meadow. It appears to form a complete integral unit. - What does all this mean?"

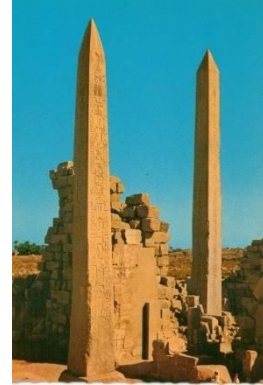
Raphael says: "The colossal image with breasts represents the very same Sphinx, which the people, to honor their great benefactor, erected of their own initiative using the best stonemasons and builders and also at their own very considerable cost. *The great pyramid with the two obelisks bore the teaching - 'Man, know thyself!'*. The interior had large chambers and long passages running in all directions, which contained all kinds of odd devices to



facilitate self-knowledge and, as a result, a true appreciation of the supreme spirit of God. Sometimes these devices looked quite gruesome, but they very rarely missed the mark. The other pyramids are mainly only signposts to the underground places containing many sarcophagi, these were permanently walled off, as was explained earlier.

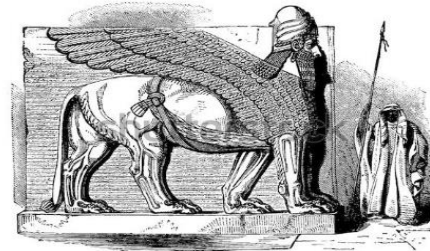
Built at that time, however, there are still many pyramids and all kinds of temples along the exceedingly long Nile valleys, which were built very much later by the Pharaohs during the time of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob. These are not recorded here, only those which were built under Sphinx rule.

Pyramidal was the original ancient name and means: 'Give me wisdom!' and the two-pointed columns called obelisks signify that 'the pure seek to find the exalted, the beautiful and the pure'. 'Belo' actually means 'white' but, because the completely white color signified for the ancient Egyptians 'pure, exalted and beautiful', its use was also intended to indicate 'exaltation, purity and beauty'.



The positive influence of these schools soon became known over a wide area and foreigners began to attend them. There were so many strangers that they could not be accommodated and supplied with their needs. As a result, our Sphinx, towards the end of his reign, hatched an ominous plan to keep the foreigners away and ensure that fewer of them would attend the schools he had established. But what was his method?

Here on this pearl, you see the half-person, half-animal statue. It was hollow and inside it a man could climb a spiral staircase, enter the head, and speak loudly and clearly through its funnel-shaped mouth, which was directed downwards. The strength of the voice was such that it seemed in all seriousness as if the colossal statue could talk.



www.shutterstock.com · 1381074437

Now when the foreigners came there to be accepted into the school, they were directed by a servant to stand, one by one, at a certain place in front of the statue, which was said to be dead on the outside but alive on the inside. Everyone who wanted to become a disciple of the pyramids received a puzzling question about life and death from the exalted Sphinx. If the visitor was able to solve the riddle he was to be accepted and then also allowed to ask the statue a counter-question. If the statue could not give him a satisfactory answer, the visitor was then allowed to destroy it and, so to speak, murder it.

The question was, however, given to each client three days earlier to ponder over. On the third day however, when they received the same question delivered by the mouth of the statue on pain of life and death, it is certain that nobody dared to reply. They all humbly withdrew, paid the fee required and travelled back to their often quite far distant homeland.

Sometime later, as a myth has it, a Greek was successful in solving the old riddle; but for a hundred thousand others this is a fable which deserves no credibility! The famous riddle was solved in fact by Moses, who did not however

destroy the statue as, although it is somewhat ravaged by the passage of time, it can still be seen today.

Of course, the interior design can no longer be inspected as is completely full of sand and mud because the Nile severely breaches its banks normally every hundred years but sometimes even after two centuries have elapsed. The result is that in the narrow canyons the waves rise more than thirty meters above the normal water level. Much land is laid to waste and made infertile as a huge amount of gravel, sand and mud is dumped on top of once beautiful pastures.

After the reign of Sphinx there were two Nile floods when waves covered the peaks of the pyramids. There was a similar flood, 870 years ago, when the temple of Abu Simbel was nearly half hidden in sand and silt with the result that it has since been impossible to cleanse it and some other memorials of all the sand and mud. The same is true of our puzzling statue; on the inside it is full of solidified mud and sand nobody can remove! So, my dear Marcus, that is the truth about the puzzling sphinx! - Are you now clear about it?"

Marcus says: "As the two thousand years passed, did nobody have the courage to allow the sphinx to ask him the prepared question at the risk of his life? If he were he to have been asked, what would have happened if he, quite understandably, could not solve the riddle?"

Raphael says: "At the spot where the applicant was standing, there was a pit into which he would quickly fall under the ground. Once at the bottom some servants would have taken him to the school by underground passageways as a reward for his bravery, even though he had not solved the riddle correctly. He would not then escape again until he had been perfected as a person. However, that never happened and at times when the riddle was solved, that ancient escape route silted and sanded up so that it became completely unserviceable. In any case the first shepherd kings and their peoples had long since been defeated by a Phoenician nation so that the pharaohs, even in the time of Abraham, were already Phoenicians.

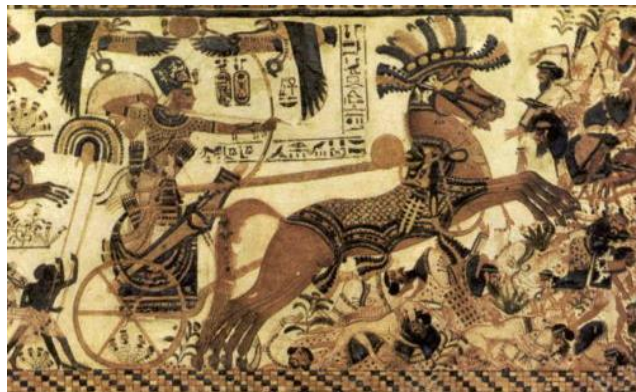
No more about that. We shall now move on to the seventh and last pearl!"

The Constellations on the Seventh Pearl - the collapse of Egyptian culture. The story of the seventh pearl.

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol. 4: Ch 207 by Jakob Lorber

(Raphael:) "Look, there it is! What do you see on it? - You see something, but you do not know what it is; on this very beautiful pearl all the constellations have been drawn and rubbed with a brownish red pigment. It has been well preserved in its crust until now.

We cannot learn too much from this pearl, which is of great significance, but we can still infer from it that our Sphinx knew the stars in the firmament well and that



he was certainly the first to arrange the constellations into a proper system. He also gave names to the signs of the zodiac which are still used to this day!

Before his reign the ancient Egyptians seemed to be quite unskilled in making drawings and writing descriptions. They also lacked self-knowledge and were even more deficient in their knowledge of God. However, our Sphinx made an incredibly forceful effort to bring order into all this and, out of what had previously been a wild nomadic tribe, he created one of the most educated and supremely wise nations on this whole earth, a fact that of course made many other people envious as time went by. Because foreigners were greatly enamored of the extraordinary hold which culture had over that country and its people, everything they saw seemed to be wonderful to them in a heavenly way so that once they had arrived there, they could not bear to leave again.

The more they began to travel to Egypt, the more they settled there. Thus, the early subjugation of the ancient people and their rulers mainly took place quite peacefully.

Sphinx heirs were increasingly softer and more spoilt people. They lived a life of luxury, sheltered by the fame of their forefathers and to a large degree left the business of governance to its own devices. The result of this was that soon the immigrants, who were tougher in character, were readily elected by the natives as the leaders chosen to rule over them - all of this without bloodshed.

To some extent this was all well and good, but the native peoples did not gain any great advantage from this change as the foreign rulers ('varion'; badly translated pharaohs) very soon became militant and true tyrants in oppressing the people. Only a few people had access to the schools and the lessons still being taught there were a far cry from earlier teachings. This was also the reason why the former purity of truth developed into the most absurd idolatry shrouded by impenetrable darkness obscuring the ancient culture of the country so that - even for men of great wisdom - it was hardly to be found any more.

The reason why these seven pearls are of such incalculable value is that they originate from an era when Egypt had reached the peak of its spiritual development. It is therefore impossible to cherish them too highly!"

One of the Moors asks how it happened that these pearls ended up being lost in the sands of the river Nile.

Raphael says: "I have already told you how the Nile at certain times floods catastrophically! About 567 years after the Sphinx the level of our river rose to an inexplicable height, in narrow places reaching more than one hundred and sixty meters above its normal maximum! All the cities at the bottom of valleys were completely inundated for five weeks and it was then that the pearls, including the buildings where they were kept, were swept away by the force of the waves, and were buried by sand and mud of the same kind as the blocks from which the buildings had been constructed.

During the period of nearly three thousand years when they were buried in the sand, they became incrustated as you first saw them. I removed the crusty shells, initially in quite a normal way and later in a miraculous manner which is only possible for me.

Now you also know this, and you have in these seven pearls seven books, which can now and for all time offer you quite a complete description of this

country which is also partly inhabited by you yourselves. Therefore, keep them safe as each of these pearls is worth much more than a vast kingdom!

For the time being Oubratouvishar, as the wisest one in your company, should have them in his safekeeping. When he departs this world, he must choose someone who is worthy of protecting this incalculable treasure. Woe to any unworthy scoundrel who tries to acquire them for himself out of avarice!

I, as the messenger and executor of the will of the One seated there, believe I have performed enough miracles to strengthen your belief. If they are not enough, nothing further could ever suffice! Do you now believe that it is that One sitting there in whose name the great Sphinx and his two ancestors built the vast rock temple at Abu Simbel?"

All of them say; "Yes, yes, yes, your miracle worker and messenger of the Lord, we confirm our belief with our lives and with the utmost conviction!"

With that the angel left them and Cyrenius asked Me if this quite factual history of Egypt were also a necessary feature of the gospel coming from My mouth.

I said to Him: "One of the most important! After a few centuries all kinds of investigators will appear and research every aspect of this land. They will find many things which Raphael spoke about. This will confuse them a great deal, just as it would also greatly confuse you and even your offspring. This completely true revelation will however point you in the right direction. At some time in the future, I will again inspire followers to reveal these ancient riddles to people of an inquiring mind. - But now we ourselves must go over to them and give them the true gospel from the heavens." . . .



[The Great Pyramid Mystery: The Oldest Cover-Up In History \(youtube.com\)](https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=...)

The Purpose of the Lord's Incarnation – Moors as examples of true Primordial Humanity

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol. 4 Ch 210 by Jakob Lorber

Note: Moors are descendants of Cain not Noah

Jesus is speaking to the Moors: "I shall address many words to you, not just a few! I will not give you any new laws, merely reaffirm the old ones, which I Myself, at the beginning of your time on earth, engraved indelibly in your hearts.

In truth, I principally came into this world to guide mankind - which had completely abandoned all My original ordinances - by means of teachings, examples and deeds, so that it would return to the primordial state in which the first human beings found themselves to be the true masters of all the other creatures.

These people with white skins therefore need My teaching and My deeds so that they can recognize, who He is, their teacher, and what He requires of them. However, you still live in your splendid primordial state. Your school of life begins with the right means in the right place. You start to teach the people initially to be people, choosing what is of prime importance for them to know. In future the white-skinned people must do likewise, and I am now showing them the way to achieve this.

There will however be many difficulties, many teachings and deeds and a long time will pass, before these white people can reach your present level. They are the stray ones, the perverse ones, and the lost souls, who must be rehabilitated again. They are sick and therefore need the skills of a doctor who can cure them.

I could also have come to you, as you are now incomparably better than the white men, but you never required My presence. However, I now need your presence here as proof of My primordial ordinance and I therefore used My will to urge and finally to compel you to come, so that these white men can see what man is and should be in his primordial state.

Therefore, I now ask you to show these people a few examples of your still very real primordial humanity, in order to teach a lesson to these your brothers, many of whom are blind and on the wrong track! There are a few of them who are quite near to perfection but not one of them has developed as a man to a degree which makes him comparable to the least perfect one in your community! - Out of love for Me, will you do this?"

Oubratouvishar says: "Oh Lord, Your love, benevolence and mercy already fill all those gaps in infinite space in which new creations will praise Your most holy name in profound humility, but only after eternities have elapsed. What do You wish us to do in humble obedience to Your holy will? Anything! Oh Lord, just give us Your instructions!"

I reply: "Now then, first show us your primordial control over water as an element and walk on its surface as if on firm, dry ground, as well as your great agility on wet grass!"

Immediately the leader called upon his coal-black companions, some sixty of them, and asked Me, if they would suffice. I agreed and sixty people of both genders went to the sea and continued to walk on its surface as they had on dry land. Finally, they demonstrated some speed exercises and sped around so quickly

on the quite calm surface that a swallow diving down at high speed would not have caught up with them. Within a few moments they were so far away from us that we could not see them any longer. Then within a few moments they arrived back very near to the shore with a noise like a hurricane.

The hair on Cyrenius' head stood up as the sixty Nubians hurtled towards the shore as if on skids. They only came to about fifty feet from the beach and stopped suddenly. Only their leader came to me on land breathing easily and asked if there were any other feats I would like to see performed on the water."

The Power of the Moors to Control the Element Water.

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol. 4 Ch 211 by Jakob Lorber

Jesus is speaking: "Only a few things more from your knowledge, for example what do you do on the water when a burning hot wind is blowing and how do you catch fish!"

The leader returns quickly to his sixty companions and tells them My wish. Suddenly they all fall on their faces directly onto the surface of the water, lying there for a few moments like dry wood. Soon they became very restless and, stretching out to their full length, they began to spin very quickly on the axes of their bodies.

(The Lord:) "They do this to ensure that all their body parts are suitably moistened at all times so that they are not burned or even reduced to ashes by the fiery wind, the Kamb'sim ('where should I flee to?'); since the Kamb'sim (also Kam beshim = 'where do I flee to now?') is by far the hottest wind in the deserts of Nubia and Abyssinia. The 'Samun' (for 'pitch' = the wind melts pitch in the ground) is not nearly as hot as the Kamb'sim. Even less hot is the 'Giroukou' (the south-easterly wind blowing over the pastures), since the wind coming over the great pastures or 'Giri', which lie precisely in that direction in relation to Memphis, already bore that name from ancient times. However, both these winds, not the Kamb'sim, were so hot that people sheltered in the dampness of the caves.

The ritual they are now showing you, they only perform during the Kamb'sim. If it continues to blow for a long time or increases in intensity, only then will they begin to dive beneath the surface, as they are demonstrating now. However, they can never stay under water for too long, since their strong inner and outer life spheres make the specific gravity of their bodies lighter than that of the water.

They are now sitting on the water and in this position, they will show us how they catch fish! Look how they use their strong willpower to attract fish from far away towards them! They then lift them by hand out of the water and place them according to their needs into their open aprons, which they always wear around their loins, and, remaining in the seated position, they will quickly return to us on shore. Their sails and their oars only exist in their minds. As soon as they are required to make some quick movement on the water, they wish for it with their undoubtedly steadfast belief, and everything happens as they want it to happen!

Look, they now have finished fishing and will travel in the seated position over the sea and will reach the shore with the speed of an arrow! See how they are

now setting off and arriving on the shore! They are quickly standing up and bringing their catch here to us.

Marcus, ask your sons to look after the many very fine fish and put them in water, not to let them go bad!"

When the black people come to us with their aprons full of living fish, Marcus himself leads them to a fish tank where they unload their fish, several hundreds of them. After that they again quickly returned to Me.

The leader immediately addresses the white people present as follows: "This feat, my white brothers, that we have just performed – does it appear to you to be totally strange that has never seen before? However, we are very simple people of nature and everything we have just shown you on the water before your eyes is very natural to us in the same way that seeing, hearing, smelling, and feeling are to you.

The perverse man already hardened in his soul will also become much heavier physically and his body is like a stone which does not float on water because it is heavier. We, however, are like wood within which the innermost spirits of life are already much freer than those of stone which are still burdened by severe judgement.

Pay attention, let a man with a mature soul come here, one who should not however have ever felt any arrogance or power-hungry self-love stir in his breast. If he enters the water, I will guarantee that he will not sink! Place next to him a power-crazed and very self-loving person on the liquid element and he will sink like a stone! If he were to be very fat, however - which is rarely the case with very self-loving people - then the fat would keep at least two thirds of his body afloat above the water, but this assumes he would be really obese. However, if his flesh is in a normal state, he will sink like a stone.

With us, water is regarded as a good test for the genuine honesty of a person's mind. If the water will not support a man properly, his soul has most probably suffered some damage. The element will not then be favorable towards him and provide him with the necessary service. As we have moved with obvious facility on top of the water and have also shown that the animals living in the water have been subservient to us since the very beginning of our existence. Similarly, this was the case with primordial man in his time. For them streams, lakes and even the sea were no obstacles to prevent them walking across the whole world; they did not need ships or bridges. However, you people are often completely swamped by the water as well as your ships and bridges - and not one single mosquito obeys your commands! How far away are you therefore from genuine humanity!

You must have all kinds of weapons to put your enemies to flight while we have never used force. Even today we do not have any other tools than a cutting knife made from bone which we use to make our huts and our clothes in quite a laborious way. Despite this we have never had to walk around naked, and we never complain about it. If we receive essential tools from you to take home, we will use them with neighborly love enhanced by your gift. They will never serve us as weapons, of that you may rest assured!

Now it is your turn to experiment on the water, and show us, how highly competent you already are in your lives!"

This type of language secretly got up the noses of the Romans a little, but they were able to remain in control of their feelings in quite a well-mannered way."

The Dominance of the Moors over Animals

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol. 4 Ch 212 by Jakob Lorber

The leader asked Me however, whether there was anything else unusual which they should demonstrate to the white people.

I said: "Yes, My dear, old friends! Look up there, about five thousand paces towards the midday sun near the lake you see a hill which drops off very steeply towards the water. It is infested with very poisonous snakes and adders, and you can chase these beasts away for Me! All of us will accompany you to the spot!"

The leader said: "Almighty Lord! As far as their removal is concern, it will only cost You a single thought and the hill will be free of all vermin for all time. However, if this is also an example of a power with which primordial man is endowed, we shall do this, as we do everything else, in accordance with Your supremely holy will!"

I say: "It is self-evident that I only ask it for the sake of example; therefore proceed!"

We broke up and moved quickly over to the hill I had described, reaching it after half an hour. When we arrived, the quite extensive hill was alive with all the snakes and adders. They began to hiss and whistle almost intolerably so that one could hardly grasp one's own words. All the thousands of these creatures hurried into the sea and swam like arrows over the broad swell of the water. Within a few moments the hill was clear.

The leader came to Me and said: "Lord, all the snakes and adders are gone, from the oldest to the ones most recently hatched from eggs. However, there are still as many unborn ones in their eggs! Who is to remove them from the many holes and hidden nests? If they are not removed, within six months this hill will be covered with them again as it was until now! Who will then cleanse the hill?"

I reply: "Do you have any means to eradicate these too?"

Their leader says: "Except for the *Ich nei maon* ('has no poison') we do not know any other means! One would have to heat up the whole hill for some time and the effect would be to destroy the nests and eggs by natural means. The better way would of course be Your will or that of Your servant. We only have the option to stay here and suffocate the vermin using the influence of our permanent external lifestyle – but this we cannot do."

I say: "Leave it at that! You have already performed your miracles and I do not ask any more of you. I will take care of it! As this hill has now been purged of its evil inhabitants, we will climb up and you will offer us further examples of your abilities as human beings!"

We then climbed the hill which had room for at least 2,000 people on its top. When we reached the top, about a thousand feet above the surface of the water, long lines of cranes took to the skies.

Then I said to the leader: "My friend, are these birds too still submissive to you?"

The leader said: "These are a foreign species we have never seen before. However, I do not have the least doubt that they are also sensitive to our will and will act accordingly!"

The leader now looked at his companions and said: "Join with me in your minds so that we can fulfil the wish of the Lord!"

As soon as the leader had spoken these words, the cranes began to descend and were on the hill among the black people in a few moments, but they avoided the white men. Shortly afterwards the leader indicated to the cranes to continue their flight and they flew away.

Now a pair of enormous vultures flew high in the sky and began circling above us.

The leader then said to the white people: "Call these hovering vultures down here!"

Cyrenius replied to the leader: "But why make this request to us - it seems to be a little arrogant? You already know that we spoiled people are not able to perform such primordial human tasks! Just fulfil the will of the Lord; everything else the Lord will take care of as far as possible as we ourselves also will in accordance with his teachings.

The leader says: "Do you really think that I put the request to you white people to call down the two floating vultures above us, motivated by a feeling of self-aggrandizement? Oh, you are quite wrong to have that opinion of me! I put the request to you my white brothers, to remind you more emphatically of your great perversity - for which you are of course finally little or not at all to be blamed - but nevertheless it cannot do you any harm!

How should we be able to sing the praises of our natural attributes?! Do you boast about your vision or your hearing?! If we had been able to take a pride in these traits that seem to you to be so wonderful, we would have lost them long ago. However, as this is an impossibility for us, we still retain these apparently remarkable attributes, proof of which you white people will shortly see! - Come down, you two dwellers in the skies!"

When the leader had finished speaking out quite loudly, the two mighty vultures shot down like arrows and landed gently and clearly in a friendly way on the leader's right hand, just as if they had been properly trained in a menagerie.

At that moment a magpie flew by, and the leader instructed one of the vultures to catch it unharmed and bring it to him. Like an arrow the gigantic vulture shot after the fluttering magpie and brought it quickly back to the leader without attempting to fly off. The vulture was holding the screeching magpie firmly in its claws without harming it, however, and only released his grip when its master took hold of it. The leader then stroked the two vultures and released them too and the two large birds of prey quickly rose high into the air and went off to search out a succulent victim to gorge themselves on.

The magpie, however, was given to Cyrenius by the black leader as a reminder of an event which appeared to be rather wonderful to the governor and the other Romans or Jews.

Cyrenius handed the magpie to his two daughters, who were also present, for them to care for it and said to Me: "But Lord, it is absolutely fabulous what

these black people are capable of – provided that Your will did not secretly play a small part in all this?!”

I replied: “I said to you before, that I would let them carry on completely on their own! Why do you doubt this now? Just have patience and I will have them do a few other things which will make you feel quite faint!”

The Control Exercised by the Moors over Plant Life and the Elements.

Ref: “The Great Gospel of John” Vol. 4 Ch 213 by Jakob Lorber

Then I call again to Oubratouvishar, saying to him: “Show us now, how much you are familiar with the air and its power as in the beginning it was given to man in his pure state to rule also over the spirits of the air, so that they would assist him in any circumstances, in which he would need their services! Show us therefore to what degree you are still blessed with this attribute from primordial life!”

Immediately the leader called over ten of his most reliable companions and instructed them to form a circle round him with each man’s right foot covering the left foot of his neighbor and with their hands outstretched towards him. This was done immediately, and our leader began to twist around, then rose upwards and floated completely off the ground and about the height of a tall man in the air.

In this position he asked me if he should go even higher, or if this was sufficient proof.

I said: “That is sufficient, please come back down!”

Immediately the ten left their circle and the leader quickly returned to ground level again, bowed deeply before Me and asked if he should show Me anything more.

I said: “How do you uproot trees and move large rock clusters from the spot?”

The leader said: “Lord, our country has a significant shortage of big strong trees and only the higher mountains are blessed with them. On the high-altitude pastures which the Kamb’sim cannot reach and on which our herds graze, we sometimes find old Bohahania trees which normally serve as a habitat for the apes. Here and there we also find cypress, myrrh, wild dates, and buck- and chicken-bread. That is already the complete list of the trees which grow in our country.

On the plains and in the remote windy corners of our country, only noble dates, figs, the ouraniza (orange) and the semenza (seed- filled apples or pomegranates) and several useful perennial shrubs grow which supply us with the building materials for our huts.

To uproot them really does not require any extraordinary power, although we have not yet tried our strength on the stronger trees. However, we have no doubt that they, just like the heaviest and largest rocks, must succumb to our will. Here on this mountain grows an immense tree, the name of which we of course do not know as well as nothing about its other properties. We are however prepared to find out whether it is possible to uproot it using our willpower alone!”

Old Marcus says: “Now, most obedient servant of all the lords in this world! This is a cedar at least five hundred years old! Seven men would hardly be able to join hands and embrace its girth and four very strong seasoned loggers would

have difficulty in chopping this tree down in two days. Now six men and seven women wish to go over there and to uproot this tree without a mattock or an axe?! Now, this story, if not secretly supported by the almighty will of the Lord, will surely not become a tale to tell!"

I say: "Just be patient, My old warrior! This time too my will shall not be revealed in any way and yet within a short time the tree will be dislodged from the earth with its roots."

While speaking to Marcus, the black people very gently placed their hands on the trunk so that the right hand of one Moor always covered the left hand of his or her neighbor. They remained absolutely quiet for several minutes in this position round the tree. After this time had elapsed, the tree initially began to turn very slowly and, as it did, a tremendous cracking sound could be heard. All those present began to be extremely astonished and nobody understood how to explain this phenomenon, even if only in part.

When the tree, complete with thirteen people lightly clasping it, began to turn more and more it was obvious that the tree with its root cluster and the Moors were already rotating freely in mid-air. Then some spectators, especially the women, began to scream for fear that the falling tree would crush some of the Moors surrounding it.

However, I said to the fearful ones: "Never fear; the tree will be placed very gently on the ground, and nobody will come to any harm as it falls!"

With that they all relaxed and at that moment the clasping Moors released the tree, jumped down the mountain and came back to us. Simultaneously, the tree started to sway back and forth, finally reached its natural center of gravity and after a few moments very softly lay down on the ground.

When the tree had been uprooted in this way, I also showed the Moors a rock weighing at least five thousand hundred-weight [alias centners (1 centner = 50kg) and said to the leader: "Rise up this rock and place it in the same hole which was created when the tree was uprooted!" (equates to approximately 10,000 lbs.)

Quickly the same Moors went to the rock and embraced it just as they had earlier clasped the tree. The rock rose into the air even more quickly than the tree. As it was larger in size, it was of course embraced by a larger number of Moors, but it was clear to everyone that a thousand of the strongest men would still be totally unable to lift the weight of this rock.

In a very few minutes, the rock was standing firmly in the hole and the Moors hurried back to us. The leader then asked Me if there was something else, they should do.

However, I pretended that I was thinking something over, which the leader immediately noticed, saying to Me: "Oh, some highly significant event will surely take place as You are seeking Your own council! Otherwise, it would have been our opinion that everything is exceedingly clear to a god from the beginning of time as to what He wishes to do!"

I reply: "Yes, that is so! But I was only offering you some respite as what I still wish you to perform for Me has always been your least favorite task. You need to rest after these two demanding tasks which took a heavy toll on your interactive external sphere of your lives. Now refreshed you must show us how you prepare a

fire and are also masters of this element! Go start a fire and in so doing demonstrate that you rule that element!"

Straightaway all the Moors present formed a semicircle around a large bush which had already been very dry for some time and stretched their hands and fingers like rays towards its center. Within a few moments the bush began to smolder; the smoke became increasingly intense and suddenly the bush burst into flames. When, however, the bush was burning well with leaping flames, all the Moors formed a closed circle around the fire and lay face down on the ground. In a moment the fire went out so completely that not one single glowing little spark was to be seen anywhere in the whole of the half-burnt bush.

The Moors then came back and asked Me whether they had performed their task satisfactorily. I gladly testified that they had. They immediately wished to hear more teachings from My mouth, but I indicated to them that they should wait a little, as I felt I should first explain their abilities to the white people. The moors were satisfied with that, and we returned to our tables."

The Miraculous Power of Resurrection- rebirth of the soul

Re: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol. 4:ch 225 by Jakob Lorber

Jesus is speaking: "The ability of these Moors to feel and to have insight can extend over a large area if they are very excited and they can therefore easily determine which spirit's children are approaching them. They are not, however, able to recognize a deeper spiritual being in someone, but they will certainly know the true nature of his soul!

When they arrived here this morning, they had already recognized My soul and its wisdom and power from quite a distance, but they could not evaluate the spirit within the soul as God's spirit can only be recognized by another spirit coming from God. I first had to light a spark in their hearts through My word; and when that spark found its proper food in abundance in a perfected soul, it became more intense. They recognized Me in My spirit and are now more certain than you about the being in Me with whom they are dealing.

All this is the result of a perfected soul. With a few exceptions, your souls in themselves will never achieve a comparable level of cognition, but they will be purified by My overpowering love for you to ensure their suitability to accept My spirit completely. If you are then reborn in spirit, it will not be your achievement, but it will be only through My love and My benevolence and compassion, that you will be able to complete more important tasks than these Moors, but not using a power generated by your perfected souls, but using the majesty of My spirit to permeate your weak souls which will of course be forever strengthened in the process!

However, I do not want to make miracle workers out of you, but true benefactors of mankind! If My spirit is aroused in you to become fully active, your minds will be filled with light and brightness and you will therefore quite normal paths in nature to learn about her powers and make her spirits serve you - or alternatively provide for you the spiritual primordial substances specifically required to achieve the great worldly advantages in life, which you should use in your benevolence to poorer human beings!

If the great advantages towards which My spirit will lead you are utilized in accordance with My ordinances, the blessings they bring shall be increased a thousand-fold in all ways. If, however you in time begin to use them selfishly and in contravention of My ordinances, they will become the breeding ground for mankind of every conceivable evil on earth.

What I am now saying to you, I will also repeat to all those who will follow you in a thousand or even two thousand years, give or take a few years. After that another stratum will begin to ferment and till the earth, either with or without mankind, as the earth is large and there are many spirits on it who are waiting for judgement on their destiny.

Everyone who is reborn can also perform miracles - not as these Moors do without knowing My name or My will – *but fully respecting My name and My will and My unchangeable order. If someone were to wish for something different, it could not happen as My spirit within him would not support him. It would only be a selfish desire in the soul because the spirit's wishes could never be contrary to My will!*

However, the rebirth of the spirit in the soul does not cause the soul to lose its own free will and its perception in the sequences of major creations which will continue to go forth generated by My love and by My wisdom, order, power, and strength."

The Composition of the Human Brain and Pyramids

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol. 4: Ch 232 by Jakob Lorber

Jesus is speaking: "Now we shall see if we are able to obtain a setup of little brain cell receptors to improve your understanding! Indeed, Raphael could fetch a couple of natural human heads from Rome for us as two major criminals have just been beheaded in Rome on the Capitol! However, the skulls of villains would help us very little or even not at all!

It is preferable that the angel should bring us four completely white and totally pure pebbles from any stream. From these we will try to produce a human brain, as far as this is possible with material things. - Raphael, go and bring us what is required!"

Raphael suddenly vanished for about seven moments but suddenly he was back with us and placed four completely snow-white pebbles in front of us, by that I mean in front of Me, on the table. Two were larger and two were smaller, corresponding to the larger frontal lobes of the brain for visual images and the smaller back lobes for the images of sound.

When the stones lay before Me in the right order, I touched them, and they became transparent like very pure rock crystal. I then breathed on them, and they broke into millions of little four-sided pyramids, each one consisting of three lateral faces and a base.

The two stones arranged on My right represented the brain in good order and the two to My left the brain with deficiencies caused by an inappropriate upbringing and other bad influences in later life, as is usually the case with people.

However, there were not only pyramids visible, but besides the few pyramids nearly all the three-dimensional forms, figures and types known to those skilled in measurement were to be seen and were even more easily distinguished

after I had breathed on them and thus enlarged them ten times. Now there were four very large assemblies lying as they had been arranged in front of the very surprised disciples at the table which Raphael of course had to enlarge considerably and very quickly for this purpose.

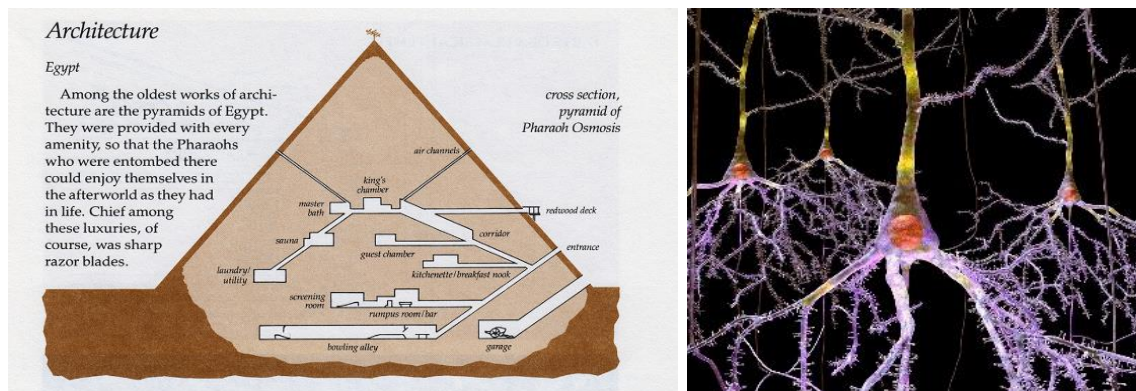
I said: "Now you can look at the receptor shapes for all four brain piles individually and easily distinguishable!"

Look we have here to the right the large frontal lobe made up of a number of regular pyramids, and also the small lobe at the rear with the same pyramids, - they are just a third of their size but still large enough to receive all the air vibration values required by the soul.

However, now look at the two piles on My left! There are already quite a number of different forms, as I mentioned before, and nowhere do they fit together properly; here and there, you see gaps which give rise to all kinds of misleading reflections as you will see later on. The rear lobe, very similar in size to the frontal one, also has receptors which are only one third as large as the frontal ones – and just look at the shapes!"

Now they all crowd together to look at the brain assemblies formed from the four pebbles which I had enlarged. Initially there were only the little pyramid receptor shapes to be seen, but without the inner lobe separations or the interconnection of the little receptors.

(The Lord:) "Once all of you have understood this as clearly as possible, I will divide the little receptors into cells by breathing on them again and will connect the receptors in each cell according to their polarity, then link the cells themselves and also the frontal lobe with the rear one so that the little receptors, no matter which type they are, can receive pictures and symbols."



Cyrenius is so amazed that he is not able to regain his composure and finally says: "Ah, I now understand! *The ancient Egyptians, who built their schools in the shape of pyramids, were most probably still primordially perfected people in their souls and therefore enlightened with the result that they could see their body's organic construction! These pyramid shapes, which are so important for people to recognize therefore had to be visible and this is why they chose this shape for their extraordinary schools. Of course, they also would have seen and studied the construction of each **brain cell pyramid** in great detail and would also have given the interior of each pyramid the same design with the largest scale, just as they visualized the organic construction of the brain cell pyramids!*

Therefore, a pyramid in its interior has a very large number of various passageways and chambers so that even a very erudite person could not possibly work out the purpose for which any one of them was designed! Lord, have I judged this correctly?!"

I say: "Completely right and correct; that is how it was. The Egyptians therefore also decorated the interiors especially with all kinds of symbols, scriptures, and pictures on the walls. These appropriately represented all kind of things which man in the flesh must survive or fight for on this earth and how he must get to know himself and how it is true love that is the focal point of all life."

About the growth of the Outer Life Sphere of Man

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol.4: Ch: 261 by Jakob Lorber

Jesus is speaking: "But the ability to talk to animals does not necessarily require to be Moors. Also, the whites can achieve this if they have completely purified themselves. Once a soul is completely pure and therefore also completely healthy and strong, it begins to push so to speak the excess of its outer-life-sphere over the borders of its body, and the more life-stronger it has become the further the reach.

This should be taken as someone imagining a still weakly glowing coal in a completely dark room. The piece of coal will now spread just enough light that one can hardly see where it lies. If one blows away the darkening ash as a so to speak soul-matter from its surface, the light will already become stronger and reach a little further, so that one begins to clearly recognize the immediate vicinity. If one increases the blowing more and more, from its light glowing surface there will be spreading sufficient light that one to some extent can begin to clearly discern the various items in the whole room. If the coal is then made white flame glowing, it will become quite bright in the whole room, and one will be able to distinguish all the items sufficiently illuminated according to their color.

It is the same with a pure soul. The glowing ash covered coal resembles a soul completely submerged in the flesh. It uses all its matt glowing life-fire to form the dark matter surrounding it, leaving as good as nothing for the formation of an outer-life-sphere! And such a very material soul can impossibly ever feel something about a special and higher property. In this case there is nothing about any mastery over all creatures, similar there is nothing regarding the seeing in the spheres of the soul-like life dimensions, nothing with the hearing of an inner spiritual voice and even less so the understanding of any animal or plant language, all things which were so familiar to the patriarchs like to you the most familiar outer form of things or any case. Since what should be lively illuminated by the spiritual outer-life-sphere of the soul, if it is supposed to be self-shining, cannot produce sufficient life-light-ether, to see itself and who it is?!

Such a soul in the end nearly does not know anything of its own existence, does not at all know its base, and if it hears anything spiritual about herself, it disgusts it; she frightens to a kind of fainting if it sees something which resembles anything of a departed soul, and despairs at the sight of great miracles. What should become of such a soul?

Ah, when however, a soul, after it has received a warranted message from somewhere or has been breezed spiritually by self-conviction and becomes life

glowing like the coal indicated above, it begins firstly to feel itself as a soul and recognizes the ground on which it is based. If the breezing becomes stronger and stronger, it, as itself lighter and lighter, will recognize her individuality more brightly, purer, and more discernible from matter, and her light will begin to reach beyond herself and will begin to illuminate her outer-life-sphere.

The more intense and the more constant the spiritual life winds kindle the soul, the more life-white-glowing and the further away beyond herself the outer life-light-sphere becomes illuminated and brighter, and whatever steps into the outer-life-light-sphere will also become soul-life illuminated and is soon and easily recognized and well assessed by the illuminating soul.

Once the soul has reached for itself the highest possible light, thus similar to the flaming and white-glowing coal, its outer-life-light-sphere, outgoing from only the soul, will have reached the furthest possible and most intensified expansion, by which means it already becomes a ruler of all creatures, because by means of such its outer-life-light-sphere it can engage in a perfectly intelligent and most powerful effectuating correspondence with all creatures standing close by."

The Shining outer Life Sphere of Moses and the Patriarchs

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol.4: Ch: 262 by Jakob Lorber

Jesus is speaking: "The old, devout patriarchs had such a strong outer-life-light sphere, that they were shining at night, also for the eyes of the flesh. Moses' soul shone by day because of his fiery love for God so bright, after he had to do with God on Sinai, that his face radiated more delightfully and brighter than the light of the sun at midday, and Moses had to cover his face with a threefold blanket, so that the other people could look at him. Moses' soul has afterwards reached the highest perfection among the people of this earth; therefore, all creatures had to obey him most precisely. He was standing in the most intelligent correspondence with all creatures, by that also found My will everywhere, showed it to the blind people and indicated to them precisely the way, on which every person could reach the perfection of his soul, if he only wanted it firmly enough. For this purpose, he founded a separate prophet school, which still exists today, but of course in the same manner as the new, false ark, since the real one by Moses has long since lost its power and effect.

If Moses also could have reached the rebirth of the spirit in his highly perfected soul, which he only can become part of, when I have risen just like Elijah, however without a fire carriage, this greatest of all prophets on this earth could have determined new orbits for all the stars, and the great suns would have to submit to his will, just like the waves of the red sea, and just like the hard granite rock had to give a rich water fountain where Moses wanted it; since he ordered the banned spirits of the rock, and they understood the tongue of Moses well and became active after recognizing his will.

That the old wise could not only correspond mainly with animals, but also with all plants and even with rocks and metals, with the water, with the air, with the fire and with all spirits of the earth, is testified by very trustworthy witnesses from the whole script, namely the book of the judges, the prophets, the five books of Moses and still a lot of other books and recordings and of course some already strongly distorted traditions of the people. The artificially constructed

conversations with grass, trees, rocks, and water by the Essenes in their miracle gardens, is nothing else than a bare imitation of what once existed in reality!

These blacks have now shown it to you from all angles, the state of power of an unspoilt human soul, and I Myself have now explained manifold the reason to you as clear as sunshine, and therefore I'm of the opinion that you can accept this an absolute truth, and this even more so, if I tell you that this has taken place with people in the past, still takes place and will take place in future.

At the same time, you still today have living proof with your shepherds, because some prudent shepherds guide their herds by peculiar names and noises, let them recognize their will and the herds suddenly act accordingly. Does the donkey or the ox, even if somewhat slow, not understand the signs of its master and guide completely? Who does not know that even the fierce lion always recognizes his benefactor and never, even in its fiercest rage, will harm him in any way? This proves, that the animals in their own way, also have an understanding, an appraisal and often a very sharp ability of recognition and at many opportunities indicate to people, awaiting dangers, by all kinds of gestures and often by striking contumacies and save people if they pay attention to it.

From where originated the haruspices (sacrifice interpreters) among the heathens who are still today want to recognize all kinds of things from the song and flight of birds and from the gesticulations of other animals? These are shadows of a former reality, of which we just spoke."

The Purpose of the Lord's Profound Precepts

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol.4: Ch: 263 by Jakob Lorber

Jesus is speaking: "I'm not explaining this to you to take you back to the primordial circumstances of the first people of the earth, but only therefore, to place you again on the level of pure knowledge while such occurrences still can take place, so that you do not need to believe this in a superstitious miraculous way, but rather to assess this according to the full and quite natural truth and act accordingly. Since if one day you would come with the spreading of My teaching to people like these blacks who are now before us, and you would see them committing actions which you just now have seen sufficiently, you would soon be overwhelmed to such an extent, that you would allow it to be preached another gospel by such miracle performing people and soon deviate from My ways and thereby hardly ever reach the rebirth of the spirit, instead of bringing My gospel to the foreign people.

However, if you know about everything how things were and took place in the world, still are and will happen, the danger to be misled cannot happen that easily, except you would allow yourself to be deceived by a newly awoken self-interest, which of course would, correctly concluded, cause your downfall.

You do not need to perfect your souls for the sake to be able to perform all the properties of the forefathers faithfully explained to you - since this does not give to any soul a true, blissful everlasting life because from now on every one of you has the very new reason to perfect and purify his soul, to reach, by the actual observance of My word, the conditional rebirth of the spirit in his entire soul. Whoever achieved this suddenly has more of the most wonderful abilities in himself than all the old fathers ever possessed despite all their soul perfection! He

will within one moment more easily view all-star-worlds and suns and even hear and understand their still most far away language, than the old seers and miracle performers could see and assess in their closest country vicinity.

Yes, they performed miracles, - but did not understand them. They were powerful but were not able to recognize the strength and could apply it only then correctly and useful, if by times they have been awakened by My penetrating spirit for it. They often also made use of their strength, even if it was not necessary, almost like the children who during their playful activities often apply more strength, which never ever can be of any use to them, except perhaps to exercise their natural strength.

However, it is completely different with the omnipotent strength of the spirit, once completely reborn into the soul, being inborn; since by that he enters in full unity of My infinite and eternal omnipotence, My love and My wisdom, insight, recognition and My will! Once he is in full possession of all this as My most true child, how could he still have a wish in himself, to effectuate things, which once the old fathers, just like these Moors now, could perform only piece by piece and imperfectly?!

That you are not capable of it anymore, is not due to your will, but the time and its wrong customs. Therefore, I now have come Myself, to give to you for the lost small paradise, the whole heaven of the purest and mightiest spirit out of Myself, and I think on your behalf, that you can be completely content with this!

Of course, to reach the spiritualization of your soul, it will require a lot of hard work and activity; and when it concerns the specific and extremely certain attainment of the biggest and highest property of life, you can endure a few things! Since all the wondrous properties of a perfected human soul and all the treasures of this earth, cannot be called a smallest dew drop in comparison to the large ocean of the world, when precisely following My word and will, awaiting you with much greater certainty than the physical death of your body, which in any way will embarrass you less, than it embarrasses you, to leave an old, rotten and every hour ready collapsing house and to move into a new house forever and ever, which cannot be damaged by any storms.

Verily I say it to you: All reborn out of My word and actions afterwards shall not feel the death of the body nor having anxiously premonitions about it like the world people and some animals, because they will voluntarily leave the body, when I, requiring them for higher purposes, call them from this world into My house! - Have you now taken all this to heart and understand it?"

Say all: "Yes, Lord, You our highest love, You our everything! Everything, everything we give for Your love, for Your endless big mercy, which You have given to us here! We surely would not know what to ask any more!"

Chapter 8: The Flood-Last Days



Warning of the Flood, Nephilim Man The Flood – The World becomes Highly Civilized before the Flood, Celestial and Mathematical Precision, The Prehistoric Alignment of World Wonders, The Flood Last Days, The pre-Noah Earth, The Great Flood, Creation was subject to Futility, The Real Consequence of original Sin, Man Begins Again, The Ark of Noah, The Table of Nations, The Mystery of the tower of Babel, Abraham’s Call and Migration, The World’s Hatred, Advanced Ancient Civilization on Earth, The Heavenly Father’s Warning to His Children. . .

Warning of the Flood - Worldly Progress and Knowledge

Nephilim Man – warning of the Flood

Ref: Genesis 6:1-4, 5-8, 11,12

MVN 1945-1950:314

Note: As we start this description of the Nephilim Man, it's important to note the distinction the Lord makes when He mentions "sons of heaven" - children of Seth are the children of God: the "daughters of man" - daughters of Cain are those of the flesh.

Jesus is speaking: "Origin of the Nephilim: When men began to multiply on earth and daughters were born to them, the sons of heaven saw how beautiful the daughters of man were, and so they took for their wives as many of them as they chose. Then the Lord said: 'My spirit shall not remain in man forever, since he is but flesh. His days shall comprise one hundred and twenty years.'



At that time the Nephilim appeared on earth (as well as later), after the sons of heaven had intercourse with the daughters of man, who bore them sons. They were the heroes of old, the men of renown.

Genesis 6:1-4:

[Note: The sacred author incorporates it here, not only in order to account for the prehistoric giants of Palestine, whom the Israelites called the Nephilim, but also to introduce the story of the flood with a moral orientation-the constantly increasing wickedness of mankind.]

4,6. As well as later: According to Num13 when the Israelites invaded Palestine and found there the tall aboriginal Anakin, they likened them to the Nephilim; Dt2,10f. Perhaps the huge megalithic structures in Palestine were thought to have been built by a race of giants, whose superhuman strength was attributed to semi-divine origin. The heroes of old: the legendary worthies of ancient mythology.]

'Do you understand?' You are not the only one who does not understand. The learned and scientists do not understand, nor do believers or atheists. Pay attention to me. And start reading. 'When men began to multiply on earth and daughters were born to them, the sons of heaven, O children of Seth, saw how beautiful the daughters of man [daughters of Cain] were, and so they took for their wives as many of them as they chose ... At that time the Nephilim appeared on earth (as well as later), after sons of heaven had intercourse with the daughters of man, who bore them sons. They were the heroes of old, the men of renown.' The men who, because of the strength of their skeletons, impress your scientists, who deduce that at the beginning of the age, man was taller and stronger than he now is, and from structure of their cranium they deduce that man derives from ape: The usual errors of men in the face of the mystery of creation.

You have not yet understood. I'll explain more clearly. If disobedience to God's order and its consequences were able to inject Evil into the innocent, with all its varied manifestations of lust, gluttony, wrath, envy, pride, and avarice, and this injection soon developed into fratricide (killing one's own brother), provoked

by pride, wrath, envy, and avarice, what deeper decadence and deeper dominion by Satan must have been provoked by this second sin?

Adam and Eve had sinned against the first of God's commands for men. A command implied in the other one, obedience, given to the couple: 'Eat everything, but not from this tree.' Obedience is love. If they had obeyed without yielding to any pressure by Evil exerted upon their spirit, intellect, heart, and flesh, they would have loved God 'with all their heart, with all their soul, and with all their strength,' as was explicitly ordered by the Lord much later. They did not and were punished.

But they did not sin in the other branch of love - love for one's neighbor. They did not curse even Cain but wept over the one dead in the flesh and the one dead in spirit in equal measure, recognizing that the pain which God had permitted was just because they had created pain with their sin and had to be the first to experience it in all of its ramifications. They thus remained children of God, and, along with them, the descendants coming after this pain. Cain sinned against love for God and love for his neighbor. He violated love completely, and God cursed him, and Cain did not repent. He and his children were thus nothing, but children of the animal called man.

If the first sin of Adam made man degenerate to such a degree, what measure of decadence must have been produced by the second, to whom God's curse was joined? What must have been the source of sin in the heart of the animal-man and what power must they have reached after Cain had not only listened to the counsel of the Accursed One, but embraced him as his beloved master, killing as ordered by him? The descent of one branch, the one poisoned by satanic possession, knew no rest and took on a thousand faces. When Satan seizes, he corrupts in all ramifications. When Satan is king, the subject becomes a satan. A satan with all the unbridledness of Satan. A satan going against divine and human law. A satan violating even the most elementary and instinctive norms of life among men endowed with a soul and becoming brutish with the foulest sins of bestial man.

Wherever God is not present, Satan is. Wherever man no longer has a living soul, he is the beast-man. The beast loves the beast. Carnal lust, more than carnal because it is seized and sharpened by Satan makes him avid for all unions. What is horrid and disturbing, like a nightmare, strikes him as beautiful and seductive. What is licit does not satisfy him. It is too little and too honest. He is mad with lust for what is illicit, degrading, and bestial.

Those who were no longer children of God, because, with their father and like their father; they had fled God to accept Satan, ventured precisely into what is illicit, degrading, and bestial. And they had monsters as sons and daughters. Those monsters, who now impress your scientists and lead them into error. Those monsters who, because of their powerful physique and savage beauty and ferocious boldness - result of union between Cain and the brutes-seduced the children of God - that is, the descendants of Seth through Enos, Cainan, Jared, Enoc of Jared (not to be confused with **Enoch of Cain** - Methuselelah, Lamech, and Noah, the father of Shem, Ham, and Japheth. It was then that God, to keep the branch of the children of God from being entirely corrupted by the branch of the children of man - sent the universal deluge to extinguish men's lust under the

weight of the waters and destroy the monsters begotten by lust of the godless, insatiable in sensuality because they were aroused by the fires of Satan.

And man, contemporary man, jabbars about semantic lines and zygomatic (relating to) angles and, in not wanting to admit a Creator, because he is too proud to acknowledge he has been made, he admits descent from the beast! In order to say to himself: 'By ourselves we evolved from animals into men.' He degrades himself, practices self-degradation, because he refuses to humble himself before God. And he is sinking. Oh, he is really sinking! In the times of the initial corruption his appearance was animal. Now his thought and heart are, and his soul, because of deeper and deeper union with evil, has taken on Satan's visage in too many cases."

The World Became Highly Civilized Before the Flood

Ref: Summary of previous messages and teachings

People became civilized, but they were out of the presence of the Lord. Just because our nation is termed civilized, is no sign that we are pleasing the Lord.

In the time before the flood, people-built cities but they forgot the God that made them. The descendants of Cain had cattle, riches, and farms, but they had no approval of God upon their lives. They were rich in goods, but they were barren and poor as far as God's power was concerned.

The evil beings, descendants of Cain, have put in place many types of hybridization (to generate a new form of animal or plant by combining the genes of two different species or subspecies) on animals that they might kill each other and kill the men. Experiments and achievements became disastrous and unfortunately are still carried out.

The descendants of Cain also invented many kinds of instruments. They had all kinds of music, but the Spirit of God was not in that music. They were artist in wood and stone. They were skillful with iron and brass, but they had failed God and cared nothing about serving Him.

The children of Cain followed in the footsteps of their father. They also became murderers. He had set the example before them, and they followed that example. The judgment of God multiplied ten times.

"And Lamech said unto his wives, Adah and Zillah, hear my voice; ye wives of Lamech, harken unto my speech: for I have slain a man to my wounding, and a young man to my hurt. If Cain shall be avenged seven-fold, truly Lamech seventy and seven-fold," Gen. 4:23-24.

We have come through some dark ages. Civilization has advanced in this generation, but people have departed from the faith, as Paul predicted that they would.

"Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils," I Tim. 4:1.

As people modernize their cities, houses, land, highways, and church houses, they also try to modernize the old-time religion. They tried to streamline their church services, but instead, they moved towards the darkness.

Men build cities but they forget Christ. We have more cattle, lands, property and money than ever before, but the men are dried up in their souls.

Men today have better musical instruments, very beautiful, polished, and expensive. They can play beautiful music on these instruments. This is wonderful if they would use those instruments for God and the church. As in the days before the flood they use these instruments for the devil.

In the days before the flood man made his own religion to suit himself. In the days before the flood people strayed from the Lord. They prospered and made good wages. They had a high standard of living, but they were too busy to hear Noah preach the message of judgment. They thought the message of judgment was old and out of date. They were busy; but being so busy caused them to lose their souls. They were drunk on the cares of this world.

It is strange that people usually leave God when all is going well.

In our day people are prospering as never before. Men and women spend their lifetime eating and drinking, it seems that all they are living for is to fill their stomach.

All the time men are building more and more fine restaurants. They build more and more fine homes.

All the time people are working shorter hours. They are getting more and more of the luxuries of life. But instead of spending that leisure time reading the Bible, praying, or going to church. The average person spends their leisure time on themselves, to satisfy the lust of the flesh.

The places of amusement are full day and night. People are drunk on the pleasures of the world.

People today have time to travel and go on vacations. But they have no time for God. They would rather hear a man-made sermon, which has no warnings of judgment. They go to ball games, wrestling matches, carnivals, circuses, roadhouses, and nosedives of the devil, but they don't go to church. If they go to church, it is on Sunday morning for a few minutes to hear a sermon that tells them they are fine people.

Prosperity does not prove that a nation is religious. Prosperity makes many people forget God.

Violence increased in the earth in the days before the flood. The whole earth was filled with violence, Gen. 6:1. The people grew weaker and wiser. They were full of hatred, envy, lust, and pride.

The men forgot God and became as wicked as men could be. They robbed and killed until God had to do something, or the whole world would have been affected by this wickedness.

When a farmer sees that his orchard is being affected by the blight, he at once begins to prevent it from spreading to every tree in the orchard. When God saw that the whole earth was filled with violence, He immediately began to do something about it, before the corruption spread to all men of the earth.

In our day crime has increased as never before. It has increased several hundred percent in our generation. The world is coming about as it was in the days before the flood. We have millions of murder cases yet unsolved. Each second that goes by there is a major crime committed. The national news is filled with holdups, robberies, and murders. Look at the newspapers and you will see that prophecy is being fulfilled right before your eyes.

Morals reached a low before the flood. Men and women were filled with passion and pride. They married and gave in marriage. They were loose and low in morals. They were sex perverts. It reached a startling climax, until God had to do something about it. He had to destroy them and start over again.

Today supermen are popular. The children are taught to look for a superman who can do supernatural things. They are going to find one. People in general are looking for some man who can perform signs and wonders; one who will not tell them to stop their wicked ways. The stage is being set for that superman who can bring fire down from heaven. Jesus said He came in His Father's name, and they rejected Him; but another would come in his own name, him they would accept, John 5:43.

In the days before the flood the imagination of men's hearts was evil continually, Gen. 6:5. The devil took control of men's minds and hearts. He caused them to imagine almost everything. The devil actually took over men and possessed them. They were so taken up with evil spirits that God's Spirit ceased to deal with them anymore. God said, **"My Spirit shall not remain in man forever, since he is but flesh." Gen. 6:3.**

The devil had taken the people over completely. They sold out to Satan. It seemed that they had no more control over themselves.

Men went into apostasy before the flood. They had a satanic religion. They were controlled by the wrong spirit. It was because they refused to give up sin. They communed with evil spirits. They talked to the dead. They are not ashamed to come out in the open with it. Many of them do it now in the name of the church.

They claim to call up the dead relatives. It is not dead relatives (or familiar spirits) that they hear talking. It is demon voices.

They are being deceived. They are traveling a dangerous road. **"Some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits and doctrines of devils in the last days," I Tim. 4:1.**

Now there were religious people on earth before the flood, and don't forget it. We also have people today who are being led by the Spirit of God.

Enoch prophesied to the wicked of this day. He told us that Jesus was coming with thousands of His saints to recompense judgment on the ungodly sinners.

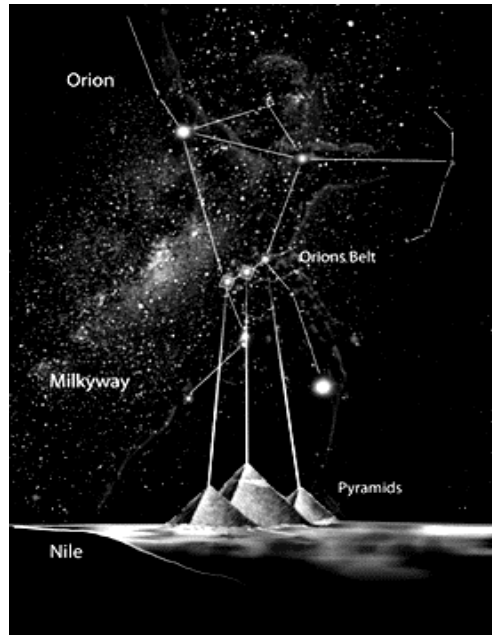
Well, we have a group of people today who are warning the world as Enoch did, that the Lord is coming with ten thousand of His saints. As it was in the days before the flood it is the same today. Some hear us and some don't.

Celestial and Mathematical Precision in Ancient Architecture

Ref: by MELISSA HIEBERT – http://old.worldmysteries.com/alignments/mpl_al1.htm#CELESTIAL

“Many ancient ruins demonstrate that the people who constructed them had not only a special regard for celestial bodies and mathematics, but also a spot-on accuracy. From Egypt to Mexico, there is no doubt that past civilizations were involved in incredibly complex space calculations, mathematics and architectural endeavors. Although many historians and archaeologists debate exactly what these civilizations did intentionally and what they did by mere chance, here are a few examples of how ancient architecture was created with mathematics and the cosmos in mind.

In Giza there are many examples of attention to spatial coordinates. For instance, the Great Pyramid’s faces are aligned with the four cardinal directions almost perfectly. In fact, they are less than 0.2 of a degree off. The pyramid is very precise, with the corners as little as two seconds of a degree (with 60 seconds in a minute of a degree, and 60 minutes in a degree) off of a 90-degree angle. In addition to this (although contested), the pyramids at Giza seem to match the stars of Orion’s belt with a certain precision.



The Site of Teotihuacan, “The Pyramid of the Sun,” as it has been dubbed, demonstrates advanced math. The pyramid’s base has a perimeter of 2932.8 feet, while the pyramid has a height of about 233.5 feet. If we take the ratio of base to height, we get about 12.56, or rather, 4π . Although to some this is thought to be a coincidence, the pyramid’s actual ratio is less than 0.05 per cent off of the true value for 4π .

The ancient Mayan site of Chichen Itza exemplifies the culture’s celestial orientation. The huge step pyramid (the pyramid of Kukulcan) that is the focus of the site has 91 steps on each of its sides, which add up to 364 steps. Adding the platform on top, there are 365 steps in total — the number of days in a year. Also, on the vernal and autumnal equinoxes (the first day of spring and fall, when day and night are the same length of time), the sunlight works to create a shadow of a giant serpent on the staircase that faces north.

A building called the Caracol, believed to have served as an observatory, is also found at the site of Chichen Itza. The windows are set up to align with certain points of interest. Although the top is damaged, remaining windows point to the northern- and southern-most positions of Venus, the position of sunset on the Equinoxes, and the corners of the building itself point to the sunrises and sets of the solstices.

The Mayans had a sophisticated calendar, losing only one day in 6000 years. Their predictions of solar and lunar eclipses were incredibly accurate. As many have heard, they predicted a date that they believed would be the end of the

world. This date, translated to our calendar, is on December 23, 2012. Although unlikely, the world is predicted to suddenly end in about seven years (if we have just translated the meaning of their calendar correctly).

The Mayans did have some rationale behind this number. This date marks the time in the processional cycle of the earth that we will move out of the constellation of Pisces and on to the age of Aquarius.

What is global precession? I'm glad you asked. Everyone knows that the earth spins on its axis while it revolves around the sun. Most remember from grade 10 science class that the earth's axis is not perfectly vertical, but rather tilted about 23.5 degrees. However, the axis is not always this way, as it slowly varies from about 24.5 degrees to 22.1 degrees, making a complete cycle every 41,000 years.

While it is moving in this way, due to varying gravitational forces, the axis wobbles (processes) in a clockwise circle. Just imagine the way the axis of a top spins as it begins to fall. So, the angle of the earth stays the same (or somewhere within its three-degree variance), but the direction in which it points changes. For example, our current North Star is Polaris (or Ursae Minoris), as the North Pole points towards this star. However, approximately 13,000 years ago, the North Pole would have pointed towards the star Vega, as it will do again in about another 13,000 years. It takes about 25,776 years to complete one processional cycle.

Anyone ever heard of the song "Age of Aquarius"? Well, this is in reference to the earth's processional cycle. Presently we are in the age of Pisces, which means that when the sun rises on the vernal equinox it rises in the direction that the constellation of Pisces is in the sky. However, due to precession, every 2160 years on the vernal equinox the sun rises in a different constellation. As mentioned above, we will be moving out of the age of Pisces and into the age of Aquarius around the end of 2012.

So, the Mayans figured there was something important to the changing of ages, hence their predicted death date. However, they are not the only ones who seem to have taken certain numbers into account. The perimeter of the Great Pyramid at Giza is approximately 3,023 feet and the height is 481 feet. In addition to exemplifying a ratio of exactly 2p, its measurements are said to possibly represent the Northern Hemisphere of the earth, on a scale of 1: 43,200. Though controversial, some interpret this number as exactly 20 times the processional number of 2160, representing the precession of the earth through 20 different zodiac constellations or 'ages.'

These examples of processional numbers, mathematics and celestial orientations found in ancient structures by no means scratch the surface of all of the occurrences (or at least, proposed occurrences) present at various historical sites, and even in cultural songs and myths. Whether or not various theories or speculations concerning these spectacular constructions are true or not (and we may never know), the meticulous precision that was put into planning, calculating and building them is hard to ignore, not to mention awe-inspiring. And we think we're advanced..."

The Prehistoric Alignment of World Wonders

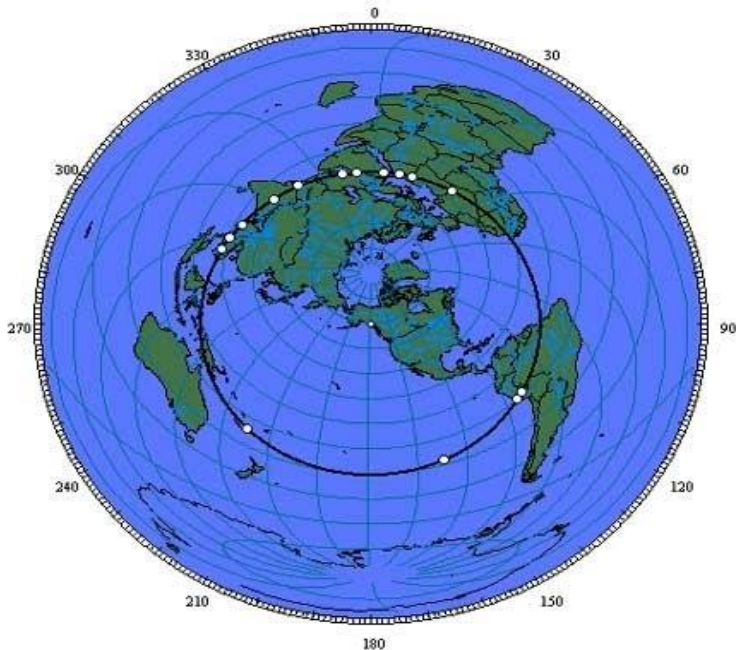
Ref: By JIM ALISON - <http://home.hiwaay.net/~jalison/index.html>

"Did you know that ancient sites like Easter Island, Nazca, Ollantaytambo, Paratoari, Tassili n'Ajjer and the Pyramids of Giza are all aligned on a single great circle? There is a mind-boggling connection among ancient structures that is indicative of a far greater meaning than we were aware of.

There have been numerous theories that ancient structures around the globe were specifically positioned by its ancient builder's thousands of years ago. Perhaps one of the best examples –according to many– is the Great Pyramid of Giza and its curious position on Earth. For those of you who didn't know, the Great Pyramid of Giza is the most accurately aligned structure in existence and faces true north with only 3/60th of a degree of error. Furthermore, the weight of the pyramid is estimated at 5,955,000 tons. Multiplied by 10^8 gives a reasonable estimate of the earth's mass. As you can see, ancient structures were built with a mind-boggling precision.

But the Pyramids at the Giza plateau do not stand solitary on Earth. In fact, there are countless other sites that seem to be connected somehow. If you take a look at other ancient sites like the Nazca Lines, Machu Picchu, Easter Island, Mohenjo Daro, and Tassili n'Ajjer among others and draw down their position on a map, you will notice a connection that points perhaps towards an ancient 'code' embedded within these structures.

As is noted by world-mysteries.com, ancient sites like Giza, Siwa, Tassili n'Ajjer, Paratoari, Ollantaytambo, Machupicchu, Nazca, Easter Island, Aneityum Island, Preah Vihear, Sukhothai, Pyay, Khajuraho, Mohenjo Daro, Persepolis, Ur, Petra are shown clockwise from Giza on the equal azimuthal projection. The projection is centered on the axis point in southeastern Alaska. Distances to any location from the center of an equal azimuthal projection are equally scaled. Since all of the sites on the great circle alignment are equally distant from the axis point at one-quarter of the circumference of the earth, the alignment forms a perfect circle halfway between the center and the outer edge of the projection.



Furthermore, the alignment of these sites is easily observable on a globe of the Earth with a horizon ring. If you line up any two of these sites on the horizon ring, all of the sites will be right on the horizon ring:

Start on the Equator, at the mouth of the Amazon River, at 49° 17' West Longitude; go to 30° 18' North Latitude, 40° 43' East Longitude, in the Middle East, which is the maximum latitude the line touches; then go to the Equator at 130° 43' East Longitude, near the Northwest tip of New Guinea; then to 30° 18' South Latitude, 139° 17' West Longitude, in the South Pacific; and then back to 49° 17' West Longitude, at the Equator.

As you can see, there seems to be a connection among all of the above structures that form –to the surprise of many– a massive circle encompassing all major archaeological sites on planet Earth. How this is possible remains a profound enigma. Were the ancients trying to tell future generations something? “

The pre-Noah Earth - before the flood

Ref: [Household of God HHG.03_366, Jakob Lorber

God the Father is speaking: "So that you can more easily understand its form and nature, it is necessary to imagine the mountain ranges of Asia, as well as those of Europe and Africa. As far as many of them are concerned, there is now not a trace left. At some time, they were washed away and ruptured by the withdrawal of the ocean. Their old connecting spines now lie under the river debris in valleys. Here and there, the existing rivers and larger rivers must force themselves through mountain bottlenecks. As far as the high mountain regions are concerned, their form - except very few - has changed so much through the effect of weathering that a person who lived a thousand years ago would not recognize these as the same - if endowed with his consciousness from that time, he were to be transferred back to the same an area in which he had lived 1000 years before, the place would be totally unfamiliar. You need only to look at the rocky debris of a river valley and observe the mass, which has been removed by the water from the region of the high mountains and has accumulated at the mouth of the river to a depth of about 2,500 feet and so to flow from the mouth of the river into an ocean, to see these changes. Then you will understand that the mountains two to three thousand years ago had a completely different shape than they do nowadays.

It was necessary to start with this, so that you can more easily understand the Pre-Noah situation of the mountains.

We will begin with northern Europe and move partially over to Asia, then into the southern parts of Europe and then finally to Africa.

From the mountain ranges, which go almost through the middle of Sweden and Norway, one major mountain range in the north went to the Ural Mountains and was joined with this range in an ascending direction. It had a foot width up to 100-200 German miles [460 to 920 of our miles. In 1860 one German mile was 7.4 km or 4.6 miles of today]. This mountain range was also joined to the present mountains of Denmark. This range today more or less separates the western plains of Europe from the mountainous parts of Germany (in Europe) into Switzerland. Thus, the Swiss mountain ranges were connected with the Urals and these, by way of Central Asia, with Tibet. This was an uninterrupted crest of mountains, whose lower parts still had an elevation from 5,000 to 6,000 feet above sea level. However, they were not of an equally [consistent geophysical] solid makeup. Therefore, these mountains were ruptured through floods by the fall of

central seas, an occurrence which will be described further below, and who at that time had no connection to the main ocean and swept away in different directions.

At that time, there were two main central seas.

The northern one filled the large basin which, started from today's Black Sea, was joined to the present Baltic over European Russia and all adjacent flat lands. It partially also incorporated the plains of the present-day European part of Turkey up to the so-called Iron Gates. If there were big storms, with its mountain-sized waves, it washed out bottlenecks up to Belgrade and Selin. This was the Northern central sea.

The Second Central Sea had no connection with the Northern central sea and now bears the name, the "Mediterranean Sea", was, like the Black Sea, unrelated to any world ocean. But its surface was not any less in size than the Black Sea or the Northern one. In the area of today's Fiume, a wide and long valley stretches into Croatia and, from there, with different branches the river of the Save, stretches up to Kraina and those regions beyond, where high mountains begin. On the other [western] side it covered the present kingdom of Venice, as well as Lombardy and some eastern parts of France, extended into Africa through the Nile valley up to the cataracts and covered the great sand desert [Sahara].

In fact, from Asia, a note-worthy high mountain range stretched to here and significant traces of it are still present today. This mountain range stretched from the north-eastern parts of Africa up to the high cataracts which are connected with the high mountains of Africa today. By a rather high mountain range the Straits of Gibraltar were connected with the Spain of today and thus formed the Second Central Sea which was comparable to the size of the Northern Central Sea. But it was generally many fathoms deeper than the North Middle Sea of which the Black Sea today is a remnant.

Now there was also a Third Central Sea. To investigate where this was located, you may take a look at those plains and valleys which are traversed today by the Danube, Drava and Mur, together with their tributaries. Of course, at that time this smaller Central Sea was known to no one, because Europe was not inhabited in prehistoric times. There was a large assortment of all kinds of animals, typically of giant form. In certain caves fossilized remains can be found today. Rocks and sands can also still produce fossilized remnants.

You must not think that this little Central Sea existed on its own. Especially in Europe, there were a number of significantly large lakes, which were connected with the Third Central Sea by existing outlets. The Carniola or its plains deep into Upper Carniola was a separate lake, of which today's 'Ljubljana Marsh' is a remainder. This was connected with the Second Central Sea through an outflow into the region of today's Rann. This Second Sea covered wide areas of Croatia.

One major part linked to the Third Central Sea extended over today's Drava valley into the area of the Fall dominion. In a different area the Drava River made its way through a long series of mountains to the region of today's settlement of Eis. There an important lake formed, of which Lake Werth [Wörthersee] is a remainder today. One part of this lake stretched to the Drava Valley, to reach over to Villach and many smaller lakes were connected to it.

The Enns valley, we know today, was a lake of its own, which made its way through the so-called Gesaeuse mountains and beyond. This was so, until it

connected with a larger lake, which, after the Danube valley, covered all surfaces of Bavaria and, partially, the wide Inn Valley in Tirol. Like the Danube, the Mur was connected with the Third Central Sea.

A smaller lake filled today's Wildon, up to Goesting. Behind Goesting lay another lake, Mur Lake. This - covered the bottom and flattened side valleys, which in turn made smaller lakes and were connected with the main lake through small outlets. Today Switzerland has a large quantity of such little lakes some of which are remnants of that time.

With the above you have an adequate picture of the pre-flood arrangement of the mountains and bodies of water from this small part of the world. Now we want to look at Central Asia and the mountain range which separates Central Asia from South Asia. We can then consider the real cradle of the Adamite human race.

As was shown, one mountain range stretched from the Ural Mountains to Tibet, which was rutted at that time by a number of the most fertile valleys. The rivers coming from the mountains went through these valleys and gushed northward.

In Hanoch's time, the mountains were inhabited, in particular with the descendants of Seth while the followers of Hanoch spread out in the plains far beyond this mountain range. But as they saw that the mountain residents had more advantages than they did in their fertile and far extending flatlands, they began to taunt and persecute these mountain residents. In spite of the warnings to them, these persecutions did not cease but with the help of their explosive devices, forerunners of Chinese gunpowder, they began to literally destroy these mountains by drilling deep holes. In their blindness, they provided an outlet, not only for the large bodies of water, over whose ponds these mountains were situated, but also for those far distant areas covering Tibet, and in the wide stretches north, to the Urals. As a result, in the area of today's Caspian Sea, where Hanoch once stood, a great flooding took place, and the thrust of the water was so powerful that it reached a height of between 7,000 and 8,000 feet above the other seas. The amount of water was further increased and sustained by a long period of rainfall over all of central Asia.

This unusually high level of water in all of central Asia was channeled into a powerful runoff through what today is the Volga valley. It raised the water level of this central sea by many fathoms and so everything was devastated especially in the area of the present Constantinople [Istanbul] as the not so firm isthmus was not in a position to be an obstacle for the rupture as extraordinary fire eruptions had formed earlier.

The fact that Noah with his ark found ground on a plateau of the Ararat proves how high the waters of Middle Asia had risen. The principal runoffs of most of the bodies of water in Middle Asia flowed to the North and East; however, a significant part of the runoff flowed to the South and West. Thus, the second large central sea was so overfilled that, partly because of its weight and mainly from fire eruptions under the earth, it made its way out into the Atlantic Ocean and in a few hundred years ran off to an extent that all the fertile plains directly connected to it were drained - so that step by step especially the coastal areas could be populated starting from Asia.

For the most part this was done by the surviving peoples in the highlands in Asia and those from the Urals, which was a fertile and wide stretch of land to the northern sea. It was from there the remaining part of northern Europe was populated. The Tauriscans also descended from these peoples, settling on the mountains of Styria and many other countries. They lived peacefully among each other until the acquisitiveness of the Greeks and Romans discovered them.

The isthmus, which connected Europe with Asia at the time of the Hanochistic flood, was also called the Isthmus of Deucalion. It was named after the patriarch who belonged to the mountain residents and was a type of prophet throughout Western Asia - he was called Deucalion, which means "one sent by God" or "I come from God". Thus, the great flood was called the Deucalion flood by the people who inhabited this part of South Asia. That was until, after several centuries, the descendants of Noah revealed the cause and course of events of the flood together with all the circumstances involved. Over the course of many years, Central Asia became a dry and desolate land which was uninhabitable. Only towards China and at the foot of the Tibetan Highlands was it fertile and habitable.

It is from these areas that the Mongols, Huns, Tatars, and Turkomans known to you originated. After the overpopulation of their lands, they were faced with having to migrate and partly turned to the East and some to the West. There they caused the local population's distress and embarrassment.

In the East, the old Sihinites and the Meduhedites in Japan felt the power and might of the Mongols. In the West, especially the Huns and Tatars (later with the Turkomans) made themselves noticeable and caused the migrations well-known to you.

Nowadays, attempts have been made to create fertile oases in the desolate parts of Central Asia; but the knowledge needed to make such lands fertile is buried in pagan superstition- thus, this stretch of land will have to wait a long time before it can reach its pre-Noah fertility.

The mammoths, as well as other grass and leaf eating animals, resting under ice and snow, which are frequently found today, prove how fertile the lands were at that time, and this also includes Siberia. After the destruction of this fertile land, they could no longer nourish themselves and completely died out. Among these mammals are the giant deer, the giant sheep, the giant unicorn [horse], and more. Today petrified remains are found in the Ural Mountains, the caves of Northern Tibet, and under the snow and ice of Siberia.

Here the question might be asked as to why the remains of human bodies are not found, especially in Siberia. The answer is, the human body is much more ethereal in all its parts and is created subject to decay from the very beginning (that is, as far as Adam's descendants are concerned).

As far as the pre-Adamic so called "human animals" are concerned, petrified remains are found here and there (these humans are Cephonasims, "observers of the firmament"). They occupy a position between the descendants of Cain and the apes currently found (Chimpanzees and Orang Utans).

Among all the animal species, they possessed the most instinctual intelligence and built their very primitive dwellings here and there. They supplied the sections of brooks and rivers which were not too wide with rocks and built a type of bridge over these spots. If the water began to flow over such bridges -

which was usually the case - they built a second bridge upstream. Often, they continued this work with the result of ten or more terraced bridges, In the long run, this was of little use, because the water began to swell rise and again overflowed over the bridges.

These walls of which we find traces today, originated from people who had a short tail with heavy tuft of hair. These walls especially those found in mountainous regions were built long before the times of Adam. But they are as little the work of free human reasoning as the purposeful little dwellings of the beavers in those waters, where these animals find a rich food supply.

There are other species of animals on earth that built and set up their dwellings in this way so that men who find them are astounded. But these dwellings are easily recognized as the work of animals, because they appear in the same type and form. The materials from which they are built can be analyzed by an experienced chemist. The building materials cannot be taken from nature, any more than the material from which the spider spins its web, the bee builds its cells, and the snail its shell. As it is with such animals, it is not much different with the pre-Adamites proper, which here and there can be found in the forests of Africa and America.

I think that I have shown you the Adamic form of the earth clearly and briefly, and you will have little more to ask about it.

I have only two final observations:

The first is that the present Danube channeled its way through the Iron Gates several hundred years later - human hands were needed to regulate the bed of the river so that this part was navigable for vessels. Where the Mur lakes have created obstacles, you can look at the hills laying around the Murboden and the Murboden itself and the detritus. This will tell you how these hills arose - along with this, the present third bank, formed by the river Mur. There you will easily find the remains of destroyed embankments.

In the ground around Graz, you will find fairly heavy boulders, but not at a great depth. They are mostly of a significant hardness. Downstream from Wildon the Mur is less harsh. Only here and there heavy rolled-off limestone can be found. Further, under Radkersburg to the outlet into the Drau you will find more sand than rolled off loose rocks. This is because the Mur had a wide bed and couldn't exert much pressure (its fall was too small).

If you go to Egypt, in the vicinity of the Cataract rapids, you'll find little rock debris; instead, you'll see larger quantities of red-brown and white sand. The cause is this: from the area of the cataracts to the Mediterranean Sea the gradient is very small (in regard to height). Other rivers have a stronger fall toward the ocean, with the exception of the Danube into the Black Sea, the Volga into the Caspian Sea and the Amazon into the Atlantic Ocean.

As far as an alleged flooding in America is concerned (dark sagas about this exist among natives), nothing can be said in the way of proof of general flooding there. At that time, the lowlands in this part of the world were under water. Over time, this part of the world, spread out from north to south, and was lifted by the volcanic fire eruptions above sea level - and the sea was forced to increasingly run off.

Along with this another great natural occurrence for this earth happened.

In this primeval time of the earth when, based on the law of sea migration, the greater part of the ocean was located towards the North, a continuous chain of islands stretched from the westernmost point of the coast of Africa to the Eastern corner of Brazil. In this way, it divided the Northern Sea of the Atlantic Ocean from the southern part. These two seas were connected by a number of straits of which the largest was hardly as wide as the Red Sea.

At that time, in which, because of the forces of fire under the earth, all parts of the world, especially the ocean floor, had to sustain great changes, the greater part of the islands mentioned sank, together with thousands of large and small islands, into the deep ocean floor. Through this wide opening the Northern Sea could then run off more easily into the Southern Sea. Many islands and lowlands emerged in the northern part of the earth, and thus also the lands of America.

On the other hand, the tip of Africa formally reaching far down towards the South Pole is still under water. Also, a sort of hill is formed in the ocean under the foothills of the Cape of Good Hope, over which ships have trouble sailing, especially with heavy winds. They often must make a detour to reach the flat part of the Eastern Sea [Atlantic]. For steamships it is much easier now.

Here you have the great flood of America and that of many larger and smaller islands. But search no more, or I would have to lead you back into periods of primeval creation and many sea migrations. There you would experience nothing more useful than the old woman who couldn't understand how she got so many wrinkles and lines, even though she had lived a good and chaste life, whereas when she was 20, you couldn't locate a single wrinkle on her whole body.

Yes, all we can say is: "God, the Lord arranged all of that, so that the times change and, with all that surrounds us, we human beings change as well."

Thus, let us let the earth rest; in a thousand years it will look quite different! And so, we reach the end of the explanation I have given you so that you can more easily understand some other things from the Gospels and the writings of Moses. Amen!"

The Flood - Last days -

Ref: BD No. 4374 of 07/13/1948 taken from book 51, Genesis 6:1-4, 5-8, 11,12



When the Lord saw how great was man's wickedness on earth, and how no desire that his heart conceived was ever anything but evil, he regretted that he had made man on the earth, and his heart was grieved.

So, the Lord said: "I will wipe out from the earth the men whom I have created, and not only whom I have created, and not only men, *but also the beast and the creeping things and the birds of the air*, for I am sorry that I made them." But Noah found favor with God.

In the eyes of God, the earth was corrupt and full of lawlessness. When God saw how corrupt the earth had become, since all mortals led depraved lives on earth, he said to Noah: "I have decided to put an end to all mortals on earth; the earth is full of lawlessness because of them. So, I will destroy them and all life on earth.



'Who Cares' by Keith Green

God the Father is speaking: "Shortly before the end it will be just like it was at the time of the Flood. People will have a great liking for all worldly pleasures, they will indulge their physical longings and vices, they will lead an immoral and unethical way of life and send no thought to the One above, Who is Lord over heaven and earth, for they will have no more faith. The spiritual level will be the lowest ever since the beginning of this developmental period. Mocking and blaspheming they will confront the few believers with hostility, pursue them and deny them everything they need for living. They themselves, however, will feast and gorge themselves, they will live and love but their love will be false and their way of life wrong, for the devil's servants will populate the earth in the last days, and the disintegration of earth will merely end a state which no longer allows people's higher development.

It will be a time of sinfulness which will go beyond all imagination. God will be completely displaced and those who believe in Him will be in danger of being killed. And God Himself will put an end to this period; the last day will arrive suddenly and unexpectedly amid the ecstasy of the world in which the people of the last days constantly live. Hence, prior to this an apparent progress will be noticeable, everything of a worldly nature will be offered to people, their demand for worldly things will be extreme and everyone will unscrupulously grant himself whatever his mind desires; the strong will fight the weak and the winner will be the one who heartlessly acquires what he doesn't deserve, because he is supported by Satan himself who bestows material favors on him and incites him to increased enjoyment of life.

Sin will escalate to an alarming extent and Judgment will come to pass when no-one expects it. For once people have reached this level of development they will have to be devoured by the earth, as they will have become true servants of the devil and completely deny God. And then the hour of accountability will come to all sinners, the day of God's Justice will arrive, the Day of Judgment will come to all who belong to God's adversary and the day of Recompense for the few who are faithful to God, who persevere and don't fall prey to the temptations of the world, as it is proclaimed in Word and Scripture. A salvation period will come to an end because humanity will be ready for its downfall."

The Great Flood

Ref: Gen7:11-13, 17-23



The flood continued upon the earth for forty days. As the waters increased, they lifted the ark, so that it rose above the earth. The swelling waters increased greatly, but the ark floated on the surface of the waters. Higher and higher above the earth rose the waters, until all the highest mountains everywhere were submerged, the crest rising fifteen cubits higher than the submerged mountains. All creatures that stirred on the earth perished: birds, cattle, wild animals, and all that swarmed on the earth, as well as all mankind. Everything on dry land with the faintest breath of life in its nostrils died out. The Lord wiped out everything living thing on earth: man and cattle, the creeping things and the birds of the air; all were wiped out from the earth. Only Noah and those with him in the ark were left.

The waters maintained their crest over the earth for one hundred and fifty days, and then God remembered Noah and all the animals, wild and tame, that were with him in the ark. So God made a wind sweep over the earth, and the waters began to subside. The fountain of the abyss and the floodgates of the sky were closed, and the downpour from the sky was held back. Gradually the waters receded from the earth. At the end of one hundred and fifty days, the waters had so diminished that, in the seventh month, on the seventeenth day of the month, the ark came to rest on the mountains of Ararat.

The Great Flood - Comments

Jesus continues to speak: MV V-5:466

"But for the day and the exact hour, nobody knows them, not even the angels of the Lord, only the Father knows them. As it was in the days of Noah, so it will be when the Son of Man comes. In the days before the Flood, men were eating, drinking, taking wives, taking husbands, without worrying about the sign, right up to the day Noah went into the ark and the cataracts of heaven were opened and the Flood swept all living beings and things away. It will be like this also for the coming of the Son of Man."

In this passage Jesus uses the title **Son of Man** when He is speaking to the Jews because in Daniel 7:13,14 it refers to the **Son of Man** as the coming of the Messiah. In essence, Jesus is telling the Jews, that He is the Messiah.

"Man" in capitals refers to the sons of heaven who reflect God's law and love within themselves while "man" in small letters refers to men of the flesh – godless and worldly [they]. They (the godless) are the ones who are referred to in the verse: **In those days before the flood, *they* were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, up to the day that Noah (the sons of heaven) entered the ark.** They, who represent the godless, were too busy with the ways of the world to pay attention to the warnings of Noah. **They did not know until the flood came and carried them all away. So will it be also at the coming of the Son of Man.**

It's important to note that although no one will know the exact day or hour for the Son of Man's return, God prepares His people well in advance of any pending chastisement. The Lord uses the time of Noah as an example of how God found favor with Noah and his family who were instructed by God to build an ark because of the pending flood that would wipeout mankind. His people (the sons of heaven) were prepared, and they were the ones to enter the ark. The others (sons of the flesh) who did not listen to Noah, over the one-hundred years it took to build the ark, did not repent and change their ways. They were not prepared when the flood came. After the ark was complete, Noah was told by God, seven days in advance, of the pending flood that was about to take place. (Gen 7:4) The Lord will prepare His people well in advance of His return. Stay awake!

Noah was six hundred years old when the flood waters came upon the earth. All of mankind perished, except for Noah, his family, (8 in all) and the animals in the ark. This massive upheaval would tear apart and bury forever the pre-flood world, which would wipe out all traces of the Garden of Eden.

Noah was in the ark for almost a year. (Genesis 8:14). The Bible clearly teaches that all flesh died, every man (Genesis 7:21). Genesis 9:1 confirms that only Noah and his family were saved. The world's entire population of air-breathing, land-animals died, except for those that were taken into the ark. After the flood waters had been going down for 4 months, the dove could still not find suitable ground to nest in (Geneses 8:9).

*"Jesus is speaking: "Although it says in the Old Testament: '**Covering all the mountains of the earth and apart from that borne in the ark, nothing alive was left on the earth**', this should not be taken literally as referring to the physical earth, for 'mountains' merely means the pride and lust for power shown by men. And that nothing alive was left on the earth except that in the ark means that only Noah*

most faithfully maintained a spiritual life in God and out of God." (Ha III 357 and 358)

God destroyed the world that existed at that time because of man's wickedness. When we look at nature, with its testimonies to the flood, we are viewing the consequences of sin and the acceptance of the Beast. It is also a reminder that God will save those who have faith in Him. God promised that He would never again destroy the world with water, but that a future judgment would take place.

For over a hundred years, Noah pleaded with the people of his day to have faith in God. They would not listen and the door to the ark was closed by God himself.

Jesus is speaking: "There perished in the flood of the corrupt branches of humanity groping in the darkness consequent to the fall, darkness in which only for the few just ones, as through heavy fogs, there reached once again a sole ray of the lost star; the memory of God and His promise." MV - Epistle of St. Paul to the Romans: 135 -141

"I will establish my covenant with you, that never again shall all bodily creatures be destroyed by the waters of a flood; there shall not be another flood to devastate the earth."

Ref: Gen 9: 11

<https://youtu.be/6thNkjGqxeY>



Needs and their evil.

Ref: The Great Gospel of John as presented to Jakob Lorber Ch: 10

(The Lord) "Haven't you read about the former Eden of the Earth where the first human was created? This Eden was a large garden and was planted with the best fruits of the whole Earth; and yet the hand of a person could not possibly have worked it before this! Thus, the first people had no houses or towns; they had only extremely few needs which were easy to satisfy, but they remained healthy with it, always reached a ripe old age, and therefore had a lot of time to devote themselves to their inner education of the soul and remained almost always in a visible conjunction with the powers of heaven.

But through the inspiration of Satan a certain Cain built his son Hanoah a city of the same name; and thereby laid the foundation stone for all the evil things on Earth.

I tell you: Man needs very little for life on this Earth; but the haughtiness, the lethargy, the arrogance, the greed, and domineeringness of man need indescribably much and nonetheless can never be satisfied!

The worries of man are mostly fed on this, and people then quite naturally have no more time to concern themselves with what they should concern themselves because God placed them on this world for that reason only.

From Adam until Noah the children of the mountains never waged a war, because they had only very few needs and no-one wanted to be anything more than his brother, and the parents asserted themselves in the most respectable way before their children, because they always remained their children's teachers and advisors.

But in the lowlands, where the people who were blind in their hearts and their minds began to decorate their teachers and leaders and advisors with too much splendor, anointed their heads, decorated them with crowns and gave them all power and sway for the sake of appearance, there it was the end of life with few and small needs!

Splendor has a great stomach which can never be filled. The earth in a small surface area could no longer bring forth enough food out of the ground and the people of splendor, who were hard to satisfy, began to spread themselves out over the ground, called the occupied land their full property, ensured splendor on it and thereby awoke jealousy and envy and through this also resentment, quarrels, discord and war and the stronger in the end became entitled to the law and ruler over the weaker, forced them to work for him and to be subservient in all things. The rebellious were castigated and even threatened into unconditional obedience on pain of death!

And see, all that was the consequence of the external cultivation of the Earth, of the love of splendor and of the arrogance stemming from it!

But if I now, coming in My spirit from heaven, want to lead you back to the happy condition of the original man and show you the long-lost path to the Kingdom of God, how can you say that the conditions I set to become My disciples are too hard and too unfeasible in general!

I tell you: The yoke that I lay on your neck is soft, and the burden that I offer you to carry is as light as a feather in comparison with that which you carry day by day.

How far into the whole world reach your worries! Day and night you have no rest and no repose; and that is all for the sake of the world and so that you will not be held back at the cost of the often-bloody sweating of your weak brothers and sisters!

With such worries, how should any time be found for the soul, to do anything for the awakening of the spirit of God in you?

Yes, your souls and the souls of millions of people no longer even know that they are the carriers of the spirit of God, not to mention that they could and should do something beneficial for becoming free and independent. For your love of splendor and comfortable life the poor and weak humanity is driven by you too strongly to bloody endless drudgery and therefore cannot do anything to liberate their spirit and so you are dead along with your subordinates and are truly children of Satan and will not hear My word, which earnestly and truly leads you to life. Instead, you defend your word, from which eternal death for you and all your subordinates must necessarily follow!"

Revelation on the Flood

Ref: The Flood by Jakob Lorber

God the Father is speaking: "The Flood did not cover the 'whole' earth, as it says in the Old Testament, but according to New Revelation specifically "Central Asia, with the Aral and the Caspian Sea remaining to this day as memorable left overs for the area covered by the Caspian Sea today was once the over-great and proud **Hanoch empire**. From this principal region the waters poured into both Siberia and also Europe, though the latter was not inhabited at the time; part broke to the south, where the East Indies are today, and most of all over Arabia. Northern Africa was also seriously affected, as far as the high land (Ethiopia), where the flooding was only minor. America was only involved to a small extent in the north, from Siberia; the south remained quite free, as did most of the islands in the great ocean" (the Pacific). *"Although it says in the Old Testament: 'Covering all the mountains of the earth and apart from that borne in the ark, nothing alive was left on the earth', this should not be taken literally as referring to the physical earth, for 'mountains' merely means the pride and lust for power shown by men. And that nothing alive was left on the earth except that in the ark means that only Noah most faithfully maintained a spiritual life in God and out of God."* (Ha III 357 and 358)

On the Reason for the Flood.

Ref: The Great Gospel of John as presented to Jakob Lorber Ch: 11

(The Lord) "They even accuse God and say: How could God let a flood come over the Earth to drown all life and how could He destroy the Sodomites and the Gomarite's!?" Oh, nothing easier than that! For why let bustling and prim lumps of flesh crawl around the earth any longer, whose souls have strayed so far from the old order of God that even the last trace of self-awareness in them is gone out of pure concern for the flesh?

Can there be an even thicker incarnation of the human soul than that in which the soul has not only come into being from the divine spirit in its every representation but which also in the end loses itself so much that it begins to deny its own being quite seriously and can no longer be convinced that it exists?

Yes, when that situation occurs with the people of the world then man has completely stopped being human; he is then only an instinctively reasoning animal and above all incapable of any further education of the soul and the spirit. Thus, such a body must be killed and decay along with the too intensively incarnated soul, so that maybe after many millennia a soul which has become free of all incarnation can enter the path to its self-education and independence, either on this Earth or on another.

That there are here, however, often people who no longer know anything about their own soul for pure concern about the world and their flesh, you can recognize partly in yourself, partly in the Sadducees and to a great part in all people; for no-one knows any longer who and what the soul is! One talks about it and says, "with heart and soul" and "he is my soul mate"; but if you ask someone "Friend, who and what is the soul?" The person questioned stands there like an ox on a mountainside not knowing what to say!

But once a soul does not recognize itself any longer and in the end even quite forgets what and how it is, then everything ends! And there is nothing left for God to do except the old process of destroying the people physically again on the face of the Earth, sometimes to a large degree, sometimes to a lesser degree, depending on the situation of the people whether they still know something about their soul and spirit or nothing at all.

Such pure worldly and fleshly people may look very beautiful and sumptuous, particularly the female sex; the easily understandable reason lies in the constant greater conjunction of the soul with the body. But such people also become weak through this and are very susceptible to all serious physical effects. Their bodies become sick easily and the slightest wind of a plague brings inevitable death, while people who have a free soul and a free spirit in it can let all the poisons of the Earth come over them and it will not harm them in the least; for a free soul and the freest spirit in it have power and means in abundance to face every enemy in the most effective way, while a soul gagged everywhere by its cursed flesh resembles a small tied-up giant who in the end cannot even defend himself against a fly and has to allow an insensible dwarf with a knife to slowly but painfully remove his head from his body."

Suggestions for the Mission.

Ref: The Great Gospel of John as presented to Jakob Lorber Ch: 12

(The Lord) "Remember this! If you come to a place where there are very beautifully formed and dressed-up people of both sexes, it is best to move on; for there is no business for the Kingdom of God, because there at least half of Sodom and Gomorrah are in force! The punishment of God is never far from such a place; for such flesh linked souls, which for the greatest part have laid all their conscience in the grave of their bodies, are to bound up through and through. And if their beautiful flesh is touched even only very slightly by the evil, rough and still very uneducated natural spirits of the air, such bound up souls can muster no defense and succumb along with their flesh which is much more susceptible and thin-skinned than the flesh of the body of a free soul.

Go there and grab a tender town maid firmly by the arm or an any other body part and she will cry with pain; if you go out to the country however to a farmer who besides his work also takes care for his children" souls and his own, there you can grab the hand of the man and those of his children as firmly as you want and shake it and he will let out no great cry of pain or fear!

You probably think that such insensitivity comes from heavy work and the hardening through it?! Oh no, I tell you; instead, the hardness is only a consequence of the soul freed from the flesh through self-denial, by which then the correct toughness of the flesh also comes into being.

But wherever all concern for the tenderness of the flesh exists and even some schools exist in which the body can be made as tender as possible through all sorts of gymnastics and as smooth through all sorts of ointments and oils, there is no free soul any longer; and if only a slight wind of poison comes over such terribly weak bodies, then death reaps its harvest.

Then people complain and moan and one half-believing person after the other opens his mouth and says: But what sort of pleasure can God have that He

tries to kill the people with all sorts of torture?! Either there is no God, or God is too exalted and no longer cares for the creatures of the Earth, or God is hungry for sacrifices and incense, one has to satisfy Him with rich sacrifices, magical words and incense! Or God has become angry and is taking His revenge now on the harmless weak humanity; one has to do penance in full and cast at least twelve sacrificial goats in the Jordan each year!

But then no-one thinks that all this suffering, all sickness, all wars, all price increases, hunger, and plague come from the fact that people do everything only for their bodies instead of for their souls and their spirit according to God's order!

Yes, they preach the fear of God to dead souls, in whom (God) the preacher, soul dead himself, no longer believes. Because he only believes in what he gets for preaching and what honor and what reputation a well-studied position as preacher could bring. And so, one blind leads the other and a dead man wants to make another dead man alive. The first preaches for his body, and the other obeys the teaching for the sake of his body. But what sort of advantage can there be for an extremely sick soul?

I am a savior; how, the dead and the blind people are asking, can this be possible? And I tell you that I do not heal the flesh of people, but instead wherever some soul is still left mixed with the flesh I make the soul free and awaken, as far as possible, the spirit buried in the soul. This immediately strengthens the soul which becomes free, and it is then an easy thing to set the correct order to the afflictions of the flesh in one moment.

That is what one calls a miracle healing, while it is only the most ordinary and natural healing of the flesh in the world! What someone has, that he can give; what he does not have, that he cannot give!

Whoever has a living soul according to the order of God and a free spirit in it, he can make his brother's soul free if it is not too embodied, and this helps the sick fleshly body. If the doctor of souls himself has a very sick soul, which is more dead than alive, how could he give someone else's soul what he is lacking himself?! Think about this!

I have now shown you the conditions for becoming my disciples, and the ills of the world down to their truest and deepest foundation. Now do what you want! I neither take you to be my disciples nor do I refuse you to become such. *If you want to become my disciple you must first make your soul free and strong, otherwise the discipleship of my teaching will do you no good!"*

Noah and the Ark.

Ref: The Great Gospel of John as presented to Jakob Lorber Ch: 13

Jesus is speaking: "After this speech everyone opens wide their eyes and says to themselves: I am guilty! And at this the young Pharisee does not know what he should say to Me. Also, Cyrenius and Julius now make rather thoughtful faces and even Ebahl and Jarah begin to think about their female beauty!

And Cyrenius says after a moment of deep consideration: "Lord and Master, I have spent some days and nights with you here and there and have seen many wonders performed by you and heard you speak clearly, but nothing has made me think as much as this speech! For according to your remarks now we are not at all in a better position than Sodom and Gomorrah in the days of Abraham. And all

our cares, actions and dealings are quite in optima forma for Satan. Friend, that is a very hard lecture! Unfortunately for no price one cannot conceal that You have given us the bare truth here; but how can we now take the standpoint from where we can willingly turn our backs on the world and then turn to the cultivation of the soul and the spirit for all time?"

I say, "Friend, nothing easier than this! You remain what and who you are, and stand before whom you have been placed before, but not for your reputation, but instead for the various uses to other people!

For see, when the flood came in the days of Noah over the face of the Earth, which basically was inhabited by spoilt people, the flood killed everything in the world except for Noah and his family and the animals which Noah took in cages, all but the fish in the water, of course.

But how did Noah and his family remain alive high above the death-bringing water of the great flood? You see, he was in a secure tub which the great flood had to carry obediently on its back and could never penetrate into inside of the boat, where it could have become dangerous to the life of Noah!

This deadly flood of Noah's continues to spiritually cover the face of this Earth; and I say to you that this spiritual and continual flood of Noah's is no less dangerous for the lives of the people of this world than the former natural flood in the days of Noah.

But how can one protect oneself from drowning in the spiritual flood? I say to you: What Noah did physically, that you should do spiritually, and then one is protected forever from drowning in the great and continual spiritual flood!

In other words: Give the world what is of the world according to God's order - but give above all God what is God's!

"Noah's Ark" is the correct humility and love of a person towards one's neighbor and towards God.

Whoever is very humble and full of the pure, unselfish love towards God the Father and towards all people and always actively strives to serve other people as far as possible in the order of God, he floats away quite safely and protected over the flood of world sins that otherwise easily brings death; and at the end of this earthly



path of life, when the flood subsides for him and runs away into its dark depths, there his ark will find welcome rest on the great Ararat of the most living Kingdom of God and will become an eternal house for those whom it carries."

Building the Ark

Ref: The Gospel of John Vol. 3: Ch 43: on life and beath by Jakob Lorber



Noah building the Ark

Jess is speaking: "When Noah built the ark, he is supposed to have begun his commanded work very dilatorily in the beginning. When his adversaries noticed this, they constantly destroyed by night what he had built during the day. Only after many years did he begin to work on the ark day and night and placed guards there; only then did the construction proceed towards its completion with swift steps and offered protection in the time of the flood, as we know, to those who were inside and kept them from an otherwise certain demise.

I tell you that we are basically all Noah's. The world with its lies and deceptions and all the temptations that come from this are the perpetual flood. In order not to be consumed we must most diligently build the commanded ark; this ark is the consolidation of the life of our soul for the maintenance and **final complete education of the life of the spirit of God in the soul.**

When the flood of enticing world temptations then finally sinks into the depths of emptiness, the life of God will come out in all strength in and around the soul and will begin a new work in the pure and new sphere of life in the most unrestricted freedom without any hostile highwayman and thereby bless through and with God the whole infinity from eternity to eternity! Do you understand this image?"

The Ark of Noah

MV - Lessons on the Epistles of St Paul:104

Jesus is speaking: "The ark of Noah did not save all men but those amongst whom God found to be just in His presence.

***I will set my rainbow amongst the clouds ...
and I will remember my covenant.***

Even in the present hour, an hour that rises and which has to pass, and the more it advances, the more it shall be darkened by the storm clouds, the Ark of God will not be able to save all men, but because men, many men, will not want to be saved by finding salvation by means of the Ark of God.



The rainbow after the flood was seen only by the few just ones who had remained alive on Earth. In the present hour instead, Mary, the rainbow, the sign of peace for a super abounding of mercy, will be seen by many who are not just. Her voice, Her perfume and Her prodigies will be noticed by the just and by sinners, and blessed those amongst these last ones who, as for the Rainbow of God the wrath of God is not unleashed, so too, to justice, to faith in Jesus in whom is salvation, will they turn?"

Man Begins Again

Ref: Keith M Hunter - <https://www.occultphysics.com/Great-Pyramid-of-Giza.html>

"Prior to recorded history many millennia ago there once existed an extremely advanced civilization on the face of the earth. Global in scale, it was highly evolved in science and technology, and also spirituality.

As time passed though, due to corruption, war, and celestial catastrophe, this ancient civilization was all but wiped out. Only a remnant remained, mostly composed of the unlettered and the uncultured, as the ancient Greek philosopher Plato recorded. Civilization had thus to begin all over again."

Of the Ascension of Jesus.

Ref: The Great Gospel of John as presented to Jakob Lorber Ch: 16

Jesus is speaking: "But I say to you that it will nonetheless be constantly difficult to remain with the purest naked truth; for the world wisdom which in several places will become very acute will not understand how I can be the same person spiritually who once gave Moses the Law on Sinai under thunder and lightning and dictated to him the five books and who supports and rules all eternity with His wisdom, power, and strength! Even many of you who are all witnesses to everything that happens here and what has happened in other places do not realize that *I am one with the Father in heaven*. What will the great wise men of the world say to that when such evidence reaches their ears from a thousand mouths?!

Therefore, only the simple-minded are informed, and not the wise of the world, for what is great for the world is a horror before God!

The plain and simple person who still has as pure a heart as possible has obviously a freer soul and a freer spirit in the soul and understands more easily and quickly what belongs to the spirit; but a worldly wise man whose soul is nailed up with sheer material knowledge and no longer has a divine spirit will certainly not understand what you, for the most part, easily understood and understand in the correct depth. Nonetheless you still do not understand everything, but after My ascension you will understand it completely!"

Here Cyrenius immediately asks, "What sort of ascension do you mean? Will you ascend to the king of all kings on Earth and be crowned?"

I say, "That's right, but not to a king of the world and also *not with a crown of gold*! Don't I have the power to take for Myself a kingdom on Earth which would reach over all the ends of the Earth? Who could stop Me?

Is the essence of all things not in the hand of My Father, who is in Me as I am in Him and likewise the life of all people? How many breaths could you take without the will of My spirit, who alone enlivens and maintains everything?!

What was the use to the people in the time of Noah all their power and fine warfare? You see, My spirit let the flood come over all the kings and their people and they were all buried!

What good to the powerful Pharaoh was all his great army? My spirit allowed the Israelites to cross the Red Sea without getting wet and the following army of the Pharaoh drowned!

So, if I wanted to be a king of this Earth, what power could ever stop me?

But such a thing is far from Me and from everyone who wants to follow me; quite another ascension and coronation awaits Me, about which you will first find out details when it happens. I have already given you some hints right at the beginning of our meeting; so, if you remember you will be able to imagine the rest!"

Cyrenius says, "But Lord, I now know who and what You are, and what You can do - but I still don't understand basically why You flee from Herod and from those of the temple when you have so much power?

I say, "Friend, you could have saved yourself this question! Firstly, because I already explained it to you more than enough in Nazareth, and secondly you should finally have understood from My speeches that I did not come to this world to make the dead more dead than they already are, but to bring others to life everywhere; thus, from now on no one should be sentenced. For I am now here to take on all the judgment that has been made over this earth, and all people should find salvation from eternal death through My taking of the judgment.

So, I am not here to beat (lay about one), instead to heal every possible wound of humanity which is beset by a thousand evils, and not to fustigate it even more.

Do you think that I flee out of fear of My persecutors? Oh, if that is what you believe, you are greatly mistaken! Look at the many serious criminals! Truly, according to Moses and your Law they have deserved death a thousand times over; and yet I do not allow that to happen now, that they should be killed, instead they should receive the mercy of heaven. If they make use of the mercy then they will also have a place in My kingdom; but if they fall by the wayside with time, they will have themselves to blame if the curse and strength of the law kills them! For look, the Law lasts forever, mercy comes only from time to time to help the people in distress; but when the mercy is not respected, one has to fall back again on the Law."

Creation was Subjected to Futility

MV - Lessons on the Epistles of St Paul to the Romans: 231

Jesus is speaking: "I have explained how the immeasurable vanity of wanting to be like God was that which caused the Sin and its consequences. All of creation, through the fault of the foolish vanity of man, who was the masterpiece of creation, became acquainted with the ugliness of the Sin and of sins against God and against one's neighbor. And more than any other inferior creature of the creation, man was acquainted with it, the superior creature, being the sole creature with a reasoning nature, free, intellectual, capable not only of physical and even intellectual development, in the human sense of the word, but of spiritual

development, being he, man, according to the just opinions of the great theologian (St. Augustine): one infinite in power, a power which only God can fill.

It is truly like this. And it has been like this from the moment man has existed, nor could the Sin, though strongly invalidating this power, have deprived man of these two qualities which God had placed in him when creating him.

In the same primigenial couple, after a sorrow for the death of Abel dissipated the foolish fumes of pride which up to that moment that had kept man enslaved to the suggestion of the eternal Rebel, this unconscious power was reawakened under the impact of the sin and of the punishment. And man, lifting up his gaze towards Heaven [which he had] lost, searching for He who had justly driven him out, felt once again that only God could comfort his sorrow, fill his desire of love, and sustain his moral strengths with eternal hopes and with the promise which had descended into Adam together with the condemnation, that his seducer would have been conquered and that the freedom from his infamous anguish, that is, the restitution of the state of Grace, and therefore, of the inheritance of the Kingdom of Heaven, would have come by means of the Woman, who being the Virgin, would have given birth to the Emmanuel, the Savior and Redeemer.

And so, therefore, the creation, subjected to futility and one could say, impeded to progress towards its final perfection: that of the spirit always more triumphant upon matter, resumed its walk towards the light, towards on high, towards God, its End to whom it had turned its back by descending down the slope which did not only bring from the terrestrial paradise to Earth, but from it towards the kingdom of darkness and sin. It is true, Grace was missing, sun of the soul which because of her [Grace], she [the soul] *sees* distinctly, which because of her [Grace], virtues germinate and grow in perfection; however, the conscience and its voice remained: the paternal call of God to Himself and to the ultimate end; that is, there remained in man, all one with the spiritual soul and joined to it, that sufficient minimum enabling him to aim towards his end, that terrain fit to receive, up to the re-integration of Grace, those lights which God had always generously given to every man no matter how guilty he may be, and enabling him to keep that knowledge and love of God alive, which man had received from the Same together with life and that were innate in him.

Paul writes - and it is a misunderstood phrase either due to incapacity to understand or wanting to misunderstand with the purpose of discouraging men from pursuing the Good in order to enjoy Heaven since there is no salvation for man with a sinful tendency; a heretical theory born from the branches that separated themselves from the trunk of the mystical Vine, from the rebellious members who have detached themselves from the mystical Body; a profession against the divine Love who created by predestinating to Grace and to Glory, and not for damnation, and which the teaching Church justly condemns - Paul writes, 'Subjected to futility not through her own will, but of He who subjected it with the hope that she too can be freed from the servitude of corruption in order to take part in the glorious liberty of the children of God.'

Now many, sacrilegious, heretics, deniers of the most important attribute of God, satans because they are haters of love and of truth, take this phrase as a basis for their own pseudo-religion and say, 'Do you see who wanted your fall,

your weaknesses, your ruin? Him, the one whom you call 'father.' No. To this horrendous blaspheme (To speak of (God or a sacred entity) in an irreverent, impious manner), to this insinuation of the most subtle diabolical astuteness, I reply. And I reply thus.

God put man to the test in order to confirm him in Grace. And this was for those who knew how to be just men even after one or more momentary fall, purified by a sincere repentance and by ardent charity. While for the rebellious Angels whose angelical nature was superior to that of humans - so much that it is said of Christ, 'You have made him a little lower than the angels' - there was neither a promise of forgiveness for them, nor immutability of however much was fit in them to be brought back to their original beatific condition through perfect contrition and perfect love, for man, there was all this and even more: the voices of the Patriarchs and Prophets reconfirming the promise of the Redeemer contained in the Book of Genesis, the revelations of God through His manifestations and inspirations to the Patriarchs, to Moses - the liberator and legislator of the Hebrew people - to Joshua, to the Prophets, and culminating in a prodigy of the donation, teachings and immolations of the Son of God.

Never did God take away the predestination of Grace for all men. Never, because God is not fickle in His wills, and that which He wills once, He wills forever, for however much depends on His will. Never, for as far as God did not act as He had acted by 'hoping' as it is inappropriately written, but by 'knowing,' God ignores nothing. Therefore, hope is denied to Him. Whoever ignores the future of everything and of individuals, hopes. Not one who, like God, ignores nothing and knows everything, from His Eternity to the destiny of everyone.

Therefore, it is to be said and believed that God subjected creation to the test, in its most perfect creature, *fully knowing* that it would have sinned with pride and rebellion due to the vanity of wanting to become like God yet wanting to give it the measureless measure of His love for men.

Before the creation of man, and therefore of the trial, God had already established the Means with which man would have been free at the start from the servitude of corruption and then given the joy of the glorious liberty of the children of God, having attained his share of the inheritance in the celestial Kingdom. Therefore, God did not want your fall, or your weakness, or your ruin. But by wanting to give to Himself a population of children, He created you, and knowing that you would not have persevered in Grace, even before creating you, He preordained the most Holy Means, none holier and more powerful, in order to save you and give you your share in His Kingdom. Therefore, even here, one can say that the infinite and insatiable Love of God for men, His adopted children, shines in all its truth."

The Real Consequences of Original Sin

MV - Epistle of St Paul to the Romans: 132-135

Jesus speaks: "To fully understand the words of Paul, one needs to take Original Sin well into consideration.

A lesson that has been given many times, but that is never given enough because the sorrowful reality of that sin and the sorrowful, real consequences of it are often denied or are placed in doubt by many, by too many. And amongst

these, there are plenty of those who more than anyone else should be convinced of the reality of original sin and of its consequences on account of the studies carried out, and above all, through their ministerial experience which continuously place before their wise eyes the decadence of man, who from a perfect creature has mutated into a weak and imperfect creature against the assaults of Satan, and of what is around and within man, the marvelous creation enviously disturbed by the Enemy of God because of original sin.

Someone will say, 'A lesson which repeats itself, and therefore, a useless lesson.' It is always useful, for when it is required, you never know enough, neither for yourselves nor for others.

It matters too much to Satan that you do not know it! And for this reason, he creates blurs in you to darken your correct knowledge of this episode which has had no end or limit since the day in which he saw it and in those who committed it, but that, as through the seed and through blood all men have inherited life (existence) from Adam and Eve – and in the last man to be born on Earth, there will still be the descendancy of the two First Humans – thus, out of a fatal inheritance, it propagates itself from Adam, the first generator, from progeny to progeny, to all the children of man until the last one to be generated.

To thoroughly understand the confession of Paul, the desolate voice of all men who in wanting to do good perfectly feel incapable of executing it with the desired perfection, one needs to contemplate the fruit of the Sin first, and therefore, also of the first Sin, so as not to find condemnation and the consequences unjust.

Paul confesses, 'I am carnal, sold and subject to sin.' And he continues, 'I do not know what I do; for I do not the good which I will, but the evil which I hate. Even if then I do what I will not, I acknowledge just the same that the law is good (in prohibiting or commanding what it prohibits and commands), however, (when I do the evil which I hate with my better part, whereas I do not the good that I would like to do) I am not, in these moments, I who act, but sin that lives in me. Good does not live in my flesh. The will to do it is present in me, but I cannot find the way of accomplishing it. When I have a will to do good, according to the inward man, but I see in my members another law which opposes itself to the law of my mind and it makes me a captive to the law of sin that is in my members.

'I am carnal.' Even Adam was formed of flesh besides the spirit. But he wasn't carnal since the spirit and reason ruled above matter. And the innocent spirit, full of Grace had an admirable resemblance with His Creator, intelligent enough to comprehend how much he surpasses all natural things. The elevation of man to the supernatural order, that is, to the progeny of God by means of Grace, had elevated the intelligence of man, already very vast on account of the preternatural gift of innate knowledge and ability, therefore, of understanding all natural things, to the supernatural intelligence of being able to comprehend what is incomprehensible to one who is not predisposed by supernatural gift: of being able to comprehend God, and to a lesser extent, of being able to be a faithful image from every humiliating restriction.

Splendid freedom of man full of grace! A freedom respected by God Himself, a freedom not under minded by exterior forces or by internal stimuli. The sublime regality of the deified man, a son of God and heir to Heaven, a dominating

regality upon all creatures and upon the one who is often now your tyrant: the I in which the poisons of the great wound ferment unceasingly within you.

When one says, 'man, king of the sensible creation, was created with the power of dominion upon all creatures,' one needs to reflect that he, because of Grace, and for the other gifts received from the first moment of his being, was made to be king even of himself and of his instincts, out of knowledge of his ultimate purpose, for the love that made him supernaturally tend towards it, and for the dominion over matter and the senses existing in it. Joined to the Order and love of the Love, he was created to know how to give to God what He is due and what is lawful to give to the 'I' without debaucheries or instinctual dissoluteness. The spirit, intellect, and matter constituted a total harmony in him, and this harmony was present from the first moment of his being, not in successive phases as some want to believe."

The Table of Nations - Genesis 10

Chapter 10 of Genesis talks about the Table of the Nations, which stem from the descendants of Noah's sons, Shem, Ham and Japheth to whom sons were born after the flood. It was from the line of Shem that Abram, the father of Judaism, came into the world.

After the Flood, Noah's family moved to the plain of Shinar (Samaria/Babylonia) which is where we find the rivers called Tigris and Euphrates. These are clearly not the same rivers that were destroyed in the Flood. The original rivers would have been buried under Flood-deposited layers of rock and debris several thousand feet deep containing billions of things killed by the Flood. These rivers were probably named after the original pre-Flood rivers, just as the early settlers from the British Isles to America applied familiar names to many places in their "New World."

Scripture tells us that one river split into four (Gen 2:10). This is not what is found in the Middle East today. The Garden was destroyed by the Flood and its actual location on the globe can never be established.

Noah lived three hundred and fifty years after the flood. The whole lifetime of Noah was nine hundred and fifty years; then he died.

When you follow the line from Shem you will discover that when Terah was seventy years old, he became the father of Abram. He also had two other sons called Nahor and Haran, and Haran became the father of Lot. Haran died before his father Terah, in his native land, in Ur of the Chaldeans. Abram and Nahor took wives; the name of Abram's wife was Sarai, and the name of Nahor's wife was Milcah, daughter of Haran, the father of Milcah and Iscah. Sarai was barren; she had no children.

Terah took his son Abram, his grandson Lot, son of Haran, and his daughter-in-law Sarai, the wife of his son Abram, and brought them out of Ur of the Chaldeans, to go to the land of Canaan. But when they reached Haran, they settled there. The lifetime of Terah was two hundred and five years; then Terah died in Haran.

Satan Splits and Divides – the language of man

Genesis 11:1-9 – Message from Conchiglia to Pope Benedict XVI Dec 29th, 2011

The Tower of Babel: The whole world spoke the same language, using the same words. While men were migrating in the east, they came upon a valley in the land of Shinar and settled there. They said to one another, "Come, let us mold bricks and harden them with fire." They use bricks for stone, and bitumen for mortar. Then they said, "Come, let us build ourselves a city and a tower with its top in the sky, and so make a name for ourselves: otherwise, we shall be scattered all over the earth."

The Lord came down to see the city and the tower that the men had built. Then the Lord said: "If now, while they are one people, all speaking the same language, they have started to do this, nothing will later stop them from doing whatever they presume to do. Let us then go down and there confuse their language, so that one will not understand what another says." Thus the Lord scattered them from there all over the earth, and they stopped building the city. That is why it was called Babel, because there the Lord confused the speech of all the world. It was from that place that he scattered them all over the earth.

Conchiglia message: "Meditating on the Revelation that I have received and confronting it with chapter of Genesis, I find that the interpretation in the Bible is mistaken, in the notes it is written collective fault, arrogance's fault. "The Lord that came down to see the city," it is not God, like implied, but Satan. (The Lord of the Earth is Satan because God's Kingdom is not of this earth.) I suggest seeing the original text of the Sacred Writings and the subsequent translations again. Only a false god, Satan, had been able to punish those men that only wanted to be given a name for not being dispersed on the whole earth.

It is written that those men migrated; when you migrate, it is to escape from one's own country. Those men have migrated since they were in danger or they were experiencing serious difficulties to live, for example: wars, epidemics, food shortages etc. thus, they have migrated to find another place where to live and survive.

Indeed, it is written that those men migrated, and they found a plain and they settled down. Their intention therefore was just not being dispersed, to be united among them, to build a city and a tower. The city served them to be organized and to be protected since the union makes force, and the tower served them to sight the enemies from the high, the same ones that have forced them to migrate. Successively the tower would also have been good to sight to eventually other thieves.

"Come let us confuse their language so they will not understand each other" The Lord God, doesn't want the confusion and create division between his children but the unit and the concord (peaceful treaty) among them. Satan is the one that divides. Indeed, after **the Lord came down to see the city, and it confused the language of the whole earth**, the union of the languages will only be restored in Christ the Savior with the miracle of languages mentioned on Pentecost, Act 2:5-12, and this is in accordance with Revelation."

The Mystery of the Tower of Babel - Solved

Ref: Message from Conchiglia to Pope Benedict XVI Dec 29th, 2011

Jesus is speaking: "The language comes from the Word that is a gift from God to man. It is one of Humanity's bigger misfortunes. The many languages have caused division among all the men of Planet Earth. The many languages have been and are the cause of Humanity's involution (making something complicated) and the slowness of the diffusion of scientific involution and historical discoveries.



Because of the many languages even I, Jesus, have not been known to all men of Planet Earth. Only imagine in how many languages the Sacred Book is published. However, the Sacred Book has not been translated for all the peoples of Earth. Satan has worked very well to divide People and Nations.

Just imagine how communication had been to any part of the World through the current media. Even the current "frequencies" to your disposition are primitive with regard to those that the Potent of the World use and to which you are not allowed to accede (to attain an important and powerful position). The scientific and historical knowledge and discoveries have reached a more advanced state than what has been said. They hide from you everything to maintain your ignorance since they are afraid of losing their privileges acquired through their power.

For a long time, you had been able to reach a much more advanced age before "the end of life" on Earth. You had been able to enjoy many benefits in each social environment. You had been able to work less and there was work for all. You had been able to have so much free time to be devoted to Me, to yourselves and your family. You had been able to study and learn and to be surrounded by the most useful and more beautiful things.

On the other hand, look at yourself and then look around! The desolation surrounds you on each side, and all the benefits are used by the potent ones that use you as workers for their personal interests. You are only work meat for them. You still are slaves of a system that they still want to improve by imposing a system with more and more sophisticated control so that you can't ever escape to the most minimum control. They have stolen your freedom and still they will steal you more so they can steal your life and mainly you're Soul.

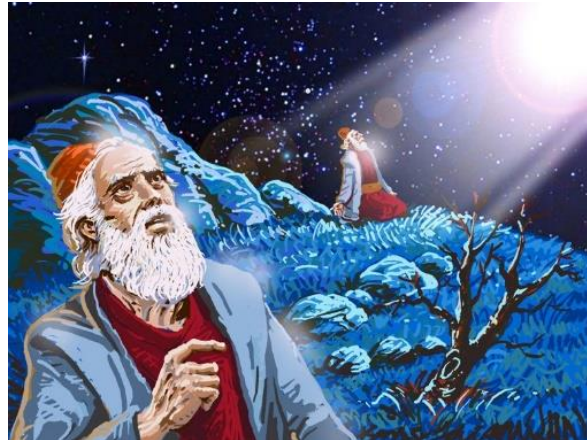
My children and brothers many times I have said it, don't allow them to steal your Soul for life, remember your Soul is Eternal."

Abraham's Call and Migration - Genesis 12

Abram was called by God and the Lord said to Abram: "Go forth from the land of your kinsfolk and from your father's house to a land that I will show you."

I will make of you a great nation (Israel), and I will bless you; I will make your name great, so that you will be a blessing.

I will bless those who bless you and curse those who curse you. All the communities of the earth shall find blessings in you.



After Abram and Lot departed, the Lord said to Abram: "Look about you, and from where you are, gaze to the north and south, east and west; all the land that you see I will give to you and your descendants forever. I will make your descendants like the dust of the earth; if anyone could count the dust of the earth, your descendants too might be counted. Set forth and walk about in the land, through its length and breadth, for to you I will give it." Abram moved his tents and went on to settle near the terebinth of Mamre, which is at Hebron. There he built an altar to the Lord.

Abraham's Covenant with God - Genesis 16, 17, & 19

A depiction of Hagar, the Egyptian, and Ishmael in the desert by François-Joseph Navez

The future troops that will do battle for Good or Evil is being set in place with the covenant that God makes with Abraham.

Abram's wife Sarai had born him no children. She had, however, an Egyptian maidservant named Hagar. Sarai said to Abram: "The Lord has kept me from bearing children. Have intercourse, then, with my maid; perhaps I shall have sons through her." Abram heeded Sarai's request. When she became aware of her pregnancy, she looked on her mistress with disdain. So Sarai said to Abram: "You are responsible for this outrage against me. I myself gave my maid to your embrace, but ever since she became aware of her pregnancy, she has been looking on me with disdain. May the Lord decide between you and me!" Abram told Sarai: "Your maid is in your power. Do to her whatever you please." Sarai then abused her so much that Hagar ran away from her.



The Lord's messenger found her by a spring in the wilderness, the spring on the road to Shur, and asked, "Hagar, maid of Sarai, where have you come from and where are you going?" She answered, "I am running away from my mistress, Sarai." But the Lord's messenger told her: "Go back to your mistress and submit to her abusive treatment. I will make your descendants so numerous," added the Lord's messenger, "that they will be too many to count." Besides, the Lord's

messenger said to her: "You are now pregnant and shall bear a son; you shall name him Ishmael, For the Lord has heard you. He will be a wild ass of a man, his hand against everyone, and everyone's hand against him; In opposition to all his kin shall he encamp."

Hagar bore Abram a son and Abram named the son whom Hagar bore him Ishmael. Abram was eighty-six years old when Hagar bore him Ishmael.

When Abram was ninety-nine years old, the Lord appeared to him and said: "I am God the Almighty. Walk in my presence and be blameless. Between you and me I will establish my covenant, and I will multiply you exceedingly."

When Abram prostrated himself, God continued to speak to him: "My covenant with you is this: you are to become the father of a host of nations. No longer shall you be called Abram; your name shall be Abraham, for I am making you the father of a host of nations. I will render you exceedingly fertile; I will make nations of you; kings shall stem from you. I will maintain my covenant with you and your descendants after you throughout the ages as an everlasting pact, to be your God and the God of your descendants after you. I will give to you and to your descendants after you the land in which you are now staying, the whole land of Canaan, as a permanent possession; and I will be their God."

God further said to Abraham: "As for your wife Sarai, do not call her Sarai; her name shall be Sarah. I will bless her, and I will give you a son by her. Him also will I bless; he shall give rise to nations, and rulers of peoples shall issue from him. Abraham prostrated himself and laughed as he said to himself, "Can a child be born to man who is a hundred years old? Or can Sarah give birth at ninety?"

Then Abraham said to God, "Let but Ishmael live on by your favor!" [Ishmael was Abraham's son born from an Egyptian maidservant named Hagar] God replied: As for Ishmael (the new Cain), I will make him fertile and will multiply him exceedingly. He shall become the father of twelve chieftains, and I will make of him a great nation. (Arab Nations) "Nevertheless, your wife Sarah is to bear you a son and you shall call him Isaac. I will maintain my covenant with him as an everlasting pact, to be his God and the God of his descendants after him.

Then the Lord said: "The outcry against Sodom and Gomorrah is so great, and their sin so grave, that I must go down and see whether or not their actions fully correspond to the cry against them that comes to me. I mean to find out."

Then Abraham, knowing that his nephew Lot was living in Sodom, drew nearer to the Lord and said: "Will you sweep away the innocent with the guilty? Suppose there were fifty innocent people in the city; would you wipe out the place, rather than spare it for the sake of the fifty innocent people within it?" The Lord replied, "If I find fifty innocent people in the city of Sodom, I will spare the whole place for their sake." Abraham continued to argue with the Lord and reduced the number to ten innocent people.

The Lord departed as soon as he had finished speaking with Abraham, and Abraham returned home.

Then the Lord said: "The outcry against Sodom and Gomorrah is so great, and their sin so grave, that I must go down and see whether or not their actions fully correspond to the cry against them that comes to me. I mean to find out."

Then Abraham, knowing that his nephew Lot was living in Sodom, drew nearer to the Lord and said: "Will you sweep away the innocent with the guilty?"

Suppose there were fifty innocent people in the city; would you wipe out the place, rather than spare it for the sake of the fifty innocent people within it?" The Lord replied, "If I find fifty innocent people in the city of Sodom, I will spare the whole place for their sake." Abraham continued to argue with the Lord and reduced the number to ten innocent people.

The Lord departed as soon as he had finished speaking with Abraham, and Abraham returned home.

Meanwhile, Lot who lived in the town of Sodom was visited by two angels. The angel said to Lot, "Who else belongs to you here? Your sons [sons-in-law] and your daughters and all who belong to you in the city-take them away from it! We are about to destroy this place, for the outcry reaching the Lord against those in the city is so great that he has sent us to destroy it." So Lot went out and spoke to his sons-in-law, who had contracted marriage with his daughters. "Get up and leave this place," he told them; "the Lord is about to destroy the city." But his sons-in-law thought he was joking.

As dawn was breaking, the angels urged Lot on, saying, "On your way! Take with you your wife and your two daughters who are here, or you will be swept away in the punishment of the city." When he hesitated, the men, by the Lord's mercy, seized his hand and the hands of his wife and his two daughters and led them to safety outside the city. As soon as they had been brought outside, he was told: "Flee for your life! Don't look back or stop anywhere on the Plain. Get off to the hills at once, or you will be swept away."



God destroys Sodom and Gomorra: <https://youtu.be/BHw2scGABeM>

The sun was just rising over the earth as Lot arrived in Zoar; at the same time the Lord rained down sulfurous fire upon Sodom and Gomorrah [from the Lord out of heaven]. He overthrew those cities and the whole Plain, together with the inhabitants of the cities and the produce of the soil. But Lot's wife looked back, and she was turned into a pillar of salt. Early the next morning Abraham went to the place where he had stood in the Lord's presence. As he looked down towards Sodom and Gomorrah and the whole region of the Plain, he saw dense smoke over the land rising like fumes from a furnace.

Thus, it came to pass: when God destroyed the Cities of the Plain, he was mindful of Abraham by sending Lot away from the upheaval by which God overthrew the cities where Lot had been living.” Sodom & Gomorrah (Gen 18:19)

When Abram was ninety-nine years old, the Lord appeared to him and said: “I am God the Almighty. Walk in my presence and be blameless. Between you and me I will establish my covenant, and I will multiply you exceedingly.” Abram has now received God’s mercy. “My covenant with you is this: you are to become the father of a host of nations. No longer shall you be called Abram; your name shall be Abraham, for I am making you the father of a host of nations.

God also said to Abraham: “As for your wife Sarai, do not call her Sarai; her name shall be Sarah. I will bless her, and I will give you a son by her. Him also will I bless; he shall give rise to nations, and rulers of peoples shall issue from him and you shall call him Isaac.

Only One Family was Freed

Ref: MESSAGE FROM OUR LORD TO HIS BELOVED DAUGHTER LUZ DE MARIA JANUARY 26, 2018

Jesus is speaking: “To be a believer it is not enough to say, ‘Lord, Lord!’ (Mt 7,21). I have called you to obedience and you mock My Requests. Some who do not know Sacred Scripture do not know that only one family was freed from the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah: the family of Lot, a man who was pleasing in the eyes of My Father, being righteous (cf. II Peter 2,6-8). The obedience was imposed on him that no member of his family should look back, but his wife looked back and she herself stayed in her disobedience.” (cf. Gen 19:26).

The Arab nations track their roots to Abraham’s first son Ishmael. However, as Abraham, his first son is called Isaac not Ishmael! Ishmael was born when Abraham was called Abram, which took place before Abraham received God’s mercy and blessing. Thus, the descendants of Ishmael (the Arab Nations) were born into slavery because they were descendants from Hagar, the Egyptian slave of Sarai, Abram’s wife. Ishmael’s father was called Abram. It was only after God changed Abram’s name to Abraham that the blessing and promise was given to Abraham and passed to his son Isaac. Isaac’s fathers name is Abraham. Thus, the children of the promise are from the line of Abraham and Sarah - Isaac, and Jacob which does not include the line of Ishmael the hybrid.

When God put his church in motion, he changed Simon’s name to Peter, when God called Saul into action to serve the Lord, he changed Saul’s name to Paul, and when God called Abram into action, He changed Abram’s name to Abraham.

The Test of Abraham: Genesis 22:1-19

Sometime after these events, God put Abraham to the test. He called to him, “Abraham?” “Ready!” he replied. Then God said: “Take your son, Isaac, your only one, whom you love, and go to the land of Moriah. There you shall offer him up as a holocaust on a height that I will point out to you.” Early the next morning Abraham saddled his donkey, took with him his son, Isaac, and two of his servants as well, with wood that he had cut for the holocaust, set out for the place of which God had told him.

On the third day Abraham got sight of the place from afar. Then he said to his servants: "Both of you stay here with the donkey, while the boy and I go on over yonder. We will worship and then come back to you." Thereupon Abraham took the wood for the holocaust and laid it on his son Isaac's shoulders, while he himself carried the fire and the knife. As the two walked on together, Isaac spoke to his father Abraham: "Father!" he said, "Yes, son," he replied. Isaac continued, "Here are the fire and wood, but where is the sheep for the holocaust?" "Son," Abraham answered, "God himself will provide the sheep for the holocaust." Then the two continued going forward.

When they came to the place of which God had told him, Abraham built an altar there and arranged the wood on it. Next, he tied up his son Isaac, and put him on top of the wood on the altar. Then he reached out and took the knife to slaughter his son. But the Lord's messenger called to him from heaven, "Abraham, Abraham!" "Yes, Lord," he answered. "Do not lay your hand on the boy," said the messenger. "Do not do the least thing to him. I know now how devoted you are to God, since you did not withhold from me your own beloved son." As Abraham looked about, he spied a ram caught by its horns in the thicket. So, he went and took the ram and offered it up as a holocaust in place of his son. Abraham named the site Yahwehyireh; hence people now say, "On the mountain the Lord will see."

Again the Lord's messenger called to Abraham from heaven and said: "I swear by myself, declares the Lord, that because you acted as you did in not withholding from me your beloved son, I will bless you abundantly and make your descendants as countless as the stars of the sky and the sands of the seashore; your descendants shall take possession of the gates of their enemies, and in your descendants all nations of the earth shall find blessings – all this because you obeyed my command."

Abraham then returned to his servants, and they set out together for Beer-sheba, where Abraham made his home.



In this verse, you can see the similarities between Isaac and Jesus. In other words, Isaac was a prophetic representation of Jesus. This is why Jesus said, "Your father Abraham rejoiced to see My day, and he saw it and was glad," (John 8:56). Abraham had, in a very real sense, seen the gospel presentation in the offering of his son, his "only beloved son." So, we see here that the term "only beloved son" is in reference to the unique son of God and Isaac was acting out the sacrifice of Christ, prophetically.

The Descendants of Adam's Children prefigures Abraham's Children

Understanding the events of Cain and Abel will help us to understand what will follow from the sons of Abraham - Ishmael and Isaac. The descendants of Isaac who believe in Jesus Christ, His teachings, and are part of the Mystical Body of Christ are considered children of the promise and heirs of the Kingdom.

Jesus is speaking: "Not all those who come from Israel are Israelites nor those born from the lineage of Abraham are all (his) children, but through Isaac

shall your descendants be named. Therefore, the children of the flesh are not considered as children of the promise who are accounted as the descendants of Abraham.

There. It is again the free will of man that decides the future and eternal destiny. As it was through Adam's will that made him fall, as it was through Cain's will in becoming a fratricide and fugitive by giving origin to the children of the flesh, that is, to those who have come out of every law, moral as well. And so it was also the ill will of Ishmael that expelled him from the tribe of Abraham and into a generator of the children of the flesh rather than of God's, because he had become joined to a woman from Egypt, that is, an idolatress." Ref: MV - Epistle of St. Paul: 253

The descendants of Ishmael are all hybrids (the Arab Nations) and were born into slavery because they were descendants from Hagar, the Egyptian slave of Sarai, Abram's wife. However, God showed mercy on Abram and his wife, blessed them, and changed their names to Abraham and Sarah who gave birth to Isaac. In order to deliver the descendants of Ishmael (the children of the flesh) from slavery, God sent his mercy, just like He did with Cain; in this example, God's mercy was His only begotten Son, Jesus Christ. But just like Cain, the descendants of Ishmael rejected God's mercy and refused to accept Christ. Instead, they embraced Satan just like Cain. As a consequence, they established their own religion which denies the Divinity of Christ and justifies the killing of anyone that believes that Jesus Christ is the Son of God. Placing themselves above Christ, they formed their own religion, which is called Islam, and was established in the year 666 AD.

Jesus continues to speak: "Even in the present hour, an hour that rises and which has to pass, and the more it advances, the more it shall be darkened by the storm clouds, the Ark of God will not be able to save all men, but because men, many men, will not want to be saved by finding salvation by means of the Ark of God.

The rainbow after the flood was seen only by the few just ones who had remained alive on Earth. In the present hour instead, Mary, the rainbow, the sign of peace for a super abounding of mercy, will be seen by many who are not just. Her voice, Her perfume, and Her prodigies will be noticed by the just and by sinners, and blessed those amongst these last ones who, as for the Rainbow of God, the wrath of God is not unleashed, so too, to justice, to faith in Jesus in whom is salvation, will they turn?" MV - Lessons on the Epistles of St Paul:104

Jesus is speaking: "The end will be like the beginning. The circle is coming together, grafting the two murky unfinished works to one another. The new flood, in other words God's wrath, will come in another form. But it will still be wrath. Faithful to My word, I will not send the flood anymore. *But I will let the satanic forces send the flood of satanic cruelties.*" Ref: MVET: 134

The World's Hatred

In the book of John 15:18-27, 16:1-4 Jesus warns us about the pending darkness, an hour that rises and has to pass, that will take place between the descendants of Ishmael and Isaac: **Whoever hates me also hates my Father. If I had not done works among them that no one else ever did, they would not have**

sin; but as it is, they have seen and hated both me and my Father. But in order that the word written in the law might be fulfilled, "They hated me without cause." that's because they have not known either the Father or me. I have told you this so that when their hour comes you may remember that I told you. They will expel you from the synagogues; in fact, *the hour is coming when everyone who kills you will think he is offering worship to God*. They will do this because they have not known either the Father or Me. I have told you this so that when their hour comes you may remember that I told you.

Do Not Throw This Freedom Away

Jesus also says: **You, my brothers, are children of the promise, as Isaac was. But just as in those days the son born in nature's course persecuted the one whose birth was in the realm of spirit, so do we find it now. What does Scripture say on this point? "Cast out slave girl and son together; for the slave girl's son shall never be an heir on equal terms with the son" of the one born free.**

Therefore, my brothers, we are not children of a slave girl but of a mother who is free. It was for liberty that Christ freed us. Ref: Galatians 4:8-31

The events that took place between Cain and Abel pre-figure the events that will take place in our times between the descendants of Ishmael and Isaac – the children of the promise. Cain, who was led by Satan to kill his brother, will be the same, magnified in time, for the descendants of Ishmael – the children of the flesh who have refused God's Mercy. They will be led by the Antichrist and Satan to wage war against the One True Church of Christ and will persecute the children of God throughout the world. It will be the time of the Antichrist, combined with the horrible abomination and desolation of the Word of God that brings God's wrath to destroy all evil. The time of the Antichrist will be so intense that only a small remnant of God's children will remain faithful to Christ and His Church.

Jesus is speaking: "It will be just like it was in the time of Noah, to keep the branch of the children of God from being entirely corrupted by the branch of the children of man – God sent the universal deluge to extinguish men's lust under the weight of the waters and destroy the monsters begotten by lust of the godless, insatiable in sensuality because they were aroused by the fires of Satan. Only this time, God will withdraw his graces, and man filled with satanic cruelties, will destroy himself." Only the faithful remnant, the children of God that are marked with the sign of Christ and survive this battle, will hear the voice of the Lord calling them to enter into the Eternal Jerusalem.

Jesus is speaking: "The Stars! So distant and so near! Millions and Millions of meters away, flying like birds of fire through the boundless fields of the sky, and yet so visible to man's eyes, as to say to him, believe in God. We, too, are a proof of his existence. The more he rises, the more they sink into the ether and go on pulsating, saying, 'We the daughters of God are not for you, for you contaminate us with your fallen humanity. We, creatures of God, are only a spark in that ocean of light which is the Kingdom of God. To reach the true Star, to know his Light, you have only to strip yourself of all your humanity. You will thus know God, for He reveals Himself to those who love Him and in love consume themselves as men and make themselves reign as souls, and you will then possess Him, after this

brief life, for eternal Life. We, the millenary stars, shall experience death. You will not experience it if you make yourselves children of God.''' Ref: MVN 1944:380

The Genealogy of Jesus - Matthew 1:1-17

In the book of Matthew (Matt. 1) it lists the genealogy of Jesus, and as you can see, it took generations of people and time before the Redemptive period could take place. Some had a big role others had a small role, but they all had a part in preparing the way for the coming of the Lord. The book of the genealogy of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham is as follows:

Abraham became the father of Isaac, Isaac the father of Jacob, Jacob the father of Judah and his brothers. Judah became the father of Perez and Zerah, whose mother was Tamar. Perez became the father of Hezron, Hezron the father of Amminadab. Amminadab became the father of Nahshon, Nahshon the father of Salmon, Salmon the father of Boaz, whose mother was Rahab. Boaz became the father of Obed, whose mother was Ruth. Obed became the father of Jesse, Jesse the father of David the king.

David became the father of Solomon, whose mother had been the wife of Uriah, Solomon became the father of Rehoboam, Rehoboam the father of Abijah, Abijah the father of Asaph. Asaph became the father of Jehoshaphat, Jehoshaphat the father of Joram, Joram the father of Uzziah, Uzziah became the father of Jotham, Jotham the father of Ahaz, Ahaz the father Hezekiah. Hezekiah became the father of Manasseh, Manasseh the father of Amos, Amos the father of Josiah. Josiah became the father of Jechoniah and his brothers at the time of the Babylonian exile.

After the Babylonian exile, Jechoniah became the father of Shealtiel, Shealtiel the father of Zerubbabel, Zerubbabel the father of Abiud. Abiud became the father of Eliakim, Eliakim the father of Azor, Azor the father of Zadok. Zadok became the father of Achim, Achim the father of Eliud, Eliud the father of Eleazar. Eleazar became the father of Matthan, Matthan the father of Jacob, Jacob the father of Joseph, the husband of Mary. Of her was born Jesus who is called the Messiah.

Thus, the total number of generations from Abraham to David is fourteen generations; from David to the Babylonian exile, fourteen generations; from the Babylonian exile to the Messiah, fourteen generations. (42 in all)

Chapter 9: Perfect Soul and Spiritual Rebirth



The Kingdom of God and Rebirth, Spiritual Rebirth, The Power of a Perfect Soul – rebirth of the spirit, Zorels self -realization, The Soul of the Somnambulist Purifies Itself, The Purified Soul gets Clad, The Ethereal Body of the Soul with its Senses, Zorels Soul on the Pathe to Renunciation, Zorel in Paradise, The Relationship between Body Soul and Mind, Zorels Insight into Creation, Judge Not. . .

The Kingdom of God and Rebirth

Ref: Earth and Moon Jacob Lorber:37

Jesus is speaking: "There are many who say: "There is nothing wrong with searching for the kingdom of God; but if only it were easier to find, and if only there were a church or a Christian congregation somewhere through which the proper path to God's kingdom could be found." Rome proclaims I alone am the right path!" And all the other churches make the same claim. Should you travel one or the other of these paths that is supposed to lead to the kingdom of God, you will probably find everything else, but you will not find the promised kingdom of God.

What I have to say in regard to this is as follows: When one has to search too long for even the most precious object, one will in time discontinue one's search. But whose fault, is it? That of the seeker himself, if he looks for the kingdom of God where it cannot be found rather than where it can. *It is clearly written that the kingdom of God does not come with external splendor, but rather it is within a human being. Its cornerstone is Christ, the one and only God and Lord of Heaven and Earth, temporary and eternally in space as in infinity, in Whom the heart must believe, and above all Whom the heart must love, and love its fellow man like itself.*

When a human being has entirely fulfilled this simple demand in his heart, the kingdom of God has already been found. Having reached this level, you do not have to worry any more about what you require, because it will be given. Whosoever is in need of wisdom, it will be given when and where he is in need of it. Should such a person require any external aids to maintain his earthly life, it will be given to him at the right time in proper measure. Should he require special powers on certain occasions, they will be given. He will not be without counsel and comfort. Should he require a foreign tongue on special occasions, then that will be given. And if he wishes to help an ailing person, he will require nothing but My name and his own hands.

No one, while in the flesh, will have all of these advantages at his disposal at all times, even if he has been born again; they will only be available to him when, in all seriousness, they are really required. Even a born-again human being has to come to Me, just like anyone else, if he requires something, just as I Myself, when I walked in the flesh upon Earth, could not and was not allowed to do as I pleased, but did whatsoever the Father Who sent Me wanted.

The Father was of course in Me, as I am in Him. He, however, was the Spirit of God as the Father of Eternity. And I was and am His soul. This soul, however, possesses Her own cognition and capabilities as the highest and most perfect Soul of all souls. In spite of this, this soul was not allowed to do and did not do what She wanted to do, but only that which the One wanted from Whom She originated. Even though this soul wanted to set aside the last bitter chalice, the One that was in Me did not want Me to do so. That is why My soul did whatever the One Who was within Me wanted.

Therefore, you should not envision a born-again human being as a constant miracle-worker in all things. Nor should you think of him as someone with a so-called halo surrounding his head, as many saints are depicted in paintings. After the physical death of a born-again human being, no such signs of miracles will be

discovered as the miraculous signs of holiness that are extolled, especially in the Roman legends of the saints. Neither is there any mummified impressibility of the departed body. Any reasonable person should ask himself what purpose that would serve. What would the blessed spirit of a born-again human being gain if, on Earth, he was bestowed with such wonderful but nonsensical distinctions? Human beings who have found the kingdom of God have none of these characteristics. However, My grace will be revealed through them whenever it is necessary.

Neither envision the born-again human being of My kingdom as some kind of monk, who is, as far as the world be concerned, completely (materialistically) dead, and who is occupied only with the rosary, the mass, and the litany, fasting, condemning sinners, and as one who views his impending burial site and coffin with amusement. Those are not the signs of rebirth; on the contrary, they are signs of darkness. The light of the born-again human being does not know the night-sides of life, because the light of day is everywhere within him.

The grave and coffin are not the symbols of a born-again who has found the kingdom of God, because there are neither graves nor coffins in the kingdom of God; for there are no dead. There you will find only resurrection and eternal life. The born-again being lives continuously in his spirit, and he reflects on the loss of his body no more than he does upon his death, just as a person would not consider his body to be dead simply because he takes off his coat in the evening. This is the reason why death no longer exists for a born-again human being. This is certainly a wonderful sign of rebirth, but it is only present within a human being, and it is not displayed externally and publicly.

All the other signs of rebirth are only on the inside and are only recognizable when there is a need. He who has the gift of prophecy will receive it when he is in need, and he will ask Me beforehand, because no one but Me can prophesy. Whenever I place the words into the heart and upon the tongue of a born-again being, then will he prophesy; otherwise, he will speak like any other person. And that applies to any other gift as well.

Human beings with so-called second sight should not be considered to be born-again because of this ability alone, as this ability is only a consequence of their excitable nerves, through which the soul, by means of the nerve spirit, easily transfers visions of their soul-kingdom into the organism of their bodies. Strong nerves are not capable of that, and so human beings with strong nerves rarely have the so-called second sight. This should be considered as something neither good nor bad. It is more an ailment of the body, with which human beings usually become afflicted by all kinds of adverse incidents during the course of their earthly lives. Great sadness, long lasting fear, great shock, and the like are usually the cause, and sometimes artificial means such as magnetism, inebriation, and narcotization through narcotic herbs.

Second sight is, therefore, absolutely not a sign of rebirth. That may be gathered from the fact that these visionary people can only view utterly incoherent pictures without any orderly content.

The reason for this is that their spirits and souls are not yet connected with each other. In their visions there is no basis or connection, and that may be easily understood by everyone, whereas a born-again representation of spiritual matters,

even if it be only partial, will give proof of the proper spiritual reason and connection. Accordingly, such is also a sign of actual rebirth, and a significant difference to a person who has a mere vision. Therefore, you must not expect childish miracles as a consequence of rebirth, but the natural fruits of a healthy spirit, and a soul that became healthy through this spirit.

The born-again knows that you cannot perform legerdemain with the gifts of the Holy Ghost. That is why he uses them only when absolutely necessary, usually in secret.

But whosoever may wish to be reborn in order to obtain such miraculous powers may rest assured that such grace will never be bestowed upon him.

Love for Me, great kind-heartedness, love for all human beings – all of these together comprise the proper signs of rebirth. But wherever these are missing, and whenever humility is not strong enough for every setback, a halo or cowl or spirit vision is of very little benefit. Such people are often farther from the kingdom of God than many of those who appear to have a very worldly view, because the kingdom of God never comes from external pomp, but from within, in all tranquility, in the human heart. Imprint this as deeply as you can into your mind; then you will find the kingdom of God much easier than you thought.

The visions of a born-again are the only true visions. All other visions will receive the proper interpretation when they are explained by a born-again spirit.

Everyone should reject the follies of worldly people; you should believe the word of a truly born-again being, since such a person will not speak of anything other than what he receives. The others, however, will speak only of what they themselves believe they know.

When such a person tells you that he speaks in the Name of the Lord, do not believe him; he speaks only in the interest of his own honor, and for his own advantage. But whoso may say, without self-interest and ambition, "That is what the Lord said!" – believe him, especially when he pays no attention to the reputation of a particular person, because only a born-again human being knows the reputation of the Lord."

Spiritual Rebirth

BD No. 2360 of 06/07/1942 taken from book 32

God the Father is speaking: "The turning point in life is the rebirth of the spirit, it is the moment when you become conscious of the spiritual strength flowing to you through My love. As soon as you feel yourselves inseparably united with Me, as soon as you become conscious of the fact that you cannot exist without Me, as soon as you feel My presence and this consciousness determines your whole life, the spiritual spark in you strives towards its Father-Spirit and you have woken up to the real life, you are reborn in spirit. And from now on you strive towards Me consciously, your intentions and thoughts are inclined towards Me, your actions correspond to My will. And I take hold of you and draw you up to Me. I won't let you go anywhere on your own anymore, I will go with you wherever you go, I Am around you and pay attention to every thought looking for Me. I hear your heart's every question, every appeal for help, every sigh for My love and I will help you, even if you don't feel it instantly. My love for you is boundless and My care never-ending, and thus I won't leave any one of My living creations without

help. And I particularly take care of My children, for they are My children who have found Me and confide in Me of their own accord. They have all My love, Spiritual rebirth is like the rising sun, it appears increasingly more radiant in the firmament until it is in the sky in full splendor, permeating My works of creation with light and warmth, giving life to new creations and keeping them alive. Standstill no longer exists for a spiritually reborn person. He will become increasingly brighter and shining since he is, after all, permeated by My strength of love, by My spirit. And thus, he gains ever more light and strength and likewise illuminates everything in his surroundings.

Spiritual rebirth is the awakening to eternal life, and the spiritually reborn person will likewise be able to awaken the lifeless to life, for wherever his light is shining it penetrates the darkness with its bright radiance, and where there is light there is life, where there is light I Myself Am present, and I bring life to all those who desire it, who consciously want it from Me, who likewise turn to Me with yearning, thus, who acknowledge Me. I give you My Word and thereby the visible sign of My love, I give you strength, which will manifest itself in increased longing for Me again, for this longing is the sign that My Father-Spirit draws the spiritual spark in you to Himself, and thus you shall be happy when you yearn for Me, for My spirit strives towards you in the same way. And your hearts cannot let go of Me again, for I do not let them do so once they have given themselves to Me. I Am the Spirit of Truth, I Am Life, I Am Love and the Primary Origin of everything in existence. Whomever I grant My love will exist from eternity to eternity. He will live and know the full truth; there is no deception and illusion where he is; he will be what I Am, a spirit, full of power and strength from Me. He will radiate love and be incredibly happy for being able to impart My spirit to the living creations again, for being able to bring what was once lifeless to life. He will resemble Me in everything, for My spirit permeates him and thus he cannot be any different than I Am, a being full of love, strength, wisdom and power. And thus, you will be the most blissfully happy creatures in eternity, united with one another and always near to Me. And you will receive what you desire, for you will only ever desire My love, and this will permeate you continually, so that you can work for your own infinite happiness in My kingdom, which everyone who unites with Me in time and eternity can share."

The Power of a Perfected Soul – rebirth of the spirit

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol. 4:ch 218 by Jalob Lorber

Jesus is speaking: "This level of supreme perfection in life could not have been attained by anyone before My incarnation and so I came to this earth to make you My true children by the rebirth of your spirits within your souls. If I now speak of a perfect soul, I refer to a soul in which My spirit is now active, but which has not yet become completely one with Mine.

Based on the reasons I have mentioned, a perfected soul is therefore not only able to perform miracles as a ruler of all creation but will also have fleeting visions within purely spiritual spheres because of its more perceptive spirit. It can also hear the words spoken by the spirit of God, as was the case with all the seers and prophets, who in tandem with their gift of seeing and prophesying out of My

spirit, also had, in the view of all men thinking in terms of nature, some visibly miraculous control of the elements and over all creation.

Moses performed miracles, as did his brother Aaron, also Joshua and later Elias, and after him many more prophets and seers.

A prophet by the name of Daniel ('son of the day or of the light') was thrown by a cruel king of Babylon into a lions' den with twelve hungry lions as punishment for delivering a critical speech about him. They had been fed for years by all kinds of unlucky criminals. Hearing Daniel's sharp and admonishing words, the angry king, despite admiring the seer for his wisdom, threw Daniel without pity or respect into the den to his certain death.

However, Daniel's perfect soul was also the master of the hungry lions! When he was thrown into the den by the king's henchmen, the lions not only did nothing to him, but crouched round him with obvious reverence as their natural lord and master. Daniel, knowing that he would survive among the lions, asked his disciples for his writing board, and for three days set down his prophecy, unharmed by the twelve lions in the death pit. When this was reported to the king, he was filled with remorse. He ordered Daniel to be lifted out of the pit in a basket and gave him his freedom.

At the same time there were three disciples who refused to bend their knees in front of Baal. The stupid king was so incensed by this that he ordered a limekiln to be heated excessively for three days, into which the three would be thrown, if they continued to ignore the king's order any longer. However, the disciples, in the perfection of their souls, stuck to their well-founded principles and showed not the slightest fear of the glowing kiln. The three days passed, and the three youth were, on the merciless orders of the king, seized by his henchmen and thrown over the glowing edge into the fiery pit. However, not a single hair on any of their heads was harmed, while all the king's henchmen were trapped by the excessive heat and burned to cinders.

So, what was it that protected the disciples in the fiery kiln? Their perfected souls observing My primordial ordinances! Finally, an angel appeared and led them totally unharmed out of the terrible heat which prevented any other person from coming closer than thirty paces for fear of suddenly being burned to death!

These are just examples of the splendid strength and power of a perfected soul!"

Zorels self-realization.

Re: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol. 4:ch 48 by Jakob Lorber

Jesus is speaking: "I now give Zinka a sign and he goes immediately to Zorel and says: "Brother, the Lord who is almighty and full of mercy, goodness and love and wisdom, wants it that I should heal you by laying on my life-strength hands. Do not fear anything but trust and become another person, and nothing, whatever you need for your bodily and spiritual true welfare, will not be withheld from you! If you want to, and if you trust me, your true friend and brother, then allow me to lay my hands on you!"

Says Zorel: "Friend, with those loyal words you can send me to the Tartarus, and I shall go! Therefore, just go ahead and put your hands on me, where and how you ever want, and I will not oppose you!"

Says Zinka: "Now then, - sit on this bench and I want the power of God to flow through you!"

Says Zorel: "Which God? Probably Zeus, Apollo, Mars, Mercury or Vulcan, Pluto or Neptune? I beg you, just keep Pluto out of the play; because I truly do not want to be penetrated by his hurricane force!"

Says Zinka: "Let the gods be, which existed nowhere else than in the imagination of people who were blind for a long period of time! There exists only one true God, and this to you is the unknown God, for whom you heathens also build a temple, but until now has not recognized Him. But now the time has come, that also you will get to know this only true God! And see, by this God's mercy and strength you will be penetrated for your welfare, if I lay my hands on you!"

Says Zorel: "Ah, if so, then just go ahead to lay your hands on me in a way which you know best!"

Thereupon Zinka puts his hands on Zorel in the previously described manner and Zorel immediately falls into a raptures sleep.

After a while of a strong quarter of an hour, Zorel, otherwise fast asleep, starts speaking with strongly closed eyes: "O God, o God, what a wretched and evil person I am, and what honest and sincere person I could have been, if I only wanted it to be; but therein lies the curse of sin, the lie and haughtiness, which are both the actual basic sins, always reproducing anew and increasing like the gras on earth and the sand in the sea!

O God! I have so many sins and flaws in my soul, that I can't see my skin because of all the sins; yes, I'm stuck like in a dense smoke and fog because of the force of my countless sins!

O God, o God, who will ever be able to free me from my sins? I am a main thief, I am a liar, and if I lie I keep lying anew, to strengthen the old lie by a new one to, trying to make some truth of it. O, I am a hideous lying dog! Everything I own, I only took possession of by lying and deceit and by secret and open theft!

Of course, in my great blindness I regarded everything as no sin, but I also quite often had the opportunity to be convinced by the truth. But I did not want to be convinced! I always used Sparta and Lycurgus and despised the wise laws of justice of Rome! Oh, I am too much of a common bad scoundrel!

Now, the only thing which comforts me, that I have not yet murdered anyone; but it was close! If my maiden would not have run away before I have returned home, she would have become a sad victim of my devil-bad fury!

Oh, I am an execrable monster! I am worse than a bear, worse than a lion, worse than a tiger, worse than a hyena, much worse than a wolf, and much, much worse than a wild pig! Since I'm also clever like a fox, and this makes me a true devil in disguise!

Oh, I'm very sick in my soul, and you, brother Zinka, will only be able to heal me with a great effort or not at all!

It starts to get a little brighter in me, and the thick smoke and the dense fog around me dwindles! See, they are getting thinner, and it appears to me, if I can breathe more easily; but in this greater brightness I can really see my true monstrosity, full of all kinds of leprosy, full of bulges and disgusting growths! O, o, my figure is a true monster! Where is the doctor who can cure me? My bad body is healthy though; but I wouldn't mind the bad body, if only my soul were healthy!

O God, if someone could see my soul, he would be horrified regarding its too great ugliness! The brighter it gets around me, the more terrible my soul appears! Brother Zinka, doesn't there exist any means, whereby my soul could become just a little better appearance?!"

The Soul of the Somnambulist Purifies Itself.

Re: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol. 4:ch 49 by Jakob Lorber

(Note: A somnambulist is a person who walks or acts while asleep, or who seems to lack awareness or will.)

Zorel starts to sigh in his sleep and some think that he will wake up now.

But I say to them: "O definitely not! This was only the first stage of his sleep; he would keep on sleeping for over an hour and would soon start to speak again, but in another and higher stage of his soul-life. This stage consisted in him unwinding the soul from her carnal and worldly-sensuous passions, which he saw as many illnesses as possible on the form-body of his soul and against which he was seized by the deepest loathing. For such soul illnesses there exists no other medicine other than firstly by recognizing them, then the deepest loathing and finally the firm will to get rid of them as soon as possible. Once the will is there, the healing can progress much easier.

Just pay attention, soon he will start speaking again! If he again asks you about something, friend Zinka, then answer him just with your thoughts, and he will hear and understand you quite well!"

I nearly finished giving Zinka such instructions, when Zorel started speaking again and said: "See, I cried about my great misery! From my tears a pond was created like Siloah in Jerusalem; and now I bath myself in this pond, and see, the water of the pond heals the many wounds, ulcers, and bulges on the body of my soul! Ah, ah, this is a true healing bath! I still see the scars, but the wounds, bulges and ulcers have disappeared from my body of my poor soul. But how is this possible, that a visible pond was created from my tears?

The pond is surrounded by a quite beautiful landscape; it is a landscape of consolation and lovely hope. Also, in my emotions it appears if I can hope for a complete recovery. - Ah, the landscape is so delightful; I would like to stay here forever! The water in my pond is now very clear, while before it was murky; and the clearer it becomes, the more it has a salutary effect on me!

Ah, now I also notice, that something like a strong will starts to stir within me, and behind the strong will I notice something like a word drive, and it speaks loudly: I want to, I must, - I must, because I want to! Who can restrain me, what I want? I am free in my will; I'm not allowed to will what I should, but I want what I myself want! What is true and good is what I want, because I myself want it, and nobody can force me to do it!

I now recognize the truth; it is a divine light from the heavens! All our gods are shadow figures; they are nothing, absolutely nothing. Who believes in them is worse off than a real fool since a real fool will never believe in such most trifling gods. Nowhere I see the gods, but I see the divine light and hear the divine word. But nowhere I can see God since He is too holy for me.

The water of my pond has changed into a lake around me! The lake is not deep; the water reaches up to my loins. And it is clear, so tremendously clear; but

there are still no fish in it! Yes, there will never be fish in there; since the fish are originating from the breath of God, and this is truly an almighty breath! I'm only a very weak human soul, whose breath cannot create fish of God.

Oh, it requires a lot, one must be very almighty if one wants to create fish with one's breath! Oh, never can a person do that, since a person is much too weak for it! It would not really be completely impossible for a person, but then he must be full of the divine will and the divine spirit! For the right person this is not impossible; but I'm not the right person, therefore it is completely impossible for me!

But the water is pure, and the bottom consists also of a lot of pure, beautiful gras; it's quite miraculous: under the water so much beautiful gras! And see, the gras continuously grows and starts to displace the beautiful water! Yes, yes, hope becomes mightier than knowledge and its accompanying fear!

Ah, ah, now I see a person on the quite distant shore; he waves to me! Yes, I want to go to him, but I don't know how deep the lake is! If somewhere quite deep places would occur, I could go under and would be lost!

But there is a voice coming from the water: 'I'm equally deep everywhere! You can walk without fear and anxiousness through me; go to the person who calls you, who is going to lead and judge you! This is extraordinary, here even the water and the gras can talk! No, this has never occurred before!

I now go to the friend on the shore. He must be a friend, otherwise he would not have waved to me! Zinka, it is not you; it is someone else! Now I can see you also behind him; but you are by a great margin not as friendly as him! Who might that be? But I'm very much ashamed before him since I'm naked. My body looks quite good now; I nearly do not detect any signs of illnesses on it anymore. Oh, if I only had a shirt! But I'm completely naked, like someone who takes a bath. But I must go to him; his waving draws me immensely! I go now, and see, it goes quite well!"

The Purified Soul gets Clad.

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol. 4:ch 50 by Jalob Lorber

Here a break occurs in the monologue of Zorel and Zinka asks: "How does he see all this and how does he walk through water but still lying motionless as if he was dead?!"

Says I: "His soul sees now only the circumstances leading to his betterment; from this own world forms in the mind of the soul, and this what you here call a movement of thoughts, appears in the kingdom of the soul as a movement from one place to another.

The pond which originated from the tears and the waters healing his soul, represents his remorse for the committed sins, and the bath therein indicates real repentance which arises out of remorse. The clear water indicates his just recognition of his sins and shortcomings; and the expansion of the pond into a lake represents the powerful wish to be cleaned and healed out of himself. The beautiful gras under the water indicates hope for achieving full health and the higher free mercy of God. This already appears on the still quite distant shore; I Myself representing this in the spirit and in the will. The movement to Me through

the waters of true remorse and repentance indicates the progress of the soul to true betterment.

All this is for his soul only a corresponding appearance, from which the soul can see what she consists of and what she plans and does in her mind to better herself, of course in this state only in the will, without any outer, real action. This must only follow, if in an awakened state and the soul is fully connected to the body again.

Soon he will be with Me and will start talking again. Just pay close attention; everything he is going to say now corresponds with his inner soul state! There still will appear some confusion until he reaches the third stage, which is a temporary connection with his pure life-germ.

In the third stage you will be able to convince yourself how coherent and wise he can speak! Now only his purified soul is speaking; but during the third stage his spirit will speak out of him! And then you will not detect gaps anymore; he then will talk, letting you feel quite warm in your heart!

He now comes to shore and says: 'Ah, this was a rather laborious trip! Now I'm with you, noble friend! Do you have a shirt for me? See, I'm dreadfully ashamed about my nakedness!

I say to him out of My now visible spirit and will: 'Get out of the water; you will be dressed according to your actions!'

Says Zorels soul: 'Friend, oh, do not speak about my actions, since they are vain bad and evil! If I receive clothes accordingly, then they will look terrible black and ragged!'

Says I: 'If so, then there is plenty of water here to wash it until it is white!'

Says Zorel: 'O friend, this means trying to wash a black man until he is white! This will not end well! But any dress is better than no dress at all. Therefore, I will come out of the water!'

By My feet lies a toga with many folds, but very dirty, although the basic color is white, grey, a peculiarity of the heathen dress color in the spirit world. He takes the dress and is disgusted with its dirt, what is a good sign. Nevertheless, he takes it, runs with it to the water and starts to rub and rinse and finally wrings it.

Now he has finished washing and the dress is clean. Since it is still moist, he doesn't dare to courageously put it on. But I indicate to him that he nevertheless should put it on; he previously did not mind the water, so why should he now have a sort of loathing for a little moist dress?! Now he says - just listen, since he will say it loudly! -:"

Zorel: "This is true! Earlier the whole lake did not bother me, and now the moist shirt should do something to me. Just on the body with it! Ah, this feels good!"

The Ethereal Body of the Soul with its Senses.

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol. 4:ch 51 by Jalob Lorber

Now Zinka asks with his thoughts a question and says: "Does the soul also have a body?"

Zinka asked this question since he himself does not have the slightest idea how the soul looks like and of what it consists of. Because the general Jewish concept of a soul was, that they imagined it as a sort of misty fog and said: the

soul is a pure spirit who has a mind and a will, but certainly does not have a form and even less anybody.

Therefore, Zinka's eyes widened when Zorel gave him an answer to his thought question: "Of course the soul has a body, however only ethereal, but for the soul her body is nevertheless a perfect body, just as for the flesh the flesh is a perfect body. The soul body has everything whatever is present in the body of the flesh. Of course, you can't see this with the eyes of your flesh, but I can see, hear, feel, smell and taste everything; since also the soul has the same senses as the body to communicate between it and its soul.

The senses of the body are the leading reins in the hands of the soul to control her body for the outer world. If the body would not have such senses, it would be totally useless and an intolerable burden to the soul.

Just think of a person who is completely blind and deaf, would not feel pain or the ease of health, and would also not have any sense of smell or taste; think for yourself if such a body would be of any use for the soul! Wouldn't she completely despair with her otherwise fullest and clearest consciousness?

To the same measure the sharpest senses of the body would not mean anything to the soul if she would not possess exactly the same senses in her ethereal body! Because the soul possesses the same senses as the body, she notices easily and precisely with her sensitive senses what precedingly the senses of the body have taken in from the outer world. Now you know how the soul is also a bodily form.

Now you know it, since I have told you as I see, feel and notices it bodily; but if I wake up again, then you will still remember it, but I will not know anything about it, since I see, feel and notices it only with my sensitive senses of my soul, but not at the same time with the senses of my body.

If I would observe everything here also with the senses of my body, they would engrave certain markings on the nerves of my brain and on the life-nerves of the flesh-heart, and I, the soul, would find them again in my flesh-body and recognize them completely. But since I'm now standing completely free, nearly without any link to my body, and therefore are not able to leave an impression on the senses of my body, I will not remember anything at all about what I now see, hear and feel and speak and everything that happens to me now, after the re-entry into my body.

But also, the soul can remember and accordingly can remember every minute and most unimportant detail about whatever happened to her; but she can do this only in her free state. But if she is in her completely dark body, which dazes everything spiritual, she can only see, hear, and feel the coarse and overpowering rustling and raw impressions; about herself she barely knows her own existence, not mentioning that she recognizes any higher and deeper spiritual impressions residing inside her.

You also have a soul, just as I myself am now a completely free soul; but you also knew very little or nothing about yourself. The reason for this lies in the darkest flesh, with which every soul is wrapped up for some time. Only now, because I have left some impressions on the nerves in the back of your head by the voice of my living body's mouth, and you as a soul through such impressions can read the same primordial markings in yourself, you now known also as a soul

and not only in the flesh, that you have a soul and that, based on your thinking and wanting, you are a soul yourself, which in her ethereal bodily being has the same figure as your body.

However, do not be surprised if I tell you, when later waking up again in the earthly life, I will not know about anything, what I have said now; since I have explained the reason for that already!"

Zorels Soul on the Path to Renunciation.

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol. 4:ch52 by Jalob Lorber

(Zorel:) "Now the friend says to me: 'Come, Zorel, leave this place, I will take you to another place!'

I go now away with the good friend, far away and away from the lake. We are strolling now through a marvelous avenue, and the trees are bowing before him whom I'm following. He must be something big in the kingdom of all spirits! Oh, some of the trees nearly break while bowing!

You, Zinka, are also going with us, but you look very foggy and seem not to notice how the trees are bowing in front of my friend! This is something unusual for this world, but nevertheless is true!

Strange, strange! Now the trees even start to talk! They shout in a well perceptible whispering: 'Hail to the Holy of all Holinesses, hail the great King of all kings from eternity to eternity!'

Don't you think that this is highly unusual? Annoyingly you still pretend as if you do not notice it, or that it is a very ordinary appearance like a decaying rain on earth!

Yes, yes, the friend, to whom the trees bow and praise him, tells me, that this what is like you, is not you, but only a shadow-like outer picture of your soul and only produces itself in our atmosphere. From your soul are radiating certain life beams, like those of a light; as soon as they touch our atmosphere, they form in a similar manner an image, like the radiating beams of a person in daylight falling onto the surface of a mirror, also forming immediately the image of the person from whom the beams are originating.

I will only look at your feet and convince myself that you are not walking, but only gliding with us. Quite right, you are not moving your feet, nor your hands, but nevertheless follows us in about seven good steps! Yes, now I understand why you can't see the trees bowing or hear their marvelous whispering!

But the avenue becomes narrower and narrower, and the trees are getting smaller, but standing closer together; but the bowing and whispering therefore does not end. The path is also getting more difficult. The avenue is now so narrow and the path so full of thorns and bushes, that we only get through with great difficulty! The end is still not in sight, although the friend says that the path will end soon, and we will have reached our destination. Oh, now the bushes are getting quite dense, and the surface nearly rocky, and between the rocks everything is full of thorns and thistles; it is almost impossible to make any progress!

I ask the friend why we have chosen such a hopelessly bad path. But the friend says: 'Just look right and left and on both sides and you will see the sea which is bottomless deep! This is the only firm land tongue, although at the end

very narrow and thorny, which winds between the two endless big seas. It connects all the earthly world with the great Paradise land for the best in the beyond. Whoever wants to get there must put up with this path since it is the only one!

You see, Zinka, such strange answer gave me the friend and leader of my insignificance! I ask him again and say: 'On earth there are also many bad roads, but the people help each other; they take mattocks, staples and shovels and repair the road. Why isn't it done here?'

But the friend says: 'Because this immense undergrowth protects this land tongue from very powerful storms of the sea! If it wasn't for this land tongue to be protected by this dense and firm undergrowth, it would have long since been washed away by the mighty waves from the seas on both sides. Because this thorny undergrowth is so closely knit, especially towards both shorelines, the strong waves break against it and the foam is settled between the dense twigs, which in time hardens to a rock and by this action this important land tongue becomes stronger and stronger. But this land tongue has the name humility and firm basic truth. Both humility and truth, have always been full of thorns for the people!'

Behold, Zinka, this is what the friend has spoken, and inside myself it gets strangely bright, and I start to notice, as if something starts to stir in my heart; and what is stirring, is a light, and the light has a form in the heart like an embryo in the mother's womb. It is completely clear, I see it. But now it gets bigger and mightier! Ah, what a marvelous and completely pure light this is! This is most likely the actual life-flame out of God in the true heart of man! Yes, yes, this is it! It still grows continuously, and, oh, it does me so good!

We still stroll along the narrow path; but the undergrowth and thorns do not bother me anymore; I also do not feel any pain if from time to time a thorn sting or scratches me! Now the undergrowth gets thinner, the trees are getting bigger again, and a marvelous avenue opens. The undergrowth has stopped completely, the land tongue gets wider, and the shores of the seas are getting further and further away from us, and in the far distance I already can see a marvelous land with the most beautiful mountains, and over the mountains shines a most marvelous red of dawn! But we are still inside the avenue which gets bigger and wider, and the now very large and high trees still haven't stopped to bow their majestic crowns before my friend and leader, and their whispering sounds now like the most marvelous and purest tuned harps!

O Zinka! There, yes there, there it is already indescribable marvelous! But you are still gliding with us and still are mute like before, but you can't help it; since it is not you, but only your cursory effigy. Oh, if you only could see it as well, but also to keep alive the good markings while returning to earthly life, what an unforgettable person you could be! However, the friend says, in time the living memory to everything will be given back to me; but before that I also have to walk in the flesh this thorny road, which will find itself."

Zorel in Paradise.

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol. 4:ch 53 by Jalob Lorber

(Zorel:) "Ah, my inner life-light gets tremendously strong; it already penetrates all my intestines! Oh, how pleasing is this light for my whole being! I see it now in the form of a four-year-old child with an extremely friendly expression! And it must be very wise; since it looks like a most purely thought small god, but not like a phantasy god of the Egyptians, Greeks, and Romans, but like a wondrous effigy of the true God of the Jews! It is an effigy of true divinity!

Oh, now I can see very clearly that there is only one true God; but only those will see His holy face, who have a perfectly pure heart! For me it will be quite difficult to see Him since my heart is already very impure! You will, friend Zinka, because I can't detect any impurities in your heart, except the spot and the thread, the necessary means by which you must be connected to the world for some time!

But now I can see the wide end of the avenue in quite some distance. There is no sign of the sea anymore, everywhere the lushest and most beautiful land and gardens and gardens on end, everywhere the most beautiful houses and palaces! Oh, this is indescribable splendor!

My friend says that this is far short of heaven, but it is Paradise. No mortal has made it into heaven as yet, because up to now no bridge has been built too there. All the good who lived on earth since the beginning of creation, stay here with Adam, Noah, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. Those high mountains form the border of this wondrous magnificent land. Who would get onto those mountains could see heaven with the great crowds of angels of God, but nobody could enter until a firm bridge is built for ever over the bottomless great abyss.

We are walking now as fast as the wind. The light-person in me is already the size of an eight-year-old boy, and it appears to me that his thoughts are penetrating my whole being like lightning. I can feel their incomprehensible sublimity and depth, but I still do not grasp their forms. Something wondrous must be in it! Every ejected thought flash causes me an indescribable feeling of sensational happiness! Such happiness is unknown to the whole world, which cannot feel it! Because the whole world is only a merciful judgement of God, but nevertheless a judgement; in the best judgement happiness is always distributed meagerly.

Now we are getting quite close to the high mountains, and it is getting increasingly marvelous! Which indescribable variety of miracles over miracles! To describe them all, a thousand lifetimes would not be enough!

And look at that, on the mountains live countless of the most beautiful people! But it seems that they do not notice us, this means me and my dear friend; since they are passing us with quick and always happy steps, but do not show that they can see us, while even the trees are noticeable greeting my friend! These are strange spirit people!

Ah, ah, at this opportunity we have reached the summit of one of the high mountains! O God, o God, there we are standing now, and especially me, like a true ox at the mountain! I see increasingly clearer in the farthest distance a great, exceedingly bright horizon. It is the beginning of the heaven of God, which continuously expands, higher and higher forever!

But between here and there yawns an abyss, greater than the space between earth and the sun! A bridge will be built across! With God everything is quite possible!

But now my inner light-person is as big as I'm myself, and strange, I'm starting to get sleepy, and my friend tells me to rest on the green and odorous lawn! I will do so!"

The Relationship between Body, Soul, and Mind.

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol. 4:ch 54 by Jalob Lorber

Says I: "See, only now he will enter the third stage; pay close attention to what he has to say!"

Ask Cyrenius: "Lord, if Zorel falls asleep on the lawn which is invisible to us, what is the reason for this? Is this a must, or could he enter the third stage without falling asleep?"

Says I: "If a soul would be pure, it would also go without a certain sleep; but as long as the soul is connected to the body by certain bonds, a certain anesthesia must occur between the changeover of stages, in which the soul unnoted passes over into the next stage. What the soul of Zorel has seen and spoken in the second stage, was, except for himself, a circumstantial appearance; only in the third stage will she become truly clairvoyant, and what she is going to say there, will be a full reality."

Ask Cyrenius: "What actually is this sleep? How and whereby does it originate?"

Says I: "Is it really necessary for you to know that? Now then, if you really want to know this, I must explain it to you, and therefore listen!

If you carry a shirt on your body and has according to the Greek custom trousers on your legs, shirt and trousers live because of the movement of your body, this means they must submit to your will, just as the limbs of your body must submit to the will of your soul. If you in summer plan to take a bath, you take off your clothes, because you do not need them in the bath. Shirt and trousers are in a necessary state of rest while you are in the bath and have neither motion nor movement. If you get out of the bath again, your shirt and trousers will immediately have the same motion and movement as before and will so to speak live with you. But why did you take off your clothes to take a bath? See, because they were getting heavy and started to press you! But you strengthen yourself in the bath, and your heavy clothes will feel completely feather light after the bath.

If your soul becomes tired and weak from the discomforts during the day, the need awakes in her for a revitalizing and strengthening rest. The tired soul then soon takes off her jointed flesh garment and enters the restorative bath of a spiritual water and bathes, cleans, and strengthens herself; if she got her strength back, she again puts on her flesh garment and moves its heavy limbs with great ease.

But now you surely have seen or rather observed real lively by the monologue of Zorel, that in his soul another inner light-person out of the heart of the soul started to sprout, to whom the soul stands in the same relationship, as the material body to the soul. Now, this light-person in this his soul as his jointed garment, never received any strengthening whatsoever; he was lying in the heart

of the soul like the egg in the woman without the male stimulation, excitement, and awakening. By this very treatment the actual primordial life germ became stimulated, excited and awakened for the moment by My and Zinka's word, and since this has happened to him, he started to grow for as long as his entire soul, which is his garment, was filled with his pure spiritual being.

But the soul, although purified as much as possible for the moment, still contains certain material parts in her, which are too heavy for the pure spirit, since he never was used to carrying such a yoke before. This spirit person, which was so to speak awakened in an artificially spiritual manner and was forced to grow rapidly, is still much too weak to carry the slow-moving heavy soul and longs for rest and strengthening. Thus this false sleep of the soul on the mountain lawn is therefore nothing else than the spirit taking off the most material parts of his soul; he only keeps what is similar to him in the soul, while the other must rest in the meantime, just like the body rests silently while the soul is strengthening herself, or like the shirt is resting when you take a revitalizing, strengthening bath.

During the strengthening of the more noble human sphere and the simultaneous resting of the coarser and less noble outer parts, there still exists a connection. If somebody came while you refresh yourself in the bath and would take away your clothes and start to destroy them, then your natural and necessary love for your clothes would immediately raise an immense and fierce veto. A much closer connection exists between the body and the soul, who wanted to take away the carnal garment and try to destroy it before its time, would be treated by the soul in a very strange way.

But the connection between soul and spirit is much more intensive, because the soul, especially if very pure, is herself a spiritual primordial element, and the spirit would make a very terrible movement if one tried to take away his body and dress completely. He immediately would become the highest fire and would destroy everything getting close to him.

But the soul must rid herself of all matter completely, until the spirit can attract what is related to him in her as his own, to become a perfect I with it. The matter of the soul is visible to the spirit in that, whereby the soul is dressed. You have heard when Zorel spoke of a dirty shirt, which he himself washed in the lake, then wringed and put on as a still moist garment. See, this garment is still the material outer side of the soul, which must be taken off and put to rest, before the most inner, divine spirit person can penetrate the now closely related soul fully and become one with her.

It always requires a little time during the moment of transition because everything belonging to the sphere of a free life, must first enter with the new and more noble being in a full relationship (spiritual marriage), before the new being or the new, heavenly person can by himself start to feel, think, see, listen, smell, taste and to act independently. The necessary transition takes place in a certain sleep; if the transition is finished, the new person is completed and requires for his only completely pure spiritual existence for ever no further transition anymore.

In such a state a person is then totally perfect and his being cannot become even more perfected; only with regard to recognizing and a continual perfection of the most pure love and wisdom of the heavens and their ordering, ruling and leading power of the entire infinity, there is a continual increase to eternity and

thereby also achieving a continual higher bliss as a result of the continual higher love, wisdom and power.

Our Zorel will soon appear as such a perfected spirit-person and will continue to inform us by his carnal mouth about the perfection of him to the highest level of a perfected human being. Just pay attention; soon he will start talking again!"

Zorels Insight into Creation.

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol. 4:ch 55 by Jalob Lorber

After I explained such to Cyrenius, Zorel, who all the time was lying there motionless like dead, started to move and became the appearance of someone who was transfigured, to such an extent that even the present Roman soldiers were placed in great reverence by his appearance and one of them said: "This person looks like a sleeping God!"

Cyrenius also said: "Truly, an indescribable elated human picture!"

Finally, Zorel opened his mouth and said: "Thus he is standing perfected in his wisdom before God, who only now recognizes, loves and adores Him!" After this there was a pause.

After the pause Zorel continues speaking and says: "My whole being is light, and I see no shadow, neither in me nor outside me, since also around me everything is light. In this all-light, however, I see a holy light of all holiest lights; it shines like a mighty sun, and in it is the Lord!"

Previously I thought that my friend and guide is a human soul just like we are it is just that in my previous state there was still a lot of deception in me. Only now have I recognized the Guide! He is not with me anymore, but in the sun, I see Him, who is holy above holy! Endless crowds of the most perfect light-spirits are gliding around this sun in all directions and in smaller and wider circles. What infinite majesty! O humans! To see God and to love Him above all is the highest joy and the highest bliss!

But now I do not only see all heavens, but my view is also penetrating the creation of the only almighty God. I can see this our meagre earth through and through and see all islands and mainland of the whole earth. I see the bottom of the seas and everything that exists below it, all the many creatures in the sea from the smallest to the largest. Which infinitive variety lives among them!

I can also see how the gras is built by all kinds of small spirits, which are quite joyful and hardworking. I see how the will of the Almighty obliges them to be hardworking and see the precisely defined objectives and work of each of the countless many spirits. Like the bees working on their wax cells, these little spirits work on and in the trees, bushes, grasses, and plants. However, they all do this if seized and penetrated by the will of Him, who was my Friend and Guide on the narrow and thorny road of my self-trials of life up to here and now resides in this never reachable sun which is His primordial light from where His will reaches into all infinity.

Yes, He is the only Lord, no one is equal to Him! Big and small must follow His will. Nothing exists in the whole of infinity, that could oppose Him. His power is above all and His wisdom can never be understood. Everything that exists is

from Him, and there exists nothing in the infinite space of His creation, which has not arisen out of Him.

I see the forces coming from Him like the rays of the rising sun in the morning, penetrating all directions with lightning speed, and where the rays reach something, it starts to stir, to become alive and to move, and soon new forms and shapes arise. However, the form of humans is the boundary- and end marker and its forms are a real form of heaven; since the whole heaven, which boundaries are only known to God, is also a person and each society of the angels is also a perfect human.

This is a great secret of God, and who does not stand on the spot where I am standing now, for him it is impossible to understand and comprehend such; since only the purest spirit out of God in man can comprehend and understand and see what the spirit is and what there is in him and outside him, and how it originates and remains, and why and what for! Nothing exists in the whole of infinity which would not be there for man; everything is aimed at man and his always and everywhere needs."

The Nature of Man and his Creative Destiny

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol. 4:ch 56 by Jalob Lorber

(Zorel:) "God Himself is the highest and most perfect, most everlasting primordial Man out of Himself; this means, man is in Himself a fire, whose emotion is love; a light, whose emotion is mind and wisdom; and warmth whose emotion is the life itself in the fullest sphere of his about-himself-consciousness. If the fire gets more intense, also the light becomes more intense and more powerful the warmth which creates everything and finally shines far into distance, and the ray is light itself, contains the warmth, and this creates in a far distance just like in itself. What is created increasingly absorbs more light and warmth, shines, and warms increasingly further and further away and again creates where it reaches. And in such a way everything reproduces forever out of the primordial fire, primordial light and out of the primordial warmth and fills continuously more and more the infinitive space of creation.

Thus everything takes its origin out of the primordial being of God and develops itself until it resembles the primordial being of the primordial Man, in which resemblance it then exists in an entirely independent freedom in the form of a man out of God, just like a God by himself in the necessary arch friendliness with the primordial God, since it is the same what the primordial God Himself is.

Where you can see light, fire and warmth, man is either completed or in the beginning. Billions of light-, fire- and warmth atoms cocoon themselves and produce forms. The individual forms seize each other anew, cocoon themselves into larger forms which already corresponds more to man, and develop themselves therein into a being. This being now produces already more of fire, light and warmth; together with this a higher need for a higher and more perfect form arises. The many, nevertheless already more perfected forms in themselves, tear apart their outer skin, seize each other, and with the substance of their will they again cocoon themselves into a higher and more complete form. This continues until the perfection of man is reached, and then man develops himself until the state, in which I am now, and therefore completely resembles the

primordial fire, primordial light and primordial warmth, which is God, whom I now see with a steady view in His primordial light, in Him the full fire and the full warmth, which is the only God from eternity to eternity.

Man, therefore, is firstly a man out of God and only then a man out of himself. For as long he is only out of God, he resembles an embryo in the mother's womb; only if he becomes a man out of himself according to the order of God, then he is a perfect man, because only thereby he can reach the true resemblance of God. If he has reached that stage, then he stays like a God in eternity and has himself become a creator of further worlds and beings and people. Because it is strange that I now can see all my thoughts, emotions and desires, and my will is equal to the outer skin of what I have thought and what I have felt! See, in this way creation continues always anew!

The emotion as warmth, and therefore love, has the need to be a being; however, the more the emotion becomes stronger, and the more flames and warmth are produced, also the light of the flames is getting stronger.

In the light the need of love is expressed in forms. But the forms arise and immediately pass again, just like the so-called eyelid pictures of a person with closed eyes and who has a heated imagination; but instead, others arise again, become bigger, stay longer and take on more defined forms. But with perfected people, like with me now of course for just a short while, the form remains, because immediately seized by the will, it is quickly given an outer skin whereby the appeared form is kept steady and cannot change anymore; but since the outer skin is originally only highly ethereally tender and therefore translucent, continuously lighter and warmth from the creator penetrates the now caught thought. This increases the caught thought's own light and warmth, the two spiritual elements from which it originally originated, and soon the caught thought begins to develop more and more according to the light of wisdom and the most perfect realization, which arranges necessarily and purposefully organically the even most delicate construction clearer than the brightest day in all its necessary parts, connections, and limbs. Once the thought has an organically arrangement, an own life conscious of itself, starts to come into being and directs itself.

Now one can imagine that a perfected person in a few moments can think and organize a countless number of all kinds of thoughts and ideas and furnishes them organically completely. If he wants to put a skin around them with his will, they will survive and develop and, in the end, themselves resemble the Creator in their natural highest limited self-perfection and shall reproduce and create their own and by doing so out of themselves accomplish the endless multiplication of their own kind in the same way they have stepped into being. Even the material world can show tangible proofs of that.

Self-reproduction of the body you find with plants, animals, humans and with celestial bodies, which also reproduce. However, limits have been placed on their reproduction. A seed pellet of a certain kind has only a certain number of reproduced identical seed pellets assigned to it, which number cannot be exceeded by it; the same with animals, namely: the bigger the animal, the more limited the reproduction! It is just the same with people, and a lot more so with celestial bodies. But in the kingdom of spirits of the perfected people, the emotion and thinking continue forever, just as with God. Since according to the previously

described manner each thought and each idea can be surrounded with a skin by the will of the spirit who created it, and finally could become independent, it is understandable, that the everlasting reproduction of beings can never come to an end.

You, Zinka, are now asking in your soul, where in the end all the endlessly multiple created beings find space if the creation will continue to increase forever in such an enormously multiple measure and relation. O friend, just think, that the physical space itself is infinitive, and if you forever in every moment could create ten times hundred thousand suns, they would, if moving with the greatest speed through space, be lost forever in the infinitive space as if no sun had ever been created! Nobody, except God, comprehends the eternal infinity of space; even the greatest and most perfected angels cannot grasp the eternal depths of space, but only tremble before the endless depths of everlasting space!

O friend, I can see now with the eyes of my soul the entireness of the material creation! This earth, its moon, the great sun and all the countless stars which you can see, of which some of them, appearing to your eyes as a faintly shimmering speck, are in fact unmeasurable large solar- and world territories, containing milliard times milliard of suns and even more planets, are less in relation to the present entire creation, than a tiniest and finest sun-dust-particle compared to the entire space full of stars visible to you! In addition I can tell you, that among the many stars which your eye can see, are quite a few which diameter is many thousand times larger, than the line itself from for you barely visible farthest star to another star in the opposite direction with the same distance, - a distance, even if you would travel with the speed of lightning, it would take you longer than one milliard times milliard earth years!

Thus, even individual bodies are of such puzzling size, and still, they appear to your eye as barely shining specks of light, because of their too great distance from here! Nevertheless, all this compared to the entireness of the entire creation, is, as already stated, a tiniest dust particle which can be easily carried by the rays of the sun! I say to you: you can create one milliard suns with all its planets and moons and comets and spread them out in this sun-territory-globe, and they will just as little restrict noticeably this globe-space, as a drop of water would noticeably enlarge the sea and its wide seabed; and a milliard times milliard globes would be in the entire present territory of creation, just as little noticeable than a milliard raindrops in the sea.

Look at the whole world! How many thousands of brooks, rivers and streams are flowing into the sea, but despite this it doesn't expand one little bit; now imagine as many creations over creations as you like in each moment, and they will get lost in the infinitive space, just as myriads times myriads drops of water falling into the sea each moment, are lost in it. Therefore, you do not have to worry small-heartedly about the many creations; since in infinity there is forever sufficient space available for the infinite, and God is powerful enough, to maintain everything forever and to finally guide everything to a main objective!"

Zorels Insight into the Evolutionary Processes of Nature

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol. 4:ch 57 by Jalob Lorber

(Zorel:) "I can tell you even more, Zinka! Everything what you ever have thought, spoken or did on this earth since your youth, and what you have thought, spoken or did in your pre- earthly soul existence, is written in the book of life; of this you carry a copy in the head of your soul, but the very big copy lies always wide open in front of God. Once you have been perfected, just as I am now standing perfected in front of God, you again will find in detail all your thoughts, words, and deeds. In what was good, you will of course find great joy; but that what was not according to the good order, you will not be very happy about, but, as a perfected person you will also feel no grief about it. Because from that you will recognize the great mercy and wise guidance of God, and this will strengthen your pure love to God and in all patience towards those poor and imperfect brothers, who will be entrusted to your guidance by God the Lord, irrespective if in this or any other world.

From those your recorded thoughts, someday new creations will arise. Normally from these recorded thoughts, words, and deeds, larger or smaller world bodies are created in the near future. They will put into the fire of suns, to reach a certain ripeness; when reached such, they are guided out into space of creation with the greatest force, and in time gradually handed over to their own development. With time in such a newborn world the many thousand times thousand single thoughts and ideas are developing more and more by the life-germ-like fire and light - like seed pellets which have been placed into the earth -, to serve the new world as a basis for the later origin of all kind of beings, like minerals, plants and animals, from whose souls in time human souls are formed.

Such new worlds you can see from time to time to the biggest part as misty nebulous stars, also as tail stars flying through space. Their primordial origin are the recorded thoughts, ideas, words, and actions in the book of God.

From this you can see, that even the slightest thought which ever was thought by a person, either on this or on another earth, is impossible to ever get lost; and the spirits, from whose thoughts, words and ideas and actions such a new world has been formed by the will of God, are soon recognizing in their perfected state, that such a world is a result of their thoughts, ideas, words and actions, and are pleased to take over with a great feeling of bliss the guidance, management, development and full revitalization and purposefully inner organization of the world body itself and finally of all things and beings, which must exists on such a world body.

You now look at this earth and see nothing than dead-seeming matter. I also see the dead-seeming forms of matter; but I see much more in it, what you can't see with your eyes. I see in it the banned spiritual things and beings and feel their aspirations, and see, how they continuously grow in the inner development and better and more focused shaping and evolvement of their purposefully forms, and again I see countless spirits and little spirits, who are incessantly active like the sand in a Roman hourglass. There is no talk of any rest, and by their incessant activity the entire purposefully formation of all and every life in nature is produced.

I say to you: In each dewdrop, which trembles so brightly on the tip of a blade of grass, I see like in the sea already myriads of beings busying in all

direction! The water in the drop is only a first and general enveloping skin around a thought of God. From this the caught little spirits in it are taking their individual envelope and thereupon immediately exist already as a more specific form, which is already quite different from the outer general form; however, thereby the drop as a water pearl disappears, and the newly formed forms as already life carrying little cocoons are creeping on the plants and other things, where the drop of water was formed. However, these cocoons seizing each other, soon transform into other forms, and hundred thousand become one. A new skin is formed around the new form; in it the many little forms are converted by the influence of the light and the warmth in to a purposefully organism of the new and bigger form, and the new being starts a new activity in preparation for a repeated transformation in to a more and more developed form, in which it again starts to become active for the transformation in to an even higher and more complete form. And in this way the visible activity of a being entered in a certain form, is nothing else than the right preparation for a higher and more perfect form for the increasingly greater firmness of the soul-life and finally for the pure spiritual life in the human form.

What I tell you here is no phantasy, but the purest and eternal truth. I could still tell you a lot of things about the order of God, as I see it know with the clearest realization! But I also realize now that the time of this my perfection comes to an end; therefore, I must hereby add a request, that you, if I become a very silly and amongst others an annoying person again, will have patience with me and will guide me on the right path of the order of God which is now known to you. You will be most surprised, if I wake up in the world, that I will be silly and dark again and will not know one single syllable from everything what happened to me; nevertheless, everything will still be to my advantage.

For a while, my spirit being forced to become ripe, will become tired of this unusual and untrained state and will remain sleep mute; but he will by the now still necessary rest be strengthened and will wake up and feel the urgency of the real life perfection, which blest sweetness he was able to taste, and thus will contribute substantially to the quicker full education of the soul, so that she soon become ripe in him in all truth and right ability, to fully integrate with the spirit penetrating her.

I will be sleeping once more for another half an hour, after which you have to wake me by the opposite placing of your hands. But if I wake up again, then do not let me go, until I haven't fully recognized the Person of all persons at this table! Since He is one with Him whom I still can see in the sun of the eternal large spirit world.

Thank you for laying your hands on me!"

Judge Not!

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Vol. 4:ch 58 by Jalob Lorber

After these words our Zorel slept peacefully and Zinka said: "No, what this person has revealed to us! If all this is true, then we have received some knowledge, of which any prophet hardly ever could have dreamt of! No, I'm completely distraught about this person's deepest wisdom! Truly! No angel can possess deeper wisdom!"

Also says Cyrenius: "Yes, this person must be helped, since so many of the highest wonders of Your divine order have been revealed here! The revelations of Mathael were big and made me think; but what Zorel has revealed to us, is unheard of! Nearly unbelievable and unthinkable that such most inner depths of wisdom can be couched in human words and made clearly understandable! Briefly, I am completely beyond myself about this Zorel! If he could say this also in the following awakened state of the flesh, oh, I would place him on a throne, from which he could preach to the people the high truth, so that they all with more certainty achieved the true and perfect destination of their being and life!"

Says I: "Very good, friend Cyrenius! For the time being it is not that important what he prophesied during his third stage - although everything is absolutely true, but rather a lot more that you in future should not break the stick over any person, just because he is an ill soul. Since all of you have heard and felt it now, that in any soul, no matter how ill, rests a most healthy life-germ; and if the soul is healed by your brotherly efforts, you have made a profit, which forever no world can pay you! How useful can such a perfected person be! Who can gauge his influence?! You people do not know it, but I know it, how much of such an effort is worth the trouble!

Therefore, I say it to you: Always be merciful even towards the great sinners and criminals against your and against the divine laws! Since it is only possible for an ill soul to commit a sin, but never for a healthy soul, because for a healthy soul it is impossible to sin, since the sin is always the result of an ill soul.

Who among you people can judge and punish a soul because she was violating one of My commandments, since you are all standing under the same law?! One of the laws by Me explicitly states that you should not judge anyone (mt.07,01)! If you judge one of your neighbors who have sinned against My laws, you also sin in the same measure against my law! But how can you as being a sinner yourself, judge and condemn another sinner?! Don't you know that, when condemning your soul sick bother to hard atonement, you have served a double condemning judgement on yourself, which one day, if not under circumstances already here, will be fulfilled?!

If somebody from you is a sinner, he should resign as a judge; because if he judges someone, he judges himself into downfall twofold, from which he will recover more difficult than him who was judged and condemned by him. Can a blind man ever lead someone else and put him on the right path?! Or can one deaf person tell another deaf person something about the harmonic effects of music, as it was practiced in the purest form by David? Or can one disabled person say to another: 'Come here, you poor man, I will take you to the inn!?' Will not soon both slip and fall into a ditch?!

Hence, remember this above all, not to judge anybody, and make sure that also those who one day will become your disciples, take this to heart! Because by practicing this My teaching, you will make angels out of people, - but through non-observance you will create devils and judges against yourselves.

It is true, nobody on this earth is perfect; however, the one who is more perfect in his mind and heart, should be the guide and doctor of his ill brothers and sisters, and the strong should carry the weak, otherwise he succumbs with the weak, and both will not make any progress!

So that you can recognize this from the ground in all truth, I have given you with Zorel a tangible example, from which you can recognize, how terribly wrong it is, to judge a criminal according to your ways! Indeed, your way to judge will always remain the way of the world, and it will be difficult to ever completely crush the hard, diamond-like head of the dragon of tyranny - because for this very reason the earth is a test world for My future children -; but among you it should not continue, since among you the heavens are strewing fruits filled with plentiful seed kernels.

If you enjoy the fruits of My zeal now, do not forget to strew the leftover seed kernels copiously as possible into the hearts of your brothers and sisters, so that it can grow and carry plentiful and healthy new fruit! But how a new and wondrous new fruit is produced from the seed kernels placed into the heart, has been clearly shown to you by Zorel in the greatest detail. Act accordingly and you will as if out of yourself create life and receive the perfection of the everlasting life as shown to you right now! After this act of laying-on of hands it is given to you to follow and act accordingly in the most precise manner.

But now the time has come for you, Zinka, to lay your hands on Zorel in the opposite manner, so that he can wake up again; if he wakes up, you Markus, give him wine with some water, so that his body can regain his former strength! If he wakes up and starts talking like before, do not become annoyed and do not remind him of anything that he has said during his raptures state, because this could cause a bodily disadvantage in him. Do not laugh at him either, if he says something silly! In good time you can guide him very gently towards Me; but do not be too hasty, otherwise it could harm him for quite a long time! And now, Zinka, perform your duty since Markus has already returned with the wine and water!" . . .

Chapter 10: The Jesus answers questions about the Suffering of the Soul

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Col. 4: Ch241 by Jakob Lorber



. . . Mathael "It seems to me that the guidance of spirits or even very deranged souls into the beyond using Your love and almighty powers, means that the road to recovery is a little too protracted and harsh! It is true, that in this regard You have spoken of, demonstrated, and explained to us many things to justify unequivocally Your divine order established in eternity and yet this truly legal question still comes up forcefully and demands an answer from us:

What can an apple do if a storm tears it off its branch or a splintered tree if it becomes the target of a lightning strike or a calm sea is whipped up by the fury of a hurricane to produce mountainous waves?! Can a rattlesnake help it if its bite is deadly?! Belladonna has not given poison to the plant! Everywhere one wedge drives another and in the end, no one can prevent being driven!

A large piece of loose rock falling from a high cliff can create devastation among a flock of sheep grazing by chance at the base of the cliff. Who is the guilty party who will pay for the damage? If I trip over a stone at night and fall down, who is guilty in this case, - the night, the rock, or my sightless foot? In a word, there are many difficult questions of fault where in all cases mutual violation of the individual primordial natural rights can be grasped with both hands! In principle, from where does it originate?

I noticed something similar with people. These black people are still in possession of their primordial human properties and we white peoples did not have the slightest idea about it until this day! Why not? The answer is that because of our imperfect souls, the soul had to be destroyed because man's brain was already destroyed in its mother's womb and later by a totally incorrect upbringing! I clearly must support the question from Oubratouvishar and say: Yes, yes, mankind is evil and thoroughly spoilt but who spoiled man originally and who allowed man to be spoilt? As a result of the spoilage people can only want something which is completely wrong and therefore can never improve but only become worse and more wretched!"

Apparent Inequality in the soul here and in the hereafter

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Col. 4: Ch242 by Jakob Lorber

(Mathael:) "Now, in this world, for some at least, it is still more or less satisfactory! He creates for himself a little paradise as best he can. Of course, thousands of others must therefore suffer even more, the reason being that they lacked the knowledge to create a little paradise for themselves as this specific clever one could! They are therefore destroyed in their souls by envy and rage – while every owner of his little paradise is afflicted by sensuality and opulence! The first are damned in their penury and misery - while the rich are condemned by their good life!

The hair stands on end when we seriously contemplate the extremely pitiful state to which a soul is condemned if it is corrupted one way or another! What curse can lend the human mouth the necessarily colorful words for this description? Only the greatest tortures inflicted by the fire of rage in the soul as a nameless evil humiliation can bring the soul to a slightly more tolerable condition, but the time factor required will always be somewhat of an eternity! How many souls will therefore from now on and for countless earth years end up in the deepest and most abject misery, only to succeed, again myriads of earth years later, in achieving greater freedom by a hair's breadth and thus progress to reach a more tolerable state!

Lord, I have stated this using Your words and I have not added or removed anything! If I now consider on the one hand Your omnipotence, goodness and love and on the other hand the at least in principle blameless corruption of every wretched soul and the hair-raising consequences which last almost forever and finally the attainment of a heaven of bliss after all the indescribable tortures, a heaven which is hardly one hair's breadth better than well-organized slavery on this dear mother earth, - I must openly admit to You, despite all the blessings that You, My Lord, have graciously given to me, that I find this very difficult to accept in my mind and, as a person with a sensitive heart, I detect a level of injustice by comparison with which all the greatest and most appalling injustices committed by man are as nothing. I am of course most grateful for my presence here, whatever the outcome may finally be!

It is quite right as You, My Lord, have shown, how every man wishing to survive in the presence of Your naked Godhead, must conduct himself as a human being and that You can only provide him with the opportunity but nothing else. In a word, we acknowledge all this, and no further explanation is required. However, the fact that the souls of people, who have existed in the flesh for more than a thousand years and have then been educated in the same way as is now unfortunately the case, obliging them to suffer in the hereafter almost without limit of time in order to achieve a marginal improvement, all this appears to me to be very harsh! You Yourself taught us to behave kindly, gently, and tolerantly towards sick souls! However, if a sick soul is not cured here on this earth and enters the hereafter still thoroughly impaired – if no spark of love or consideration can or may be shown to that soul, I believe here too mercy and love should replace excessively strict discipline and justice!

I admit with pleasure that the perfected life of a soul, united with God's spirit, is the greatest treasure; however, experience also shows us, that a treasure

much of its value if one must search for it for too long and with excessive difficulty.

Someone wishes to take a wife. He already knows the one chosen by his heart. When he asks for her hand, conditions are put to him which will take him a thousand years to satisfy completely, and the associated difficulties are almost insurmountable! It is not of any great surprise if the man abandons his heart's desire to marry the chosen one and instead courts a maiden from a lesser background as the conditions imposed on him are much more tolerable and easier to achieve?

There, My Lord, You have my hopefully well-reasoned viewpoint and perhaps I have also revealed the weakness in my heart! I am therefore asking You, as You Yourself asked us for questions about anything unclear! Please graciously enlighten me?"

God's Being - The necessary burden of proof on earthly life.

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Col. 4: Ch243 by Jakob Lorber

I say: "Yes, yes, this is the nub of the problem which, after I explained the brain, I discovered not just in you but in several others. This is why I told you to ask.

It goes without saying that God, always unchanging as the highest and purest love from eternity, can never be in any way without love. Furthermore, He will enlist in the most vigorous way all the services and means available to Him to cure any sick soul no matter how ill it may be. However, He is not able to remove the soul's own character but must leave it untouched and influence the soul so that, if everything else is to no avail, to achieve betterment by a kind of admonition!

In an extreme case this route can of course be extremely cumbersome; however, nobody feels more guilty than the soul itself which has become too obstinate and selfish, and which of course became like that because of its imperfect nature which I explained to you previously.

But this is the full strength, every individual will of the soul which is the way it wishes it to be and always does what it thinks to be best! Now, in this case an all- powerful and therefore violent reaction is of no use because that would cause the soul to suffer the most unspeakable pain! – if even gentle intervention can cause the soul inexpressible pain just think what it must endure if the force is excessive?!

God in Himself is the most intense fire of all fires and the strongest light of all lights! But who can withstand a fire if he himself is not a fire or endure an intense light if he himself is not also a light?! Look at the left brain which is still here! Do you see any fire in it or any light, even shining only as brightly as a little glowworm in the night? What does it take for this brain to become the fiercest fire and the most radiant light?

However, if I wished to begin to exert My influence most powerfully here, you would no longer see these two left brain assemblies as they would immediately be transformed and dispersed into the familiar little tongues of fire until My willpower takes command and transmutes them into a new being. What then happens to the present one?

However, so that no being which existed once, can ever be destroyed in the sphere of influence of its soul or be transformed into another being and thus lose its primordial ego, My eternally immutable established ordinances remain valid! Even if a soul takes an unimaginably long time to reach perfection, it will still remain its very own primordial ego and will forever recognize itself as unalterable - which is hopefully more comforting, than for a soul to be completely dispersed and transformed into another individual, as necessarily all recollection of an earlier being will cease and there would be no remaining trace of that being! What would then be the value of a freely self-determining earlier life? Would a human then be any better than a worm creeping around in the dust?!

The earlier life is mainly blessed with all kinds of difficulties. A person, even if he is a son of a king, must endure quite onerous trials from his birth until his death. He often makes a thousand plans which he wants to carry through successfully; but soon unexpected obstacles arise, and all his fine plans fail. In their place there are all kinds of drudgeries, illnesses, annoyances, - in a word, for every encouraging day, there are five other days in which nothing particularly positive occurs and in every year a man will certainly have at least thirty completely bad days!"

Man's Ego as the True Master of His Fate

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Col. 4: Ch244 by Jakob Lorber

(The Lord:) "If one carefully looks at the life of man even under the most favorable conditions, one easily recognizes that nothing should be taken for granted. From the king to the beggar, each one must fight the battle with the summer flies of life, which are full of stings and are not attractive in themselves. During childhood man is plagued by weakness, as a man with all kinds of troubles and as an old man with both, and nobody views the last hour of his life as his best time.

The earthly life creeps along mostly surrounded by thorns and thistles, and someone who does not like them, will at the end of his earthly life in the flesh not be able to talk a great deal about pleasant and blessed things. The more self-centered someone is, the more insults he will have to deal with. The least self-centered is least affected by all the persistent summer flies which sting and all the denigrating and offensive thorns and thistles. Someone who has not lost his composure through all manner of physical suffering, poverty, frequent hunger and thirst, cold, poor quality clothes and even a poor home together with all kinds of other misfortune, will still be able to speak at the end of his life of good times, while even a king despite all the incense strewn for him will at the end of his earthly life only complain about the disappointments upon disappointments he has had to endure.

Where is there a king living who has succeeded in everything that he intended to achieve at the beginning of his reign?! As that was impossible and he finally had to acknowledge some of his own miscalculations, he is very unhappy, and it is a well-known fact that kings mostly die as a result of some secret inner grief.

The self-assured educated person, as he lives his earthly life, is completely conscious of himself and the ways in which he has completed the tests that his life

on this earth has imposed on him. Whether My ordinances were observed or not we shall disregard here as in every respect earthly life offered him little advantage but rather all kinds of bitterness. Therefore, the great worldly wise among the gentiles did not wish to praise anyone on this world as fortunate, excepting only those who had returned to the lap of the earth.

What would then be the reward for a soul withstanding all the troubles, if it, after leaving its body, would then lose its identity as the indestructible primordial ego, and either ceased to exist or became divided into a thousand other egos?! Would any of you be content with a re-arrangement of My ordinances like this? Surely not! Therefore, it is My opinion that it will be better to retain the old order and above all to ensure that, however unfortunate an ego, it does not suffer permanent harm to its identity!

That an ego can and must only then become perfectly happy, when it has entered My order by a process of self-determination, as you now know perfectly well. I have preached to you for seven days without interruption and have guided you back to the primordial root of all creation in the spiritual and physical worlds. However, the fact that on the other hand a soul cannot enter a permanent state of bliss for as long it does not use self-determination to return freely to My order, I have shown to you in many ways through words, deeds and examples and again described them verbally. How can I be said to be cold, merciless, stubborn, or unjust? Or can you describe something that is necessary for a person to be stubborn? Yes, with one grain less of patience and just as little tolerance, I would of course be hard and unjust - but not at all as the way I am now!"

The Human Soul Chosen to be a Child of God.

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Col. 4: Ch245 by Jakob Lorber

(The Lord:) "However the fact that you say, Mathael, that I am guilty in the end because people have adopted over a long period of time a totally perverse concept of life and they will perish as a result, I immediately reply to you and say: Souls, like those of these black people, have so far not been called to become children of God, and what they have to offer is the more stereotypically maintained perfection in their souls. This should not be seen as a special consequence of the excellent development of their souls but rather that it has been given to them like their black skins. However, if they also want to become children of God, then all this will not be given to them, only the doctrine.

If they decide for themselves and try to achieve perfection in their souls using their own strengths by awakening in themselves My spirit of love, they will be of course similar to you now. However as long the perfection in their souls is two thirds given to them and only one third self-acquired, they can never use this perfection to awaken their own spirits and also remain in the afterlife what they are here, namely, quite good, but somewhat mechanically blessed, perfected souls, for whom the limits of their state of bliss have necessarily already been fixed and can never be altered.

Where this one proviso is given, the logical conclusion which must follow is surely not self-determination. He who gave you the head, surely also gave you the hands, the body, and the feet! Or do you think that they were spontaneously produced by the head?

It is indeed something completely different when it comes to a self-determining soul developing itself according to the word received from God! What it has is its own property to use and create a thousand heavens and more as it now has its own materiality and substance together with the perfect God-like power awakened by the spirit of love to accomplish this and to be as perfect in everything, as the Father in heaven is perfect! - And now let us continue! {lev.11,44; lev.19,02; lk.06,36;}

With a soul, like the one these blacks confidently own, it can be dealt with soon and easily in the beyond; since what it has, it has, and it stays with it. For itself it forever does not have a higher need and is perfectly happy, similar like a bee, when it has found a rich, honey filled flower chalice; however, beyond the honey it forever feels no need. Once the bee has what it was searching for it already has everything; all the other treasures of the whole of infinity have no meaning for it.

However, it is completely different with a self-perfecting soul! In order to achieve this, all the necessary means had to be made fully available to it, through which, if it wants to use them, necessarily and infallibly must reach perfection; but the required means are surely never enforced upon the soul, who is called to become voluntarily a child of God, but is only made available to it, just like the materials which are necessary to build a house are made available to wise master builder. From there on the master builder uses them according to his own thinking and builds a house from it according to his insight and according to his taste, and the built house is then completely his own work and not a work of him, who supplied the material to him. However, if you have ordered the best materials to build for yourself a dwelling, but you do not build it yourself, but call upon a master builder to build the required house for you, can you then also say: 'See, this now beautiful and best furnished house is my work!?' Surely not, since the house always stays the work of him, who built it according to his thinking and recognition!

And see, in the same way the perfect souls of the blacks are not their own work! They of course are built quite well, but the blacks have contributed only very little to it. However, if so and not otherwise, they for the time being cannot reach the childhood of God; if, however, it would be given to some of them to achieve this, their souls would immediately begin to look more imperfect. *But since a soul, who is called to become a child of God, is only given the material to build itself and alongside the teaching, how to build, it is surely sufficiently explained, that also in the beyond nothing more can be done for it, if it should retain its individuality.* Even if a soul is still so corrupted, it never can be touched by My omnipotence, and only the material can be supplied to it in such measure, as it is able to use it; one also cannot burden it with more, than it can carry with its strength."

God's Reasons for Independent Perfection of a Free Human Soul

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Col. 4: Ch246 by Jakob Lorber

(The Lord:) "Normally a severely corrupted soul is always very weak, so that it is not even able to keep its human form erect and therefore appears in the beyond normally in a half, sometimes also in a distorted animal-like shape. Now,

in time it will be given more and more strength, without it noticing, but then the greatest care is taken, that thereby the soul is not disturbed in its individuality. Simultaneously such support causes the soul a lot of pain, since such a weak soul is extremely sensitive and irritable.

If I suddenly wanted to provide it with too much strength, such heavenly generosity will drive the soul to desperation by the most horrible pain, whereby it finally would become more closed up than a diamond and it could not be taught anything, before getting completely dissolved, whereby I would give it such a push for which not easily a self-provided counterweight coming from the soul could be set up. The self-conscious I would thereby be lost for at least one eon of earth years and from that point on it had to begin to collect and recognize itself again, what for the soul in its free, immaterial state would be much more difficult to achieve than here, where it has the body as a suitable tool to do this.

For you, My dear Mathael, the extraordinary length of time has caused you too much strain; however, if you could recognize what it takes, to bring a soul to a point where it is free to such extent, that it becomes what it is already in you now, you would not have minded the length of time! What do you think? How long has it taken, until you, as a quite perfected soul person, have reached this your current degree of life? If I would calculate all this for you, you would be gripped by horror, and you would not nearly understand it! However, our Raphael knows it quite well and understands it in the right depth of depths.

However, I can tell you, that nobody's soul here is younger than the whole visible creation! You feel now uncomfortable about Me telling you truthfully, that your souls are much more than an eon times eons of earth years old; should I Myself therefore start to feel uncomfortable, because I exist since eternity and by Me and out of Me already eons of pre-creations have come into being during unimaginable long periods of time just because of you?!

Yes, My friend, to create a sun, an earth and all the things on it, is an easy matter! This requires not such a long time. Also to create animal and plant souls under judgment is not difficult. *But to create a soul, completely resembling Me in everything, is quite a difficult matter for the almighty Creator, since there My omnipotence is of no use, but only wisdom and the greatest patience and leniency!*

For, when it comes to bring forth a soul completely resembling Myself, thus a second Godhead, My omnipotence is only allowed to do very little, however, it must do and provide everything for the newly growing God out of Me. From Me he receives the material only spiritually and according to need also physically. And if this would not be the case, and if it could be otherwise, I surely would not, as the most everlasting primordial Spirit, out of love burden Myself with the sourly task, to take on the flesh Myself, in order to guide further the souls who have developed to a certain point, not by My omnipotence, but by My love and to give them a new teaching and the new God-spirit out of Me, so that they now can become within the shortest time frame completely one with Me if they seriously want to.

I am telling you: for My everlasting preliminary work the first harvest only starts now, and you will become My first completely perfect child, which however, still lies within your will and not Mine. And I am now of the opinion, that you,

Mathael, will pardon Me since you hopefully will recognize all that which you earlier did not recognize! Is everything clear to you now?"

How God leads Man to Eternal Bliss – Resurrection of the Body

Ref: "Gifts from Heaven" As revealed to Jakob Lorber (1800 - 1864) Translated by L & A (17 June 1840) - excerpts

Jesus is speaking: "Human beings live with complete free will, either based on God's teachings or according to their own ideas of pleasure.

During life on earth, their souls are imprisoned in their bodies and have no memory of their previous spiritual life. As soon as the bodies can no longer serve the souls (due to age or illness), the souls leave the bodies and immediately enter the world beyond. **This is the judgment day or first day in the world beyond.** After 25 to 100 years, the discarded material bodies are gradually transformed into energy free of matter and then added as an eternal covering of the energized soul.

This is designated as the resurrection of the body. On Easter morning, the body of Jesus was also transformed into pure energy and added to his soul as a covering. The Roman soldiers saw this as a flash of light. Additionally, the resurrection of the body means that the good and bad works of man accompany the soul eternally (viewed spiritually). Each soul takes all of its thoughts and dreams and lives in them for the future. By its nature, the soul is our ego consciousness in an energized body, which lives in the world beyond as does the material body in this life. After passing over to the world beyond, the souls are as imperfect as before. They are shown the true teaching of God, free of false doctrine, by the angels. These consist of:

We human beings should love God, our heavenly Father, above all, who, unknown to most, walked the earth in the person of Christ Jesus. And we should love our neighbors as ourselves. We should become humble, living and acting according to His commands.

No single soul is forced to accept this teaching of love. Also, in the world beyond, souls possess complete freedom of will. Only those souls can obtain eternal bliss, which willingly live according to the principles of Heaven (humility, love of neighbor and love of God).

With their growing perfection, the souls become younger and more beautiful until, fully youthful, they can live in eternal joy. From Jesus they obtain increasing power, and, on His behalf, they can do great things for the well-being of their neighbors. Also, as quick as a flash (speed of thought) they can travel the whole universe.

There are stubborn, blind souls who did not come to believe in God on earth and lived only based on selfishness, hedonism, pride, and imperiousness, at the expense of their fellow men. For them, it can take thousands or millions of years until they are ready to stop living by the principles of Hell, but by those of Heaven: true humility, love of God and love of neighbor."

About Obsession - The slow spreading of the gospel

Ref: "The Great Gospel of John" Col. 4: Ch247 by Jakob Lorber

Says Mathael: "Yes, Lord, this is completely clear to me now; but I also was together with my four companions very bad, I was a devil, nevertheless Your

almighty will has cured me quickly, and because of this, I have not lost my memory about my previous life! How did this happen? Your omnipotence has helped us instantly!"

Says I: "Yes, My friend, this was a completely different case; there not your souls, but only your bodies were corrupted, so that in its intestines a lot of evil spirits had nested! They seized the physical organism to such an extent, that they could rule therein as they pleased, and your souls retreated in the meantime, since they were no match against the great number of spirits and had to allow the spirits to rule the body, as they wanted.

Thereby your souls did not suffer the slightest damage; since such possessions are only allowed there, where a body is inhabited by a soul which already has developed to such a degree, that the evil, still very unripe soul-spirits from the beyond, cannot do any harm.

There My most gentle expression of power is sufficient, to expel thousand times thousand such souls out of the body, of which another example to follow later today will convince you. *Once the spirits are out of the body, you will of course feel a significant weakness in the body, which prevails for as long, until the soul has taken complete control over the entire body's organism again.* If this act is completed, the body is then ruled again by the old, completely healthy soul; in that case only the body is helped by My omnipotence, but not the soul. However, where a soul is corrupted by her own will, My omnipotence cannot help, but only love, teachings and patience, since *each soul must start building by itself and must perfect herself with the material supplied to her.* Do you understand this now? If there is still anything unclear to you, just keep on asking; since now is the time of complete clarification about everything, and you require a lot of light, to properly illuminate all the others in their dark chambers of life!"

Says Mathael: "Lord, the only wisest and most loving from eternity! I am now in the clearest light and believe that there is only a little darkness left in the life chambers of my soul; but where some of the others are standing, You, o Lord, will be of course the only one to know! There will exist some little dark chambers with my father-in-law and with my wife; but with Your mercy and help I will faithfully fill in what is missing!"

Says I: "Do just that; since your father-in-law and your wife were until now still heathens, but heathens of the best kind, of which I can say: There one is dearer to Me than a thousand descendants of Israel in Jerusalem and in the other twelve cities of the whole promised land! Since all those do not want to hear nor to know anything about a close God; they prefer a somewhere infinitely far away God, since in their coarse stupidity they think, that a somewhere endless far standing God can be easier deceived than a God nearby!

O the coarsest misconception among the Jews in this world! However, what else can one do, than with all patience and even with the sacrifice of one's own physical life, if it would become necessary, to guide the people by teachings and corresponding deeds back to the primordial light of all being and life?

And this is now My self-applied task for you, and yours to your fellowmen will follow! Of course, you should not give in to the hope that all this will already take place within the next few years! I say to you: Thousand years from now and

further, no more than half the population of this earth will have heard even one syllable of this My word!

But it does not do too much harm to the matter, since also in the beyond this gospel will be preached to the spirits of all the regions of the world. However, still be full of zeal here; since the right childhood of God for My most inner and purest heaven of love, can only be achieved here! For the first and second heaven can still be taken care of in the beyond."

Closing Message:

Life of Spirits and Cosmic Life

Ref: "Secrets of Life" by Jakob Lorber Chapter 20 - 24 February 1873

God the Father is speaking: "Earlier, in the chapters on "The World of Thought" and on "Life", I have shown you in a few words the many-sidedness of spiritual life, and how it must be understood, so as to have a dim concept of My world and of My might.

In "Words for Short-Sighted People" I have admonished you to study My nature in its vastness. For a great, almighty Creator you can more easily grasp and understand in His great works, although to a thorough investigator on his round in My insignificant works I must also appear great, unrivalled in the tiniest infusorian.

I have said all this in advance so that you may always keep your spiritual eyes and ears open in order to perceive the stream of spiritual light and the tone or the voice of My spiritual cosmic language as it proclaims to you in, and out of, all that is created, the great hymn of eternal love and of never ceasing Mercy, which at every step and with every pulse-beat preaches to you of the Father's love and His grace.

In the word on "Time" I informed you as to what time is and how you shall use it, and under "Human Dignity" I told you what you should do and should not do in order to become My children in My image, and how you should act in worthiness of this image. Under "The World of Thought" I explained to you how everything materially created, every deed will once be weighed and judged only according to its origin, the idea behind it. Now I am sending you another word, full of a sublime creational spirit, so as to more clearly present to you a new view of My creation and My aim with it. This will make you learn to see and, in the midst of the worldly chaos and the bustle of worldly human passions, recognize that far beyond all the physical material it is the Spirit, My will, the great supporter of all that is created, which makes the same come into being, sustains it for a while and then by changing its form leads it towards a higher goal.

In "The World of Thought" I told you that thought, the guiding principle, is superior to anything material, that it is indeed the basis for all that exists. And now I will prove to you that the bustle of the world of thought, when the latter is considered as a spirit-realm, is also the actual factor in all-manifesting life, in all that exists and perishes. For in order to understand and grasp My creation, which is only a spiritual product, you must think as spirits, must contemplate My work as spirits, and must regard the course of the entire spiritual-material life as spirits, if you wish to form a proper idea of Me, of My creation, its duration and of yourselves. Otherwise, you are blind in the midst of the shining light of My

wonders, in the midst of the great harmony-concert of My music of the spheres and My cosmic music, to be likened to the deaf.

And so I will now take you with Me on a spiritual flight through the spirit world divested of all matter, so that you may recognize and grasp who He is who created the world surrounding you, why He created it and why He endowed you, as well as all the intelligent beings living as spirits, according to their capacity, with means enabling you to understand and grasp Him, the almighty Lord and Creator, as well as Him, the Father who loves you everlastingly.

You see, the world, both the great spirit-world and the material world, which is merely an envelope of the former, was created so as to visibly express what, invisible for material beings, for a long time had been and forever will be existing in the spirit-realm, as the primordial carrier of all that is beautiful, true and good, as an expression of Myself and My attributes.

This visible material world, which, merely enveloping what is spiritual, must serve as a guide and a means to perfect this great material world, beginning with the central suns to the tiniest infusorian, has thus the sole purpose of leading the spiritual laid into it to a higher level through matter. However, only the Spiritual imprisoned in matter is destined to always stimulate matter to this perfecting process, so that it alone can remain at the end of all purified and spiritualized matter as a permanent, never-to-be-destroyed eternal, thus bearing witness to Him who created it and who, as an eternal *God, could only create what is eternal, but not ever what is transient.*

Now look, My children! Rise above matter and regard everything created as a spiritual product, and it will become clear to your spiritual eye what spiritual life and what material life is. For spiritual life is the eternal urge of the spirit bound in matter, and material life is the changes manifesting through this urge in the visible material world, such as coming into being, existing and passing away.

Well, the whole of infinity is full of spiritual beings, because infinity constitutes Myself, just as your body constitutes visibly the core of your soul.

All the Spiritual in infinity has its expedient progress, everything has its purpose, its why, where it must be bound, where loosed and when, if bound in matter, it can again, be freed of the same, exist as an independent Spiritual!

Thus, the present world came into being, thus ever new worlds will emerge from the ones which dissolved and passed away, and thus infinity establishes itself as a concept comprehensible also to finite beings.

Just as the smallest spiritual particle, imprisoned in hard rock and manifesting its life through matter, always urges the rock towards a transformation, a dissolution to become on higher levels something different, so also whole cosmic systems, whole spaces and even, finally, the entire visible world. It is this spiritual-material urge, called "life" because it manifests as motion, as action, which, everywhere the same, according to the same principle urges on the smallest worm as well as the greatest solar body, or the angel-spirit still clothed in material envelopment, to higher levels, higher beatitudes and greater delights.

Your own body should only serve toward the soul's spiritualization, by a proper conduct and as a right tool letting itself be used only for actions worthy of a human being and thereby effecting and speeding up the spiritualization process of

your soul. Likewise, the greatest central sun and the entire great universal man who has a task which cannot be calculated in terms of time, so that the Spiritual, more and more liberated, free, led towards higher levels, can fulfill its purpose.

Just as in "The World of Thought" I have elucidated for you the entire spiritual sphere, which is actually the carrier of all that is visible, I now want to make you understand and grasp the idea of a spiritual life, which urges matter to spiritualize itself, whereby it becomes visible to your eyes as material life.

This urging and driving goes on incessantly, like the flow of time, the life of the world of thought. Coming into being, temporary existence and again passing away, these are the visible proofs of the never-resting spirit-world: forever the urge to move forward and upward! From the smallest ether-atom upwards everything drives towards a beginning, an existing and passing away or a passing into a higher order.

Look at your own world with spiritual eyes, how varied are the changes there, how much Spiritual is freed at any moment, voluntarily or involuntarily, to enter into other combinations.

Watch the living beings and animals of every kind, what a consuming, what murder!

Even you people, how many spiritual lives even you destroy daily, so as to provide food or exquisite dainty morsels for your stomach!

How many animals you dispatch to the other world because you have nothing spiritual to occupy your mind and, as with needless hunts, only the pleasure in murder is your pastime!

Millions upon millions of released souls of the animal world fail through this not always justifiable behavior their real destiny of reaching their goal on a slow road. Most of their spiritual particles must first pass through the consumer and in and through him continue their further progress.

But, although this happens, where many a thing is contrary to My will and to My laws, it does not in the least delay the universal developmental progress to which I have subjected the world, but this developmental progress is only speeded up by such an albeit unlawful conduct. And if trespasses against My laws result in dire consequences, only the perpetrators and plotters of such calamities themselves are punished, namely, through their own behavior. But nothing prevents Me, in accordance with My intended plans, from leading My worlds to maturity, from receiving back My Spiritual, which I had laid into them, spiritualized!

Thus, the entire visible world and its visible life are only the apparent, which has as its basis the more profound Spiritual. And so, not only with the smallest animalcule or the solid rock, but also with great worlds, the duration of everything depends on the liberation of its Spiritual bound in its covering.

As with you human beings after the natural course of your life, death should only occur when your soul has matured for the transition to the beyond, so it is with worlds and central suns. Once everything in them is spiritualized, they pass away or dissolve gradually, become more and more spiritualized and their matter becomes lighter and lighter until it is like air or gas, when they (the worlds) will only be destined for beings clad in the lightest material envelopments.

Just as your own body will ultimately on the highest spiritual level no longer be clothed in this heavy matter with which you are encumbered today; also your earth will be spiritualized in the distant future, carrying instead of solid, heavy matter only ethereal substances, ethereal dwellers, who, spiritualizing themselves more and more in step with their earth globe, also pass over, not through great cataclysmic events, but together with their abode, to other circumstances which will be suitable to their spiritual level of understanding.

So, you see how the spiritual life develops gradually from the material, how the one is merely the expression of the other. And you understand more easily how I created the worlds and have an idea as to how great must be the periods of time necessary to affect such processes of spiritualization. However, you still have no spiritual vision to see the velocity of thought with which this developmental process occurs. You still have no idea as to what a time-second achieves million-fold relative to this process of purification and ennoblement. You even fail to recognize in the worldly political bustle of your small earth globe the spiritual wind that makes the great strings of the spiritual world-instrument vibrate. The harmonies are sounding throughout infinity; but you behave like people who are deaf and dumb, fail to recognize, see and hear how everything rushes with the speed of a tempest, with the velocity of the world of thought, to prepare the way for the process of liberation from the imprisoned matter.

You read newspaper articles, but you fail to read between the lines, to conjecture behind the words, as material earners of a spiritual world of thought, the great spirit-life behind them, which, far above all petty calculations and human sophistry, pursues its course of development unhampered. For this very reason I will again give you a hint so that you may wake up from your worldly dreams and clearly realize that far beyond all earthly mountains and thrones, up there in yonder spirit world other laws are valid than those written in the human codex. These laws give life to both a central sun and to the tiniest atom so that they will be able to fulfill their purpose through it, that means to spiritualize themselves and thus again draw near the source of all light from where they were once sent forth so as to pass through their process of life and development individually, be it as a great world globe or as a worm.

You are driven more by a thirst for knowledge to read My words. So far you have not grasped one word, as a spiritual man, as My offspring could grasp it. Your life is still too materially orientated, you still belong always more to the world and not to yourselves, let alone to Me. For this very reason I must send you from time-to-time words of admonition so that you may awaken, so that you may, at least in the time of spiritual concentration, be able to soar above the ordinary life. That you may open your eyes and ears to that which always and incessantly radiates and sounds towards you from all corners of creation, namely, that you are spirits, who, only for a short time clothed in matter, soon will enter again into other circumstances, where only your spiritual but not your material life will be weighed and valued.

Therefore, do not let Me admonish you in vain. John's vials of wrath will be emptied, and already some of them are. The seals of the great book of creation will be broken and times will be coming when you will need all your spiritual resources to resist the worldliness and retain strength and courage.

So endeavor to understand My words, grasping them as I am giving them to you so that you will not be taken unawares if, for instance, the spiritual life urges the material to the destruction of old established ways of life and there will be knocks at your heart in rapid succession, just as I once did with My disciples prior to My being taken prisoner, when I called out to them several times: "Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation!"

This I am calling out also to you: Recognize the spirit-life! Wake up from your worldly sleep! Recognize the time as it presses on towards the solution, realize from the ruin of everything noble in the world that the time is not far when the people will harvest what they have sown. Recognize the stream of light that begins to pour over your world. Listen to the voices of the spirit-world that in great sound waves hit your ears. They are the admonishing words of a loving Father, who, in the rush of events, does not want to lose and forfeit His children, but who wants to uphold them and even, if possible, to increase their number, so that the spirit-life may be properly and truly valued by them and they may all understand, even if worlds go to pieces, namely: The love of a heavenly Father cannot waver, cannot punish, but can only, faithful to His laws of love, lead everything to perfection within the appointed time. Then everything can return to the place from where it has gone forth, so that, finally, the Father and the child learn to understand each other and the child understands what it means to be led, guided by Him, the One who makes worlds orbit around worlds and who, despite all the wonders and splendor of an infinite creation, does not forget even the smallest worm!

This is how you shall understand My creation and grasp the spiritual and the material life. Only in this way will tranquility enter your hearts, only in this way do you learn to understand and understand My words, and how and why I give them to you.

As long as you have not reached this stage you are still apprentices, but no children of Mine!

My children must be able to view My nature with a spiritual, open eye, must there, divesting the Spiritual of the material, learn to recognize what is true. They must understand the voice of My spirit world, must lend their spiritual ears to the soothing melodies of My heavenly music. They will then grasp and understand that, although matter is the means of encasing the whole, it was only in this way possible to unravel the Spiritual hidden in matter to a living being, thereby bringing nearer to him the Creator of everything spiritual and material.

When, ultimately, your eyes and ears, spiritually educated, will grasp the whole perfecting process of all that lives and exists, you yourselves have reached the level spiritually due to you and which every human being should strive for. Then he no longer measures time and the duration of matter. Then he clearly recognizes that high above all that exists and lives the spirit-world is reigning and that matter and the material life, called transience, are only mediating factors, which, although they must be there as a means to an end, are not the quintessence of life.

This is the veil of Isis, whom the ancient Egyptians venerated as the goddess of truth and of whom they said that no mortal could lift her veil.

They were right; for whosoever, lifting this veil, can and may look into the face of divine truth, knows for certain that, firstly, he has looked at something immortal and that, secondly, being immortal himself, only he can grasp and understand the same. For him, physical matter has ceased to be a burden. It is merely an envelopment which, in step with the recognition of truth, becomes lighter and lighter and more ethereal. And even if matter is separated from the Spiritual through physical death, it is not a forcible separation but only a light, gentle passing from one state to another, which must be painless since the bonds of spirit and body, spiritualized, do not have to be torn apart, but only gently loosened so as to release the last obstacles for the inner psychic man whose spirit already here in the earthy body has become purer, enabling him to confidently soar up to a higher, spiritual life.

To facilitate this to you, My children, is the purpose of all My words. For in the beyond a spirit-world with different conditions and different circumstances awaits you. In qualifying you for this new calling awaiting you in the future I do not shun the effort of making you understand that there is only one God, who is nothing but love, and who likewise wants to educate you only for love. For love is the ultimate purpose of all that is and comes into being. My creation can be grasped only with and through love, and love is the only thing that impresses on My beings the spiritual nobility whereby they may be called "My children"!

A loving heart understands the language of My nature, the language of My spirit-world, and knows how to explain matter, its life, and its form in accordance with the law of love! Therefore, above all, learn to love!

Cast out all other attributes from your hearts, and your spiritual eyes and ears will be opened to receive My spiritual life of love. Learn to first grasp the content of My words spiritually, and you will then understand why I had so much patience with you to make you loving children of a forever loving Father!

In this way you spiritualize your Self, bringing it close to Mine, and achieve the maturity to pass on in tranquility and peace also to others what is living in all fullness within you.

Do remember this well and accept this word as a new proof of My grace and My never-wavering patience in leading back the lost children to the hearth of light after they have been walking in darkness long enough.

Thus, this word on Spirit and Cosmic Life shall serve you as further proof that you have by far not the proper comprehension as yet for My words and I still find it necessary to add to all that has been said, so that all the secrets of My creation may be clearly revealed to your eyes and you may precisely through them recognize Me, their Creator, as such and as your Father. For the more you grasp Me and My words spiritually, the more you spiritualize your own Self, preparing yourselves in this manner for the transition to higher levels, which without this cognition could not possibly be attained, for life is short and eternity is long. That is why My concern for the sojourn in the latter, for the trial-life in the former has to be regarded merely as a probation school or trial-period.

So, use the earthly probation school to equip yourselves with that which you will once need there as a basis. Use the short span of time and My words, which I always give you in abundance, so that the harvest will be a credit to the

sowing and you, prior to entering the spirit-life, know what actually constitutes life, what spirit-life, cosmic and what material life.

Only thus armed with spiritual knowledge your progress will be easy, and you will grow in cognition and wisdom, depending on how you will fulfill these conditions.

A spirit must know the extent of the difference between a sham life and a life that is true and real in order to be able to judge in what way the obstacles impeding him are apt to further his progress instead of holding him back.

Only endowed with this clear insight can a spiritualized person calmly face the future, for he does not expect heaven to come from without but carries it within himself. This is why worldly disturbances are for him no disturbances, but only stimuli that will solidify and strengthen his faith on his course.

Thus, you must be steeled through what you gain inwardly by battling so that you will be able to fulfill your mission towards yourselves and others.

As long as you yourselves have only a half-faith, a half-trust and little patience, you are still far from recognizing the great driving wheel of the spirit-life, which, while moving everything, tries to gather also you into this movement towards the universal goal.

So, follow My advice, ponder My words well, consider from whom they are and to whom they are directed!

I, as the Father of all My created beings, leave no stone unturned to help everyone and to lighten his path. However, if he does not want to be helped, the adverse circumstances accruing from that will not be charged to Me, but only to him "Ponder everything and retain what is good!"

This is what I once said, and this is what I am calling out to you lest you should fall if the time of temptation should come when, left to your own devices, you will have to blame yourselves for the consequences.

As matters stand, the spirit-life is the fundamental basis of all there is, the material life being merely its visible factor. Whosoever confuses both or even denies the former, will finally become aware that through his denial the matter is not closed, but that through it, the spiritual eye will only become totally blind and the soul deaf to all the voices of the surrounding nature.

If the process of the spirit-life were not so awfully fast, one could say as you often do in the proverb: "Comes time, comes counsel" However, this calculation is misplaced here. For the time lost brings back nothing and the new time always brings something new, unlike that which is past, and so it is the foremost law to use the time, lest the result of future realization be remorse over the squandered time. Therefore, My children, do take everything more seriously, take My words more seriously, take things concerning your time more seriously lest My words will be preached to deaf ears!

Your Father intends this to be for your instruction and for your spiritual progress! Amen."

A loving heart understands the language of My nature, the language of My spirit-world, and knows how to explain matter, its life, and its form in accordance with the law of love! Therefore, above all, learn to love!

The Heavenly Father's Warning to His Children

Ref: "The Household of God by Jacob Lorber: 3



God the Father is speaking: "Thus spoke the Lord to me and within me for everyone, and that is true, faithful and certain:

Whoever wishes to talk with Me, let him come to Me and I shall lay the answer in his heart. But only the pure whose heart is full of meekness shall hear the sound of My voice.

And he who prefers Me to all the world and loves Me like a tender bride her bridegroom, with him I shall walk arm in arm, and he will always behold Me like a brother his brother, and as I beheld him from eternity, before he was.

Tell the sick, they shall not grieve about their sickness, but turn to Me in all earnest and trust Me completely. I shall comfort them, and a stream of the most precious balm will flow into their heart, and the fountain of eternal life will inexhaustibly manifest within them. They will recover and shall be refreshed like the grass after a downpour.

Tell those who seek Me: I am the true 'everywhere' and 'nowhere'. I am everywhere where people love Me and keep My commandments and nowhere where I am only praised and worshipped. For is not love more than prayer and the keeping of the commandments more than worship? Verily, verily, I say to you: He who loves Me worships Me in spirit, and he who keeps My commandments is the one who truly reveres Me. But only he who loves Me can keep My commandments, and the one who loves Me has only one commandment - that he love Me and My living Word which is the true everlasting life.

Tell the weak from My mouth: I am a powerful God. Let them all turn to Me and I shall perfect them. Of the flycatcher I shall make a lion-tamer, and the fearful shall destroy the world, and the mighty of the earth shall be scattered like chaff.

Tell the dancers openly that Satan manipulates them all. He seizes them all by their feet and whirls them around to make them dizzy enough so that they can neither stand nor walk, nor sit, nor sleep, nor rest, nor see, hear, feel, smell or taste, nor sense, for they are all dead and, therefore, can neither be advised nor

helped. And even if they wished to turn to Me, they would feel like somebody whom a strong one had seized by the feet and whirled around. If he were to look up to the sky, he would not see the sun, but only a bright streak blinding him so that he would close his eyes, unwilling to see anything anymore.

The person whose physical eyes are blind has still the possibility of seeing with his spiritual eyes. But he, who has turned blind in his spirit, remains so in eternity.

Tell the gamblers that they first gamble away their life and eventually everything that has been given to them for their life. For gambling is a well filled with poisonous dirt. The gamblers believe it to be a hidden source of gold and keep burrowing in it daily, inhaling its pestilential odor, poisoning themselves through and through and finding their spirit's eternal death instead of the imagined gold.

Those who have the Scriptures, but do not read them are like thirsty men beside a well with pure water which, however, they do not want to drink, either because of a certain spiritual dread of water like rabid dogs that instead of drinking some water and recovering will rather bite into the hardest stones to quench their thirst, or very often because of a certain indolence. They prefer to be served by certain idle servants stinking slime from the nearest mud-hole to quench their thirst and eventually perish.

Tell the love-makers: Whoever walks in the flesh, walks in death and his lust will soon become the food of maggots. Only he who walks in the spirit will reach the light, the original source of life. His share will remain forever and keep increasing.

Those who are fashion-crazy tell in all earnest that they will be standing naked before their most just judge. Their splendor will vanish like bubbles. Their lust for power and pomp shall end in the lowest slavery, and they will be ashamed of their foolishness everlastingly. Is not he a great fool who wants to have a rubbish heap gold plated and has gems set in the worst kind of dirt instead of gold! Oh, that there are so many lunatics in the world these days! They regard the light as darkness and the darkness as light!

Already there is a star in the East that will pave the way for Orion, and the fire of Sirius will consume all of them. And I will fling great numbers of stars to the earth so that all the evildoers may perish and My light shine everywhere.

I, Jehovah, God from eternity, the True and Faithful, for a final warning. Amen.

This concerns' first of all you, who have so poorly recorded this, and then all the others. Amen. This says the First and the Last. Amen."

The Beautiful Morning

Jesus is speaking: "If everything that is within a person has become heavenly, everything surrounding that person will also be heavenly! The mornings become heavenly mornings, the days heavenly days, the evenings truly heavenly evenings, and the night becomes a time to rest in Heaven – no longer dark but resplendent with the most intense light to illuminate man's pure soul at one with its spirit. Just fully enjoy the invigorating wonder of this most fragrant morning!"

Ref: Vol.4 Ch 166

Prophets of Our Times



"All the strands of this Mission are being drawn together to form a pattern. Then, when the various parts are linked and fitted together, like the pieces of a jigsaw, when all the pieces begin to merge, the final picture will become clear."

Ref: MDM message Jan 24th, 2014

Teachings

BD 1047 10.08.1939

God the Father is speaking: "Listen to the Lord's will: The messages from above are given with specific regularity and succession and were therefore transmitted in a specific order. But you will only discover this succession when you have achieved complete knowledge because the messages of wisdom were given to people consecutively, apparently without any correlation to each other, thus all gifts from above are unique messages of wisdom in themselves and yet absolutely essential to make subsequent messages understandable. Everything just serves to stimulate the human being's activity of thought and to become more aware of the spirit which surrounds you.

Therefore, the teachings have to be offered in a way that the human being can gain insight into all subjects and reflect on them. The revelations also have to be comprehensible so that the recipient can understand everything of this nature and that the creation as well as the activity of spiritual beings in the beyond is, in a manner of speaking, figuratively portrayed to them. This happens in carefully prepared teachings, which in turn follow one another so that people can perceive in their thoughts an understanding of what is offered to them.

Therefore, the messages are at times seemingly without connection, first one subject, then another is chosen for detailed consideration because the spiritual teachers always recognize the necessity of this and constantly supplement missing knowledge when it is required. Repetitions have to be offered time and again until

the earthly child has completely understood and become aware of the significance and importance of the given spiritual principles. A single lesson and presentation could not lead to the kind of knowledge that is essential for the recipient to teach in turn, and likewise every spiritual question has to be answered with extreme clarity and certainty for the divine teaching to be accepted by human beings, and that requires the greatest and most extensive knowledge.

For this reason, you often receive revelations which you believe were given to you before. This is necessary so that anyone who wants an explanation of the divine Word can be clearly and plainly taught by you one day. Only the greatest attention and willingness to learn can result in a particular maturity within a short time, for this reason every message is wisely considered and given to you in accordance with the Lord's will."

The Blessed Mother

God the Father is speaking: "In His second and final coming, the Lamb of God, the Redeemer, the Saint of saints, will have as a precursor not the repentant of the wilderness, salted by the mortifications, and salting sinners in order to cure them of their heaviness and make them quick-moving in receiving the Lord, but He will have as a precursor our Angel, She who, though having flesh, was the Seraph, She in whom we have made our dwelling place, neither sweeter nor more worthy could we have had Her, the most beloved Ark of pure gold who still contains us just as She is contained by us, and who will fly across the heavens, radiating Her love in order *to prepare a perfumed and regal road for the King of kings* and to prepare – in order to generate and to give birth, in a last maternity – as many living seeds as there are who will want to be given birth to the Lord." PMG Vol.5



Our Lady has been appearing all over the world during these last hundred years, calling mankind to repentance. There have been thousands of statues weeping real tears, some with tears of blood. Through her prophets, she has been warning mankind of pending chastisements and persecutions if her messages of repentance are not heeded. She has been calling mankind to consecrate themselves to Her Immaculate Heart during these times of great tribulation so they can be immersed in Her love and protection, as she prepares the world for the return of Jesus in glory.

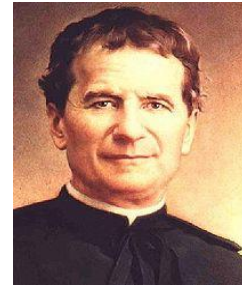
Pope Leo XIII

On October 13, 1884, Pope Leo XIII was given a vision of Satan asking God for more power and time to destroy His church. God granted his request. What Leo apparently saw, as described later by those who talked to him at the time of his vision *was a period of about 100 years when the power of Satan would reach its zenith*. Exactly when this period would start was estimated to be the twentieth century. That was until our Lady revealed the exact date to Fr. Gobbi. We will cover more about this in this teaching.



St. John Bosco

Saint John Bosco (16 August 1815 – 31 January 1888), born Giovanni Melchiorre Bosco, also called Don Bosco, was an Italian Catholic priest and educator, who put into practice the dogma of his religion, employing teaching methods based on love rather than punishment. He placed his works under the protection of Francis de Sales, thus his followers called themselves the Salesian Society. Don Bosco succeeded in establishing a network of centers to carry on his work. In recognition of his work with disadvantaged youth, he was canonized by Pope Pius XI in 1934.



The famous dream of St. John Bosco (1815-1888) was about a Pope that will lead the Church to the two columns of salvation: the Eucharist and the Virgin Mary.

Most of the prophecies associated with St. Don Bosco came to him during dreams, but just as in Matthew's Gospel where the process of Joseph being instructed by angels during dreams is described, it is clear that Don Bosco's experiences were more than the sort of dreams most of us have when asleep. These dreams were not only for the times back then, but also, for the times now!

Saint Faustina

Sister Mary Faustina, consumed by tuberculosis and by innumerable sufferings, which she accepted as a voluntary sacrifice for sinners, died in Krakow at the age of just thirty-three on October 5, 1938. Saint Faustina had a reputation for spiritual maturity and a mystical union with God. The reputation of the holiness of her life grew, as did the devotion to the Divine Mercy and the graces she obtained from God through her intercession. In the years 1965-67, the investigative Process into her life and heroic virtues was undertaken in Krakow. In the year 1968, the Beatification Process was initiated in Rome. The latter came to an end in December 1992. On April 18, 1993, our Holy Father, John Paul II, raised Sister Faustina to the glory of the altars. Sister Faustina was declared a Saint on April 30, 2000. Mary Faustina's remains rest at the Sanctuary of the Divine Mercy in Kraków-^oagiewniki. Her 33-year life was to prepare the world to receive God's Divine Mercy, after this period, comes His Justice.



Maria Valtorta



Her activity as a writer reached intensity from 1943 to 1947, and continued, diminishing progressively, until 1953. Maria wrote in time of war and in very difficult conditions, including evacuation, whereby on the 24th of April 1944 she was obliged to move to St. Andrew of Compito (section of the borough of Capannori in the province of Lucca). She returned to her dear home at Viareggio on the 23rd of December that same year.

She used to write in an almost sitting position in bed, in ordinary school notebooks, which she supported with a piece of cardboard held on her bent knees. She would write at any time, by day or by night, even when she was exhausted by fatigue or tormenting pains. She wrote effortlessly, naturally, and without revision. If interrupted, she could leave off writing and then resume later on with ease. She did not consult books, except for the Bible; and the catechism of Pope Pius X.

During her continuous work, her living and constant prayer, her suffering embraced with the joy of the redeemers, Maria begged God not to concede her external signs of intense participation in Christ, who used her as faithful "spokesman" and "pen" manifesting Himself in the richness of the "visions" and in the depth of the "dictations."

The notebooks written by Maria Valtorta include almost fifteen thousand pages. Little less than two-thirds of this astounding literary production concerns the monumental work on the Life of Jesus Christ (THE POEM OF THE MAN-GOD, five hardcover volumes in English, approximately 4,200 pages. The current new work in Italian, French, and Spanish is THE GOSPEL AS REVEALED TO ME, in ten smaller volumes). The minor works include extensive commentaries on biblical texts, doctrinal lessons, histories of the first Christians and martyrs, and pious compositions. This work was given to us out of love for those who love the Lord, and to provide us with a river of truth in a world saturated with heresies. Maria Valtorta (born on March 14, 1897, died Oct 12, 1961)

[Note: Bishop Roman Danylak, Bishop of Titula Nyssa, makes the following comment: Valtorta is one of the most outstanding manifestations of the prophetic charism in our own times. Many consider her to be one of the greatest mystics in the history of the Church. Ref: www.sacredheartofjesus.ca/MariaValtorta]

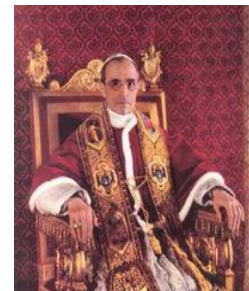
Pope Pius XII

The Poem of the Man-God receives the Pontifical Imprimatur. This 5000 page 'Life of Christ' was written in Italian between 1944 and 1947. It is now being read by millions on all five continents. In 1947, shortly after being completed, a typewritten copy of it in 12 volumes was placed in the hand of Pope Pius XII. On Feb 26, 1948, His Holiness declared to a private audience.

"Publish this work as it is. There is no need to give an opinion about its origin, whether it be extraordinary or less. Who reads it, will understand."

This major work is the Life of Jesus, the narration of which extends from the birth and childhood of the Virgin Mary to Her assumption into Heaven. It is the "gospel" which neither substitutes nor changes the Gospel, but rather narrates it, integrating and illuminating it, with the declared purpose of reviving in men's hearts the love for Christ and his Mother.

This work was given to us by the Lord so that we may be better prepared to withstand the deluge of false teachings and heresies that will saturate the earth during our lifetime. Maria Valtorta is the only Mystic to receive a Pontifical Imprimatur.



Azariah (Azariah is the Guardian Angel of Maria Valtorta)

The Book of Azariah is mystical speech – that is, the inspired articulation of God’s being-in-Love with man and man’s being-in-Love with God – as mediated, in this instance, by an angel, and a guardian angel at that: the privileged witness to and participant in the enamored exchanges between spirit and spirit, Divine Person and human person.

Azariah gives a first-hand account of the Battle that took place in Heaven when one-third of the angels were cast down to earth as demons. Understanding the beginning helps us to understand the end and why there is an end! He also expounds on the desire of man to be separated from the tree and the consequences for being as such.

In this burning language of mystical dialogue, words are brands which both wound and heal, revealing God to be at once supremely powerful and supremely tender, the consummate Romantic of eternal poetry.

The Book of Azariah has thus been written for true “lovers,” present and future, and it is to be hoped that it will find its way into their hands – and into their hearts.



Fr. Stephano Gobbi

THE TRIUMPH, THE SECOND COMING AND THE EUCHARISTIC REIGN

Brother Priests, we are priests chosen for the triumph of the Immaculate Heart of Mary. This is why Our Lady made the Marian Movement of Priests arise within the Church. She has chosen us priests to be part of this Movement, so that we may be instruments of the triumph of her Immaculate Heart in the world. But in order for us to become instruments for the triumph of her Immaculate Heart, Our Lady must triumph in our lives. To be able to triumph, she asks us to consecrate ourselves to her Immaculate Heart, so that she can enter into our priestly lives as our Mother, and work to transform us and to make of us, ever more, priests according to the Heart of Jesus. When Our Lady sees us similar to her Son Jesus, then her Immaculate Heart triumphs in us; Our Lady is preparing her priests for the final battle and the return of Her Son in Glory.



Vassula Ryden

Vassula Rydén, who is Greek, was born in Egypt and belongs to the Greek Orthodox Church. God approached her in 1985 while she lived in Bangladesh, in a most extraordinary way, to use her as His instrument and charge her with His messages for all mankind. In truth it is a reminder of His Word. In these messages for our times, God is calling us to repentance, reconciliation, peace, and unity.



Since 1988 Vassula has been invited to speak in more than 70 countries and has given over 900 presentations. Vassula receives in all of this work no personal royalties, fees, or benefit for her efforts. So far, the books have been translated into more than 40 languages. They are written in such a clear and direct language that anyone of reading age can understand them. At the same time their content is so rich and profound that brilliant theologians have been inspired to write books about the spirituality of the messages. God himself has chosen to name these divine messages: True Life in God.

Christina Gallagher

In January of 1988, a series of extraordinary events occurred, which were to totally alter the lifestyle of Mrs. Christina Gallagher, a shy Irish housewife. In the period since then, these events have also affected the lives of a great many other people, not only in Ireland, but all over the world. Christina Gallagher's name has become known throughout the world.



Her messages and prophecies over the last 20 years have been one hundred percent accurate. Her spiritual advisor, Fr. Gerard McGinnity, is an author and Parish Priest of Knockbridge, County Louth, Ireland, a parish of the Archdiocese of Armagh.

"It was in 1988 that Fr. McGinnity first heard of Christina... It was, however, some time before I actually met Christina." Fr. McGinnity has been Christina Gallagher's spiritual director for many years. He co-authored her biography, entitled *Out of the Ecstasy and On to the Cross - Biography of Christina Gallagher* published in 1996, in which he refers to Christina as "God's prophet."

Bertha Dudde

At the request of many friends Bertha Dudde wrote the following biography in 1953: I have been writing messages received through the inner Word since June 15, 1937. In answer to the many requests of my friends I will give you a picture of my earthly life, a short explanation of what I received spiritually, and my own feelings about all this.

I was born April 1, 1891, the second oldest daughter of an artist of Liegnitz in Silesia, today's Poland. I had a normally peaceful childhood, with six sisters in our parent's home. I learned the cares of life at an early age. The desire to make money to help my parents made me learn the trade of a seamstress. As the financial needs of my parents continued, so did the burden, and in this way I made myself useful.



My parents belonged to different denominations. Father was a Protestant - Mother a Catholic. We children were brought up in the Catholic faith but never experienced pressure or force to follow the practices of the church so that each child in later years was able to pursue their own chosen course.

I myself was religious but could not accept the doctrine of the Catholic system although I respected the church. I could not represent something on the outside that my inner conscience had not accepted. So, I did not continue to attend

church, heard little preaching and had no knowledge of the Bible. I did not read any religious books or scientific literature and did not join any other group or religious sect.

Anyone knowing the Catholic teaching knows what a conscious struggle one finds himself in when he wants to release himself from it. I was not spared from this either. But the question as to what is the Truth and where it is to be found, remained.

Often when I prayed the Lord's Prayer, I would beseech the Lord to allow me to find His kingdom. This prayer was answered in June 15, 1937, as I prayed quietly and waited for the inner voice. In this attitude I persisted often, for a wonderful peace came over me and thoughts which came to my heart, not my head, gave me comfort and strength....

Jesus Christ says, "I am the way, the truth and the life". The way we humans should take is the way of love which was exemplified by Jesus Christ, and which leads to eternal life in His presence. The truth we should know is given to us through the Word of God where God Himself in Jesus Christ imparted to us through his disciples and through His present-day messengers. He says Himself 'I will pour out My Spirit on all flesh; and servants and handmaidens shall prophesy'.

One of these present-day servants and handmaidens is Bertha Dudde, through whom God 'pours out His Spirit', that is, through whom we receive His Word in its purest form in order to recognize the meaning and purpose of earthly life and His plan of Salvation. It is now our wish to share and distribute the "Word of God" received through Bertha Dudde. For this reason, we are making the transcripts of the individual messages available to you for reading and to inform you where you can order copies of the texts.

These texts have been printed in book-format since 1993 with the help of many friends and were passed on to everyone who is interested. Over the years they have demonstrated that people following the way of Christ have found them particularly helpful. But it also becomes evident that it is not a feasible path without the Commandments of Love given to us by Jesus Christ. Why? Because we are only able to understand His language if we live a life of love; with the two volumes 'Return to God' we offer you a small overview of the complete works. After that, anyone who sincerely would like to take the path of return should let himself be guided by the messages in the books that were given to us by the Father through Bertha Dudde.

Note: In God's grace people are led anew to the Gospel which emphatically points out the purpose of man's being for the merciful love of God seeks to save all who still can be saved before the turning point comes, and it will come. The end-time which seers and prophets have proclaimed is now here. According to the revelations given to me, the Lord does not differentiate between His children. 'Come ye all to Me' sounds His call and blessed is he who hears His call and follows Him. God loves His children. He wants to make them all happy, even when they do not want to know Him.

Ref: wed-site- <http://en.bertha-dudde.org/index.php?id=138>

Recorded November 22, 1953

Luisa Piccarreta

Annibale Maria Di Francia - Founder of two religious' congregations: The Rogacionist Fathers of the Heart of Jesus and of the "Daughters of the Divine Zeal" of the Heart of Jesus. He had the grace to deal intimately with Luisa Piccarreta during the last 17 years of her life, from 1910 to 1927 (Fr. Di Francia died on June 1st, 1927). Meeting Luisa Piccarreta was a transcendental event in his life and the manifestation of the Divine Will became the center of his life, of his spirituality, and of his only reason for existence. Many times, he would go to Luisa's house, and he was her extraordinary confessor. In his last years, he was appointed director over everything referring to the publication of her writings by the Archbishop of Trani. He was named ecclesiastical censor for the Archdiocese of Trani-Barletta-Bisceglie as well.

He was also the first to begin publishing Luisa's writings, the first of which was «The Hours of the Passion of Our Lord Jesus Christ», which she wrote around the year 1913 or 1914. Saint Hannibal gave the title to this book and made four editions of it (1915, 1916, 1917 and 1921), all bearing the Nihil Obstat and Imprimatur. One of the best-remembered episodes, according to a number of witnesses was the time when Fr. Hannibal took the book, "The Hours of the Passion", to the Holy Father, now Saint Pius X (who received him privately on a number of occasions, as did Popes Benedict XV and Pius XI as well). While showing it to him, he was reading a few pages when the pope interrupted him, saying, «Not while standing, Father; this book should be read kneeling. It is Jesus Christ who is speaking».

It was Fr. Hannibal's intention to begin to publish all the volumes that Luisa Piccarreta had written up to that time (nineteen). For this reason, he obtained the promise of Imprimatur from the Archbishop of Trani, while getting ready to print them. Divine Providence first put the publishing on hold with the death of Fr. Hannibal and years later when Luisa's Confessor faced the decree of the Holy See that put the three (3) books of Luisa, which had already been published on the Index of Forbidden Books, which still existed at that time.

St. Fr. Di Francia left us the following documents: Letters to Luisa, the Preface to «The Hours of the Passion» and a Preface, which was never published, that he wrote for the volumes that he did not get to print. These are some of the most beautiful and most sublime testimonies that he left for us.

Saint Fr. Hannibal wanted Luisa Piccarreta to live at the Orphanage of Saint Anthony, which he founded, so that Luisa could become teacher and model of imitation to the religious and orphans. His intention was to take Luisa to the Orphanage that he founded in Trani but Luisa said that the Lord had destined for Corato. During those days, St. Fr. Di Francia received a donation that allowed him to open a new Orphanage at Corato.

St. Fr. Hannibal's desire was fulfilled a year after his death, when Luisa's confessor, Don Benedetto Calvi, ordered Luisa to move to that institute.

Maria Divine Mercy

Maria Divine Mercy - the European visionary and seer has been receiving messages since 2010. Although Maria, who wishes to remain anonymous, had virtually no knowledge of the Bible, the messages are littered with numerous biblical references, codes and secrets including

The Maria Divine Mercy prophecies and messages are contained in The Book of Truth, foretold in the Book of Daniel.

God the Father, she explains, has given her 'The Seal of the Living God' Crusade Prayer (33) – a prayer of protection against the antichrist also foretold in the Bible in the Book of Revelation.

The Catholic Church will be taken over by the enemies of God from within and this will lead to the greatest apostasy of all time.

The Second Coming will herald the return of Christ to judge the living and the dead.

The world will witness the rise of Satanism and new age paganism.

140 Crusade Prayers were dictated to Maria Divine Mercy by God the Father, His beloved Son Jesus Christ and the Blessed Mother of God, the Virgin Mary who has asked the world that she be known as the Mother of Salvation through these messages.

Many people have accepted the messages as they are. Many don't. An evaluation of the warning second coming website has been made by many people, and this has led to questions as to whether Maria Divine Mercy is true or false. Maria Divine Mercy's real name is not being made public and she wishes to remain anonymous.

While theologians argue as to whether the Warning Second Coming website is a hoax or not the fact is that hundreds of Crusade Prayer Groups have been set up around the world on the back of this Mission. The messages have been translated into over 28 languages and without any help or assistance from this website.

In less than three and a half years three volumes of the messages which total 2,000 in all (most of which have been published) have been produced in book format in print and in eBook through Apple, Amazon Kindle, Kobo and Overdrive. People are not obliged to buy the books as the messages are free to download on this site. However, people have requested that the Book be published as well as the Crusade Prayer Book and they are available through this website through an independent publisher and re-sellers throughout Great Britain and other parts of the world.

Conchiglia – Movimento D'amore San Juan Giego

Foundation of the Name "Conchiglia"

Conchiglia received her first Message from the Holy Trinity on the 7th of April 2000 through intimate communications and it was the first Friday of the month dedicated to the Sacred Heart of Jesus, few days before Easter, during the Great Jubilee of the Year 2000. Jesus really died on Friday 7th, April 1, Conchiglia, began her walk after having seen Jesus at Marotta of Fano, Pesaro-Urbino, Italy, on the 14th of



Conchiglia to 18 years

January 1968. After my “yes” to God, pronounced at the Holy Hour of Loreto – Ancona – Italy, the Project of God was irradiated and was shown to Humanity through me, Conchiglia.

The Most Holy Trinity on the 7th of April 2000 has chosen a New Name for me, “Conchiglia” as a conch, a seashell. According to Biblical Tradition, “the change of the name by God” is a sacred investiture by which the elect is constituted as founder of an institution of Divine Origin, destined to be perpetuated in History and elevated to cooperation in the History of the salvation for the multitudes.

I have the same blood group of Jesus: AB Rh+ as shown in the analysis performed on the Shroud of Turin and the Miracle of Lanciano, the only difference being that Jesus’ group is male and mine is female.

For the will of Jesus, I am the foundress of the Movimento d’Admore San Juan Diego (Saint Juan Diego Movement of Love) that belongs to Most Holy Mary, Our Lady of Guadalupe. The Movement of hearts onto which God’s children from all over the World converges, because this is God’s Work. God is Love, hence Movement of Love is the Movement of God and it is the Movement of God because it is the Unique Movement That God now wants in the World. To the voice “movement” from the “Dictionary of the Italian Language” by Nicola Zingarelli, Freeman Edition, Bologna, 2005 we can read: act of moving – animation of a group – isometric view of a plan or in three-dimensional space onto itself that you can superimpose the two figures corresponding to each other – inspired by current cultural from innovative ideas – meeting, affairs love – movement of the soul – change – origin.

Luz de María de Bonilla

The life of Luz de Maria has been one guided by God from her birth in a small Central American country: Costa Rica. At present she resides in Argentina.

She comes from a family with deep Christian roots in which, along with her siblings, she grows up surrounded by an atmosphere of spirituality, with the Eucharist as the center of her life. Her youth is spent alongside the presence of her beloved Guardian Angels and of the Blessed Mother who are her companions and confidants. Since then, they share with her Heavenly. Manifestations, thus foreshadowing what would materialize little by little years later.

Along with the development of her professional life, she forms a home which is constituted today of 15 members, who accompany her as Divine Manifestations begin to take place in her home: such as exudations from religious images, inexplicable aromas, among others, in this way making her family and loved one’s witnesses of Luz de Maria’s spiritual experience.

During Holy Week of 1990, the definitive encounter takes place with the Blessed Mother, who announces to her the physical recovery from an illness Luz de Maria was suffering and receives her in a special way to prepare her for the



encounter with Her Divine Son. So begins a long path long which they begin to subtly clarify to Luz de Maria the mission Heaven had designated for her.

Thus begins a new stage in her mystic experience, which would lead her to experience profound ecstasy not only in the presence of her family, but also of people close to her that would later gather to pray, so forming a Cenacle that accompanies her to this day.

As the years pass, Jesus and the Blessed Mother form her so that she is a useful instrument in the hands of the Divine Potter and so she abandons herself in the Will of the Lord, bearing along with Christ the pain of the Cross that penetrates physically in her body and in her soul.

After a long wait during which Christ and the Blessed Mother gradually prepare her asking her discretion in that period, Heaven orders her to communicate the Divine Word she has received, and continues to receive, to all of humanity. From that moment, Christ opens the way for her and directs her steps wherever the Divine Will desires Heaven's Call to reach.

After they give her the Divine Order to make herself known, and under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit, she begins to visit various countries, especially those of Latin America, giving radio interviews and conferences open to the public. From there have arisen brothers and sisters desirous of putting into practice the teachings of the Divine Word, forming Cenacles of prayer and praxis of the Gospel, remaining in a constant battle to reach a life full in the fulfillment of God's Will and the love of neighbor.

Luz de María begins to perceive that as time goes by, the Word of Christ and of the Blessed Mother takes on a different voice regarding its magnitude and intensity, due to the proximity of the events humanity will face.

In each Divine Call, however, prevails Love, Mercy and at the same time Divine Justice. And they announce and denounce the reality of the purification of the human race -- a purification that is a fruit of the disobedience of present-day man and of the mismanagement he has given to advances in all fields, with man thus transforming himself into his own scourge.

Christ makes known to her the persecution, injustice, defamation and slander which she will face from those who do not accept these Divine Calls and who will not tire of persecuting her so as to end this Work, but she accepts, knowing that as an instrument of Christ she must follow the same path Christ walked on Earth.

The Blessed Mother is her counselor, and hand-in-hand with the Mother, up to this day, she continues to be a faithful disciple of Christ, living various mystic experiences in which Christ shares His suffering on the Cross.

Beside her, Priests from several countries have remained who guide her, but as Christ himself tells her "I am your true spiritual director," for it is Christ who guides each one of her steps and all that she does. Father Jose Maria Fernandez Rojas, who from the beginning of the manifestations has been beside her as her confessor, has also accompanied her prayer group of which three women religious have been an inseparable part since the Cenacle was formed 24 years ago, with one of these women religious having a degree in theology, the strictest observance and analysis of the revealed word has been maintained.

The Mission of Luz de Maria, in total obedience to Christ, is to be an instrument of the Divine Truth in this instant and to announce and denounce what Our Lord Jesus Christ and Our Blessed Mother indicate to her so that the children of God continue to fight for their own conversion and that of all their brothers and sisters, recognizing and strongly battling the evil that surrounds them, and dedicated, continue on the path of Salvation in all aspects of life.

It is thus that the Divine Word that Luz de Maria receives invites humanity, as children of the same Father, to reach unity of all brothers and sisters, fulfilling the First Commandment and echo of the Call of Christ that calls His People to be one.

Reference:

Prior to the moment in which Christ shares His passion with her, Luz de María starts to perceive a particular state which makes her recognize in advance the Manifestation of this wonder, thereafter causing her to fall into a profound ecstasy, reflecting a dramatic scene for witnesses due to the suffering that is not only physical but spiritual; wounds in her hands, feet, side of the chest and the head became visible, on some occasions tears of blood manifest that emanate an intense perfume that floods the entire room. As the ecstasy, which can last from one to several hours, comes to an end, the wounds heal regenerating her flesh and skin, remaining only the blood that emanated from these wounds...

St. Elder Paisios - End Time Prophecy

Elder Paisios of the Holy Mount Athos

Orthodox Saints and Church Fathers, Spiritual Elders *(Taken from a Russian translation of the original Greek)*

Editor's note: On a remote, narrow peninsula in the Aegean Sea lays the monastic republic of Mt. Athos, spiritual heart of the Orthodox Christian world. For centuries monks have lived and prayed here for the salvation of their souls and the world, and every devout Orthodox Christian male strives to make the pilgrimage to Mt. Athos at least once in his life. Elder Paisios (1924-1994) is considered by many to have been one of the Holy Mount's greatest ascetics of the 20th Century. Over the course of his life the words of this humble Greek monk, who came to be honored by believers as an "holy elder" (geronta in Greek, starets in Russian), were recorded by the thousands who journeyed to seek his advice and prophecies. In the following quotes Paisios warns of the great cataclysms which await us in our Apocalyptic times. His counsel of spiritual preparedness and how to achieve it will be of use to all those who strive to do good while maintaining spiritual equilibrium in a world growing increasingly hostile to our salvation. Paisios seems to have foreseen everything: the ever more frequent and senseless wars and the growing totalitarianism of "Schengen Europe", "Homeland Securitized" America and "Putinized" Russia, the downward slide of our modern, globalized world into licentiousness and madness, the approaching Last Judgment.



Jakob Lorber

Jakob Lorber was a Christian mystic and visionary from the Duchy of Styria, who promoted liberal Universalism. He referred to himself as "God's scribe". He wrote that on 15 March 1840 he began hearing an "inner voice" from the region of his heart and thereafter transcribed what it said. By the time of his death 24 years later he had written manuscripts equivalent to more than 10,000 pages in print.



Very few people know that from 1851 to 1864 Jesus gave a much more complete story of the events that happened during His last 3 years before His crucifixion. A much more complete Gospel than what we can find in the Bible. This was revealed by Jesus Christ Himself to a man He choose, namely the Austrian musician Jakob Lorber who dedicated the last 24 years of his life in the service of our Lord by writing down what He dictated to him through the inner word. He heard the words very clearly in the region of his heart and wrote them faithfully down. The Great Gospel of John revealed to Jakob Lorber consists of 10 volumes with about 250 chapters each. Interrupted in 1864 by the death of Jakob Lorber the work was completed in 1894 by Leopold Engel whom the Lord called to write volume 11. The last volume covers the period from the Last Supper to the Resurrection.

Gottfried Mayerhofer

1807 – 1877

Gottfried Mayerhofer was born in Munich in 1807, the descendant of a notable German family. When Prince Otto of Bavaria became King of Greece, Mayerhofer went with him as an officer of the Greek royal service. In 1837 he married the daughter of a wholesale merchant and they moved from Athens to Trieste when her father's business relocated. He dedicated himself to his favorite studies– music and painting, and in the course of time, he became interested in religious and spiritual matters. In Trieste, he encountered the writings of the New Revelation and his inclination to the religious and spiritual was richly nourished by reading the works of Jakob Lorber.



Mayerhofer soon attained the state of spiritual awakening. In March 1870 he heard within him for the first time the voice of the Lord. He served this Voice for seven years as a faithful "scribe", until his death in 1877. The way in which the Inner Word came to Mayerhofer is remarkable. Early in the morning, before he felt within him the urge to write, the subjects to be dealt with appeared before his spiritual eyes in pictures of magnificent clarity. When he then put down in writing what he had seen, unfortunately the clarity of the vision faded considerably. This may be one of the causes leading to the imperfections in the style of Mayerhofer's writings.

In a letter to a friend Mayerhofer writes: "I am always quite passive when I receive these communications, usually do not even know what it is all about. I am usually seized by an inexplicable unrest, have to sit down at the desk and only when I take up the pencil do I learn what the Lord wants, and even then, I know neither beginning nor sequel or end, not even one word earlier than the next. Thus, for instance, It [His word] tells me: 'Take the Gospel of John, chapter 3, verse 7!' I, who am not a bit versed in the Bible, do not know anything about the contents of this chapter or verse, look it up, sit down, and write dictations, having no will of my own, not knowing why and wherefore, just so, and in no other way."

These explanations by Mayerhofer show that what he writes down is true inspiration and not just products of his own imagination. This is also supported externally by Mayerhofer's original manuscript, which was written extremely fast and flowingly and which contains very few corrections by his hand.

Through his efforts several works originated, in which many revelations relating to creation, life, the road to salvation, communication with the spiritual world, and many other fundamental questions of life were presented. The best-known books that the Lord offered to humanity through Gottfried Mayerhofer are The Lord's Sermons, Secrets of Creation, and Secrets of Life. The Lord's Sermons presents deep moral lessons and teachings concerning the Lord's First and Second Coming. The two books, Secrets of Creation and Secrets of Life, form a comprehensive system of spiritual revelations which explain the most important aspects of human and natural existence. In Mayerhofer's works can also be found accurate references to later scientific discoveries. That is why Mayerhofer's works are considered, next to Lorber's "The New Revelation of Jesus Christ," the greatest spiritual food intended to prepare humanity for the Lord's Second Coming.

Excerpt from Gottfried Mayerhofer's *Secrets of Creation* (revelation received January 22, 1872): "This revelation is not only for the small circle of readers who now know these writings, but for the whole of humanity as the future system of religion based solely on My own statements during My walk on Earth, in order to lead back the cults and the whole doctrinal edifice of religion to what I once gave to My apostles, simple men of the people; for you can well imagine that I did not descend to your earth without a reason to give you the example of greatest humiliation and sacrifice".

Works of Mayerhofer - Secrets of Life - Secrets of Creation - The Lord's Sermons

Reference Material

Reference Key

MV - Maria Valtorta

MV PMG – Maria Valtorta - Poem of the Man God

MV N 1943, 1944, 1945-50 – Maria Valtorta Note Books

MV ET – Maria Valtorta, End Times

MV ESP – Maria Valtorta, Lessons on the Epistle of St Paul to the Romans

MV Vol. 1-5 Maria Valtorta - Poem of the Man God

MMP (chapter) – Marian Movement of Priest, Rev Don Stefano Gobbi

MVVS – Maria Valtorta, Victim Souls

MDM - Maria of Divine Mercy

TLIG – True Life in God, Vassula Ryden

BD – Bertha Dudde
LDM – Luz De Maria
HFJ – Lily of the Holy Face of Jesus
JL – Jakob Lorber

Jakob Lorber

- Gr = Das grosse Evangelium Johannes * = The Great Gospel of John
- Ha = Die Haushaltung Gottes (Die Urgeschichte der Menschheit) = God's Household Management (History of the Origin of Man)
- EM = Erde und Mond = Earth and Moon
- VdH = Von der Hoelle bis zum Himmel = From Heaven to Hell
- Hi = Himmelsgaben = Gifts of Heaven
- Jugd = Die Jugend Jesu (Das Jakobusevangelium) = The Early Years of Jesus (Gospel of James)
- GS = Die geistige Sonne = The Spiritual Sun
- NS = Die natuerliche Sonne = The Natural Sun Schrift =Schrifttexterklaerungen = Interpretation of the Scriptures
- BM = Bischof Martin = Bishop Martin

Gottfried Mayerhofer

- Pr = Predigten des Herrn = The Lord's Sermons
- LGh = Lebensgeheimnisse = Life Mysteries
- SGh = Schoepfungsgeheimnisse = Mysteries of Creation

Reference Books

- David Carlin, **The Decline & Fall of the Catholic Church in America**, Sophia Institute Press 2003
- David Michael Lindsey, **The Woman and the Dragon Apparitions of Mary**, Pelican Publishing Company 2000
- Eduardo Siguenza, **John Paul II, The Pope Who Understood Fatima**, Queenship Publishing Company 2007
- Francis Johnston, **Fatima The Great Sign**, Tan Books and Publishers, Inc.1980
- John R. Willis, S.J., **The Teachings of the Church Fathers**, Ignatius Press 2002
- James P. Mahoney, D.D. Vicar General, NY, **The Liturgy of the Hours**, Catholic Book Publication 1975
- Little Pebble – visionary, www.littlepebble.org
- Luz De Maria – visionary <http://www.revelacionesmarianas.com/english.htm>
- Maria Valtorta, **The Book of Azariah**, Centro Editorial Valtortiano srl., 1993
- Maria Valtorta, **The End Times**, Editions Paulines 1994
- Maria Valtorta, **Lessons on the Epistle of St. Paul to the Romans**, Centro Editoriale Valtortiano 2007
- Maria Valtorta, **The Poem of the Man God Vol 1-5**, Centro Editorial Valtortiano srl, 1986
- Maria Valtorta, **Note books 1943,1944,1945-1950**, Centro Editorial Valtortiano srl. 1985
- Rev. Albert J. Hebert, S. M., **Mary, Why Do You Cry?**, Rev. Albert J Hebert, S.M., 1985
- Rev. Don Stefano Gobbi, **To The Priests, Our lady's Beloved Sons**, The Marian Movement of Priests 1998
- Rev. Francis C. Kelley, D.D., Bishop of Oklahoma - **The Primitive Church**- Tan Books And Publishing, Inc 1980

- Rev. Gabriel M. Roschini, O.S.M., **The Virgin Mary in the Writings of Maria Valtorta**, Kolbe's Publications Inc. (Canada) and Centro Editorials Valtortiano Srl. (Italy) 1989, 1990
- Rev. George W. Kosicki, CSB, **Now is the Time for Mercy**, Marian Press 2005
- Rev. Herman Bernard Kramer – **The Book of Destiny**, Tan Books and Publishers, Inc. Rockford, Ill 61105
- Rev. J.L. Menezes, **The Life and Religion of Mohammed**, Roman Catholic Books, Harrison, NY. 1912
- Rev. Joseph Cardinal Ratzinger, **Catechism of the Catholic Church**, Costello Publishing Company 1992
- Rev. John Laux, M.A., **Church History**, Tan Books and Publishers, Inc. 1989
- Rev. George W. Kosicki, CSB, **Now is the Time for Mercy**, Marian Press 2005
- Roy H. Schoeman, **Salvation is from The Jews**, Roy Schoeman 2003
- Saint John of the Cross, **The Collected Works of Saint John of the Cross**, ICS Publications Institute of Carmelite Studies 1991
- Saint Louis-Marie Grignon DeMontfort, **True Devotion To Mary**, Tan Books and Publishers, Inc.1985
- Saint Maria Faustina, **Divine Mercy in My Soul Diary**, Congregation of Marians 1987
- Saint Thomas Aquinas, **Summa Theologiae**, Ave Maria Press, Inc. 1991
- Vassula Ryden, **True Life in God**, The Foundation for True Life in God 2006
- Steve Erwin, **The Boy who met Jesus**, Segatashya of Kibeho, Immaculee Illbagiza 2011.

Reference Web-Sites

www.tlig.org True Life in God, Vassula Ryden
www.thedivinemercy.org Divine Mercy HQ
www.mmp-usa.net Marian Movement of Priest USA HQ
www.fathercorapi.com Father John Corapi SOLT Catholic teachings/letters
www.christinagallagher.org Christine Gallagher messages
www.medjugorje.com Medjugorje activity center and messages
www.vatican.va Vatican web-site for Catholic information
www.michaeljurnal.org Michael published news letters - signs of the times
www.garabandal.org End time secrets will be revealed in Garabandal
www.circleofprayer.com God the Father Devotions
www.divinewill.org Lucia Piccarreta Divine Will messages and teachings
www.johnleary.com Warnings and Prophecies
www.thewarningsecondcoming.com Maria Divine Mercy
www.wordsfromjesus.com Jennifer
http://en.bertha-dudde.org The Word of God
www.conchiglia.us/UK/UK_C_lettere/UK_Conchiglia_VATICANO.htm Conchiglia
www.revelacionesmarianas.com/english.htm Revelaciones Marianas
www.jesumariasite.org Lily of the Holy Face of Jesus Giglio del Santo Voito

Many links and references are also contained within the work.

About the Work

MV Vol5: 951

Jesus is speaking:
"Rise, Come to My Gift. 'Take and eat, Take and drink,' I said to the apostles.

If you only knew the gift of God and who it is that is saying to you: 'give me a drink', you would have been the one to ask, and He would have given you living water, I said to the Samaritan woman.

I tell you these words. I offer you this food and drink of living water. My Word is Life. And I want you in the Life, with

me. And I multiply My word to counterbalance the miasmata of Satan as they destroy the vital strength of the spirit.

Do not reject Me. I am anxious to give Myself to you because I love you. And My anxiety is inextinguishable. I ardently wish to communicate Myself to you to make you ready for the banquet of the celestial nuptials. And you need Me in order not to languish, to dress yourselves with dresses adorned for the Wedding of the Lamb, for the great feast of God after overcoming the afflictions in this desert full of snares, of brambles and snakes, which is the Earth, to pass through flames without suffering damage, to tread on reptiles and have to take poisons without dying, as you have Me in you.

And I also say to you: 'Take,' do take this work and '*do not seal it*' but read it and have it read '*because the time is close*' and let those who are holy become holier. (John, Revelation, 22:10)

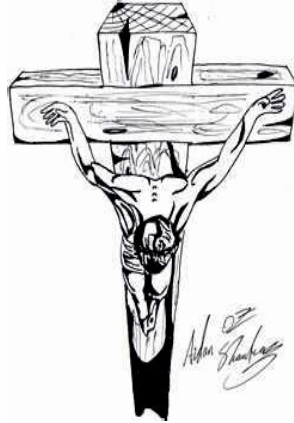
May the grace of your Lord Jesus Christ be with all those who in this book see an approach of Mine and urge it to be accomplished, to their defense, with the cry of Love: 'Come, Lord Jesus.'

I will always be with you because it is pleasant to Me to be with those who love Me."



Jesus

**“I am with you always
even unto the end of the world”**



Jesus is speaking: “And I say to you: ‘Take,’ do take this work and ‘*do not seal it*’ but read it and have it read ‘*because the time is close*’ and let those who are holy become holier. (John, Revelation, 22:10)

May the grace of your Lord Jesus Christ be with all those who in this book see an approach of Mine and urge it to be accomplished, to their defense, with the cry of Love: ‘Come, Lord Jesus.’

I will always be with you because it is pleasant to Me to be with those who love Me.” MV Vol5: 951

JMJ